

KIM IL SUNG

WORKS

WORKING PEOPLE OF THE WHOLE WORLD, UNITE!

KIM IL SUNG

WORKS

6

June 1950–December 1951

FOREIGN LANGUAGES PUBLISHING HOUSE
PYONGYANG, KOREA

1981

CONTENTS

LET US WIPE OUT THE INVADERS BY A DECISIVE COUNTEROFFENSIVE

Speech Delivered at the Extraordinary Meeting of the Cabinet of the Democratic People's Republic of Korea, <i>June 25, 1950</i>	1
--	---

GO ALL OUT FOR VICTORY IN THE WAR

Radio Address to All the Korean People, <i>June 26, 1950</i>	8
--	---

THE TASKS OF POLITICAL PARTIES FOR THE VICTORY OF THE FATHERLAND LIBERATION WAR

Speech Delivered at the Joint Conference of the Chairmen of Provincial Committees of the Workers' Party of Korea, the Democratic Party of North Korea and the Chondoist Chongu Party of North Korea, <i>June 27, 1950</i>	15
--	----

CONGRATULATORY MESSAGE TO ALL THE PEOPLE OF KOREA, THE PEOPLE'S ARMY, AND THE CITIZENS OF SEOUL, ON THE OCCASION OF THE LIBERATION OF SEOUL

<i>June 28, 1950</i>	25
----------------------------	----

ON CONFERRING UNIT TITLES

Order No. 7 of the Supreme Commander of the Korean People's Army, <i>July 5, 1950</i>	27
--	----

REPEL THE US IMPERIALIST INVASION!

Radio Address to All the Korean People, <i>July 8, 1950</i>	28
---	----

TO THE PEOPLE'S ARMY UNITS WHICH PARTICIPATED IN THE COMBAT TO LIBERATE TAEJON

Order of the Supreme Commander of the Korean People's Army, <i>July 23, 1950</i>	37
---	----

ANSWERS TO THE QUESTIONS RAISED BY MR. MANIAN, CORRESPONDENT OF *L'HUMANITE*

<i>July 27, 1950</i>	39
----------------------------	----

ON ORGANIZING THE WORK OF STUDYING AND POPULARIZING COMBAT EXPERIENCE IN THE FATHERLAND LIBERATION WAR

Order No. 085 of the Supreme Commander of the Korean People's Army, <i>August 12, 1950</i>	43
---	----

LET US DESTROY THE US IMPERIALIST AGGRESSORS AND ACHIEVE COMPLETE LIBERATION OF THE COUNTRY

Order No. 82 of the Supreme Commander of the Korean People's Army, <i>August 15, 1950</i>	45
--	----

EVERYTHING TO THE FRONT

Report at the Pyongyang Celebration of the Fifth Anniversary of the August 15 Liberation, <i>August 15, 1950</i>	50
---	----

LET US DEFEND THE HOME FRONT SOLIDLY

Speech at the Consultative Meeting of Senior Cadres of the Ministries of the Interior and National Defence, the Chairmen of Provincial People's Committees and the Chiefs of Provincial Interior Departments, <i>August 29, 1950</i>	66
---	----

TASKS FOR ENSURING WARTIME AGRICULTURAL PRODUCTION

Concluding Speech at the 24th Plenary Meeting of the Cabinet of the Democratic People's Republic of Korea, <i>September 1, 1950</i>	75
---	----

ON THE OCCASION OF THE SECOND ANNIVERSARY OF THE FOUNDING OF THE DEMOCRATIC PEOPLE'S REPUBLIC OF KOREA

Radio Address to All the Korean People, *September 9, 1950* 84

ON IMPROVING COMMUNICATIONS TO SUIT THE WARTIME CONDITIONS

Concluding Speech at the 26th Plenary Meeting of the Cabinet
of the Democratic People's Republic of Korea, *September 15, 1950* 101

TEMPORARY STRATEGIC RETREAT AND THE TASKS OF PARTY ORGANIZATIONS

Speech at a Consultative Meeting of Provincial Party Committee
Chairmen, *September 27, 1950* 108

LET US DEFEND EVERY INCH OF OUR MOTHERLAND AT THE COST OF OUR BLOOD

Radio Address to All the Korean People, *October 11, 1950* 116

ON FORMING WORKERS' PARTY OF KOREA ORGANIZATIONS IN THE PEOPLE'S ARMY

Concluding Speech Delivered at a Meeting of the Political
Committee of the Central Committee of the Workers' Party
of Korea, *October 21, 1950* 122

LET US BE FULLY PREPARED FOR A NEW COUNTEROFFENSIVE

Speech at a Meeting of Officers and Generals Assigned
to the Supreme Headquarters of the Korean People's
Army, *October 30, 1950* 129

ON INTENSIFYING OPERATIONS BEHIND ENEMY LINES

Instructions Given to the Commander of the Second Corps
of the Korean People's Army, *November 17, 1950* 141

ON THE OCCASION OF THE LIBERATION OF PYONGYANG

Appeal of the Supreme Commander of the Korean People's Army, <i>December 9, 1950</i>	148
---	-----

THE PRESENT SITUATION AND THE IMMEDIATE TASKS

Report at the Third Plenary Meeting of the Central Committee of the Workers' Party of Korea, <i>December 21, 1950</i>	152
(1)	153
(2)	161
(3)	167
(4)	170

CONCLUDING SPEECH DELIVERED AT THE THIRD PLENARY MEETING OF THE CENTRAL COMMITTEE OF THE WORKERS' PARTY OF KOREA

<i>December 23, 1950</i>	178
--------------------------------	-----

OUR ART SHOULD BE CONDUCTIVE TO EARLY VICTORY IN THE WAR

Talk with Writers, Artists and Scientists, <i>December 24, 1950</i>	188
---	-----

ON ORGANIZING AIRCRAFT-HUNTING TEAMS

Order No. 238 of the Supreme Commander of the Korean People's Army, <i>December 29, 1950</i>	197
---	-----

ADDRESS TO THE PEOPLE THROUGHOUT THE COUNTRY ON THE OCCASION OF THE NEW YEAR 1951

<i>January 1, 1951</i>	199
------------------------------	-----

ON THE OCCASION OF THE LIBERATION OF SEOUL

Order No. 7 of the Supreme Commander of the Korean People's Army, <i>January 5, 1951</i>	208
---	-----

ON THE PRESENT SITUATION AND THE IMMEDIATE TASKS OF THE DEMOCRATIC YOUTH LEAGUE ORGANIZATIONS

Speech at the Joint Conference of the Central Committees of the Democratic Youth Leagues of North and South Korea, <i>January 18, 1951</i>	210
--	-----

SOME TASKS OF STABILIZING THE PEOPLE'S LIVELIHOOD IN WARTIME

Concluding Speech at a Meeting of the Political Committee of the Central Committee of the Workers' Party of Korea, <i>January 21, 1951</i>	225
--	-----

ON MAPPING OUT THE MASTER PLAN FOR THE POSTWAR RECONSTRUCTION OF PYONGYANG

Talk with City Planners, <i>January 21, 1951</i>	234
--	-----

ON THE POLICY OF THE WORKERS' PARTY OF KOREA FOR ITS FUTURE ACTIVITIES

Speech Delivered at a Joint Meeting of the Commanders and Political Workers of the Combined Units of the Korean People's Army and the Units of the Chinese People's Volunteers, <i>January 28, 1951</i>	240
---	-----

FIGHT MORE BRAVELY FOR FINAL VICTORY IN THE FATHERLAND LIBERATION WAR

Order No. 0097 of the Supreme Commander of the Korean People's Army, <i>February 8, 1951</i>	249
---	-----

ANSWERS TO THE QUESTIONS RAISED BY THE ACTING HEAD OF THE CHINESE XINHUA NEWS AGENCY BRANCH IN KOREA

<i>February 11, 1951</i>	254
--------------------------------	-----

LET US PRODUCE MORE WEAPONS FOR THE FRONT

Talk with the Workers of Factory No. 65, <i>February 17, 1951</i>	259
---	-----

PROCLAMATION

February 24, 1951 267

CENTRAL TASKS OF PARTY POLITICAL WORK IN THE PEOPLE'S ARMY

Speech Delivered at the Meeting of the Chiefs of the Political
Departments of Korean People's Army Corps and Divisions, *March 6, 1951* 268

THE STRUGGLE FOR FOOD IS A STRUGGLE FOR THE COUNTRY AND FOR VICTORY AT THE FRONT

Talk with Peasants in South Phyongan Province, *March 15, 1951* 282

LET US KEEP THE UNIT PERFECTLY READY AND ALERT

Talk to Soldiers of Unit 657 of the Korean People's
Army, *March 17, 1951* 287

ON STRENGTHENING PARTY LIFE IN THE PEOPLE'S ARMY

Speech Delivered at the Second Meeting of Party Activists
of the General Staff of the Supreme Headquarters
of the Korean People's Army, *March 18, 1951* 298

ON IMPROVING THE WORK OF THE EDITORIAL DEPARTMENT OF THE MAGAZINE *MILITARY* *KNOWLEDGE*

Instruction to the Chief of the General Staff of the Supreme
Headquarters of the Korean People's Army, *April 26, 1951* 308

ENHANCE THE COMBAT EFFICIENCY OF THE UNIT AND MAKE OUR COASTAL DEFENCE IMPREGNABLE

Speech to the Officers and Men of Unit 851 of the Korean
People's Army, *April 28, 1951* 314

ON THE OCCASION OF MAY DAY

Order No. 310 of the Supreme Commander of the Korean
People's Army, *May 1, 1951* 324

TALK WITH A FACT-FINDING COMMISSION
FROM THE WOMEN'S INTERNATIONAL
DEMOCRATIC FEDERATION

May 27, 1951 330

TALK WITH HEROES OF THE REPUBLIC AND MODEL SOLDIERS

June 29, 1951 331

ON SOME QUESTIONS ARISING IN OUR LITERATURE
AND ART

Talk with Writers and Artists, *June 30, 1951* 339

ON STRENGTHENING AIR DEFENCE

Talk with Cadres of the Supreme Headquarters of the Korean
People's Army, *July 13, 1951* 346

ON EXTENSIVE USE OF MORTARS

Instruction No. 00468 of the Supreme Commander of the Korean
People's Army, *August 11, 1951* 352

REPORT AT THE PYONGYANG MEETING TO
CELEBRATE THE SIXTH ANNIVERSARY OF THE
AUGUST 15 LIBERATION

August 14, 1951 354

ON THE OCCASION OF THE SIXTH ANNIVERSARY
OF THE AUGUST 15 LIBERATION

Order No. 461 of the Supreme Commander of the Korean People's
Army, *August 15, 1951* 372

SUPPORTING THE FRONT IS AN IMPORTANT DUTY
OF THE MEMBERS OF THE WOMEN'S UNION

Talk with Workers of the Women's Union, *August 15, 1951* 377

ON ORGANIZING AND TRAINING TANK-HUNTING TEAMS

Order No. 0483 of the Supreme Commander of the Korean People's Army, <i>August 24, 1951</i>	384
--	-----

LET US DEFEND HEIGHT 1211 WITH LIVES

Talk with Commanders of Unit 256 of the Korean People's Army, <i>September 23, 1951</i>	386
--	-----

ON LAUNCHING A MODEL COMPANY MOVEMENT

Instructions to Personnel of the General Political Bureau of the Korean People's Army, <i>October 29, 1951</i>	393
---	-----

ON SOME DEFECTS IN THE ORGANIZATIONAL WORK OF PARTY ORGANIZATIONS

Report to the Fourth Plenary Meeting of the Central Committee of the Workers' Party of Korea, <i>November 1, 1951</i>	399
1. On the Party's Organizational Work	401
(1) Shortcomings in Party Recruiting	402
(2) Defects in the Question of Penalties	405
(3) Shortcomings in Fostering the Core of the Party Cell	407
(4) Defects in the Allocation of Cadres	408
2. On the Work of Our Party Organizations in Relation to the Democratic Front for the Reunification of Korea	409
3. The Causes of Shortcomings in Party Work	412
4. Our Tasks	416

ON IMPROVING THE PARTY'S ORGANIZATIONAL WORK

Concluding Speech at the Fourth Plenary Meeting of the Central Committee of the Workers' Party of Korea, <i>November 2, 1951</i>	421
1. On Recruiting Work	421
2. On the Question of Penalties	424
3. For Consolidating the Democratic Front for the Reunification of Korea	425

4. On the Question of Cadres	429
5. On Cadres from the Intelligentsia	430
6. On Style of Work.....	432

ON ORGANIZING TEAMS OF SNIPERS

Order No. 085 of the Supreme Commander of the Korean People's Army, <i>November 2, 1951</i>	434
--	-----

ON ORGANIZING AND GIVING MILITARY TRAINING TO WORKERS OF MILLS, FACTORIES AND OTHER ENTERPRISES

Order No. 00606 of the Supreme Commander of the Korean People's Army, <i>November 17, 1951</i>	436
---	-----

THE IMMEDIATE TASKS BEFORE HEALTH WORKERS

Talk to Health Workers, <i>November 30, 1951</i>	438
--	-----

TO RAISE OUR ART TO A HIGHER LEVEL

Speech Delivered to the Artists Who Participated in the World Art Festival of Youth and Students, <i>December 12, 1951</i>	443
---	-----

ON ORGANIZING MOBILE BATTERIES (MORTAR PLATOONS), SEPARATE HEAVY MACHINE GUN TEAMS, AND DEMOLITION TEAMS BEHIND ENEMY LINES AND ON INTENSIFYING SNIPERS' ACTIVITY

Instruction No. 00651 of the Supreme Commander of the Korean People's Army, <i>December 20, 1951</i>	447
---	-----

LET US WIPE OUT THE INVADERS BY A DECISIVE COUNTEROFFENSIVE

**Speech Delivered at the Extraordinary Meeting
of the Cabinet of the Democratic People's
Republic of Korea**

June 25, 1950

Comrades,

Early at dawn today, the puppet army of the traitor Syngman Rhee's clique launched a surprise invasion against the northern half of Korea along the entire 38th Parallel.

In order to prevent the expansion of war, the Government of the Republic warned the enemy to stop their reckless armed attack at once and declared that, if they did not, they would be held totally responsible for the consequences arising from it. But the arrogant enemy is spreading the flames of war. They have already advanced one or two kilometres into the north, across the 38th Parallel and are trying to swallow up the northern half of Korea in one gulp, through an adventurous "blitzkrieg".

At present, the brave Security Forces of our Republic are fighting an intense battle around the 38th Parallel to frustrate the enemy attack.

Under the direct manipulation of the US imperialists, the puppet Syngman Rhee and his band had long been preparing for the aggression against the northern half of Korea.

As early as 1946 the puppet Syngman Rheeites started pressing

young and middle-aged people in south Korea into their aggressive army in preparation for the invasion of the northern half of Korea. Last year they enforced the “Military Service Law” and increased the puppet army strength on a large scale. The traitorous Syngman Rhee clique shipped in plenty of weapons and equipment from the United States to reinforce the puppet army. In addition, they recently brought in a large amount of military equipment from Japan by openly concluding a commercial treaty with the Japanese militarists.

While building up the puppet armed forces in a big way, the Syngman Rhee clique prepared attack positions along the 38th Parallel, massed huge forces there and frequently perpetrated armed provocations against the northern half of Korea.

In 1947, they crossed the demarcation line at Pyoksong, Yonbaek and their vicinities in the Ongjin Peninsula, and committed brigandish acts—they slaughtered innocent children and aged people, set fire to the homes of the people and plundered their property. In 1948, they grew more aggressive in their invasion against the northern half of Korea, which continued around Mt. Chiak in Hwanghae Province and Kosan Hill in Kangwon Province, and battles were taking place almost every day in these areas. At the beginning of 1949 the enemy’s scheme to provoke a war became more blatant. They made large-scale invasions on Kuksa Peak and Mt. Kkachi around the Ongjin Peninsula, Mt. Songak south of Kumchon, Mt. Unpha in Hwanghae Province, Yangyang and its vicinity in Kangwon Province—along the 38th Parallel. In particular, the “Horim Unit” and other “push north” commandos penetrated into the north on a number of occasions for the purpose of causing confusion in our ranks, disturbing the public, and facilitating invasion by the main forces of the puppet army. In fact, the Syngman Rhee clique have been frantic in their efforts to destroy our revolutionary gains and swallow up the northern half of Korea.

In accordance with the instruction of the US imperialists to wipe out the patriotic, democratic forces and guerrillas active in south Korea, in order to make their home front “secure” before undertaking

the “northern expedition”, the Syngman Rhee clique outlawed the activities of all democratic parties and social organizations and arrested, imprisoned and slaughtered patriots and progressive democrats at random and unfolded many large-scale “punitive” operations against the south Korean guerrillas. They viciously manoeuvred to destroy munitions plants, railways, bridges and communications establishments in the north, through large-scale infiltration of spies and saboteurs.

The Government of the Republic has made every effort to prevent fratricide and reunify the country in a peaceful way. Its consistent stand is to solve the Korean question peacefully, through the efforts of the Korean people themselves, not by war.

The Government of the Republic has made a number of most realistic and reasonable proposals for this purpose. In June this year, through the Democratic Front for the Reunification of Korea, the Government of the Republic proposed to hold general elections on democratic principles in both the north and the south, on the occasion of the fifth anniversary of the August 15 liberation, to establish a united supreme legislative body. This was followed by the proposal of the Presidium of the Supreme People’s Assembly of the Democratic People’s Republic of Korea addressed to the south Korean “National Assembly” to achieve the peaceful reunification of the country by merging the two bodies into one, for the whole of Korea. All these proposals intended for avoiding a fratricidal bloodshed and reunifying the country in a peaceful way, were supported unanimously by all the Korean people and all the progressive people throughout the world.

The puppet Syngman Rhee’s clique, however, accepted none of these fair and reasonable proposals for the peaceful reunification of the country, and finally provoked the criminal, fratricidal war they had been preparing for a long time.

By their invasion the traitorous Syngman Rhee puppet clique plunged our country and people into great danger. Now the Korean people find themselves in the midst of a serious crisis whose outcome will decide whether they become colonial slaves of imperialism

again, or remain free people belonging to an independent and sovereign state. Now that the puppet Syngman Rhee's clique has triggered off a civil war, we can never leave them alone. If we hesitate to fight at this critical moment, our people will again be unable to avoid the lot of being homeless. We must resolutely fight the enemy in order to safeguard the independence of the motherland and the freedom and honour of the nation. We will counter the barbarous aggressive war of the enemy with the righteous war of liberation.

Our People's Army should frustrate the enemy offensive, launch a decisive counteroffensive without delay and annihilate the invaders.

Frustrating the enemy's surprise attack and switching over to counterattack is, of course, no easy task. From the viewpoint of military science, this requires a ready force several times stronger than the attacking enemy. The units of the People's Army and Security Forces, now deployed along the 38th Parallel, are no more than small defensive forces. Moreover, our People's Army, as a regular army, is only two years old and has no experience in modern warfare. Under these conditions, it cannot but be a difficult task for us to check the enemy's surprise attack and launch a counteroffensive. But we must and can do this.

Our war against the aggressive act of the traitorous Syngman Rhee clique is a just war to safeguard democracy and the freedom and independence of the country. History shows that a people fighting a righteous war is sure to emerge victorious. Our people do not want to undergo colonial enslavement by imperialists again and will never yield to anybody the democratic freedom and rights already gained. All the Korean people will take up arms and rise as one in the righteous war to defend national independence, freedom and democracy.

Though smaller in number, our People's Army is incomparably stronger than the enemy. It is the genuine armed force of the Korean people, consisting of the excellent sons and daughters of the working people including workers and peasants. The People's Army is solidly

prepared in military technique and equipped with modern weapons. Comradeship and voluntary discipline are predominant among the soldiers. Politically and ideologically, every one of them is firmly resolved to serve the country and the people devotedly. Due to this superiority, the People's Army can defeat the Syngman Rhee puppet army.

Certain conditions and possibilities exist, under which we can expand the ranks of the People's Army within a short time. We have trained the men and officers of the People's Army on the principle of making them the elite of the army, so that they can become cadres with whom many new divisions can quickly be organized.

We have a solid home front capable of ensuring victory in the war. All the people are closely united into the Democratic Front for the Reunification of Korea, and the Government of the Republic, the genuine democratic state power, is leading the masses of the people to victory. The great united force of our people has been displayed in the building of a democratic country since liberation, and in this war they will prove to be an even more solidly united force by giving powerful support to the front. We also have powerful economic foundations which can produce goods to satisfy the demands of the front.

The international situation, too, favours us. Since the end of World War II, the international reactionary forces have seriously weakened, whereas the international democratic forces have rapidly grown in strength, in particular, the triumph of the Chinese revolution last year greatly changed the relationship among world political forces. Because of it, there was a marked increase in the international democratic forces, and the international reactionary forces were weakened seriously. It was also a heavy blow to the Syngman Rhee puppet clique. At present, Jiang Jieshi and his ilk are not in a position to help the Syngman Rhee puppet clique. In contrast, we are enjoying the active support and encouragement from the peoples of many countries including the Soviet Union and China.

Since we have the Party, the Government of the Republic, the strong People's Army, the solid home front and international support

and encouragement, we are sure to win. All the people and the men and officers of the People's Army must rise as one, firmly convinced of victory in the great, sacred war of annihilating the enemy.

The Ministry of National Defence must quickly send reinforcements to the counterattacking People's Army units on the front, so as to increase the momentum of their advance. Men and officers of the People's Army should display to the full unparalleled bravery and mass heroism in the battle and fight courageously, devoting all their efforts to it.

The Party, state and economic bodies should place all their work on a war footing and mobilize all their forces for winning the war.

The State Planning Commission should adjust the current year's national economic plan to the war circumstances and slash capital construction to the minimum, so that every effort in all fields of national economy is concentrated on meeting the material need of the front.

All ministries should take measures to render material support to the People's Army. The Ministry of Industry should ensure a massive production of munitions, the Ministry of Agriculture and Forestry should provide the front with sufficient staple and non-staple food, the Ministry of Transport should carry in time munitions and other supplies to the front, the Ministry of Communications should guarantee prompt and accurate communications between battle and home fronts, and the Ministry of Public Health should ensure efficient supply of medical requirements and rescue and treatment of the wounded. At the same time, all the ministries should strive to fulfil the Two-Year National Economic Plan in step with the victorious advance of the People's Army.

All the people, being more than ever ready and alert, should work hard to carry out their tasks successfully. Workers, technicians and office employees should launch a vigorous struggle for increased war production, with the greatest of enthusiasm and creative initiative, and the peasants should strive to produce even a single grain of rice more.

Public order should be strictly maintained. All institutions should establish a strict work order and enforce it thoroughly. People's government bodies and organs of the interior should be fully prepared to counter the enemy's air raids and, in case of need, lead the people to the shelters in an orderly manner.

Enemy spies, subversive elements and saboteurs can viciously manoeuvre to disrupt our home front and ferret out secrets. Keeping sharp revolutionary vigilance, all the people should strengthen the struggle against spies, subversive elements, saboteurs and other undesirable heterogeneous elements and expose all of them. All factories and enterprises should organize their own self-defence corps to guard their industrial facilities, rather than totally rely on the Industrial Guards for the security of their places of work, and the interior service organs should tighten guard over bridges and key points on the railway lines.

All people must give stronger support to the People's Army and the Security Forces and replenish the ranks of the People's Army constantly. At this solemn moment, when the destiny of the country and the nation is at stake, it is most honourable for the ardent young people to join the People's Army and fight the enemy at the risk of their lives. Young men and women should, therefore, zealously volunteer for the People's Army to serve the country and the people.

We may come across many a difficulty in the war. We must bravely overcome them, no matter what they are, and ultimately win the war.

GO ALL OUT FOR VICTORY IN THE WAR

Radio Address to All the Korean People

June 26, 1950

Dear fellow countrymen,

Dear brothers and sisters,

Officers, noncommissioned officers and men of our People's Army,

Guerrillas operating in the southern half of Korea,

On behalf of the Government of the Democratic People's Republic of Korea, I make this appeal to you:

On June 25, the army of the puppet government of the traitor Syngman Rhee launched an all-out offensive along the 38th Parallel against the northern half of Korea. The valiant Security Forces of the Republic, fighting fierce battles to counter the enemy's invasion, have frustrated the advance of the Syngman Rhee army.

The Government of the DPRK, having discussed the situation, ordered our People's Army to start decisive counteroffensive action and wipe out the enemy's armed forces. On the orders of the Government of the Republic, the People's Army drove the enemy back from areas north of the 38th Parallel and has advanced 10 to 15 kilometres to the south. It has liberated a number of towns including Ongjin, Yonan, Kaesong and Paechon, and many villages.

The traitorous Syngman Rhee clique has launched a fratricidal war although all the patriotic people of our country have made every effort to reunify the country by peaceful means.

It is universal knowledge that the Syngman Rhee clique is dead set against the country's peaceful reunification and has long since prepared for civil war. It made a frenzied effort to expand armaments and madly prepared its rear by bleeding the people in south Korea white. Through unheard-of terrorist suppression, it outlawed all democratic political parties and social organizations in south Korea, arrested, imprisoned and killed patriotic, progressive personalities, and ruthlessly suppressed the slightest manifestation of discontent against its reactionary regime. Hundreds of thousands of the best sons and daughters of our people who fought for national independence, freedom and democracy have been imprisoned and killed.

To cover up its design for civil war, the Syngman Rhee clique incessantly provoked clashes on the 38th Parallel to keep our people in a state of constant tension and sought to shift the responsibility for these onto the DPRK. In preparing for the so-called "push north", the Syngman Rhee clique, on the instructions of the US imperialists, did not even hesitate to begin colluding with the Japanese militarists, the sworn enemy of the Korean people.

The traitorous Syngman Rhee clique has sold the southern half of our country to the US imperialists for a colony and a strategic military base and placed its economy under the control of US monopoly capitalists.

The US imperialists have seized the arteries of the economy in the southern half and completely dislocated the national economy. They are plundering rice, tungsten, graphite and many other natural resources which our country vitally needs. Middle and small entrepreneurs and traders in south Korea, under pressure from US capital, find themselves doomed to bankruptcy. The majority of factories and mills have been closed down, the number of unemployed people has reached several million, peasants have not yet been given land and agriculture is declining year by year. The people in south Korea are in a wretched plight and on the verge of starvation.

Dear fellow countrymen,

The Government of the DPRK, together with all patriotic,

democratic political parties and social organizations and all the people, has done all it could to avoid a fratricidal war and the horrors of bloodshed and to reunify our country by peaceful means. As early as April 1948, the Joint Conference of Representatives of Political Parties and Social Organizations of North and South Korea made the first attempt to reunify our country by peaceful means.

The traitorous Syngman Rhee clique, however, frustrated this attempt and, on instructions from the US imperialists and their tool for aggression, the so-called “UN Temporary Commission on Korea”, staged separate elections in south Korea on May 10, 1948, and stepped up preparations for an armed attack on the northern half of our country.

With a view to attaining the peaceful reunification and full independence of the country, in June last year the 72 patriotic political parties and social organizations in north and south Korea affiliated to the Democratic Front for the Reunification of Korea proposed reunifying our country peacefully by holding general elections. All the Korean people enthusiastically supported this proposal, but the traitorous Syngman Rhee clique rejected it, too.

The Democratic Front for the Reunification of Korea reflected the will of all the people when, on June 7, 1950, it again made a proposal to expedite the peaceful reunification of the country. But the traitorous Syngman Rhee gang also prevented this proposal from being carried out, threatening to label anyone favouring it as a traitor.

On June 19, 1950, the Presidium of the Supreme People’s Assembly of the DPRK expressed its unshakable will for the country’s reunification, independence and democratic advance, in accordance with the wishes of all democratic political parties and social organizations, and advanced a proposal for achieving peaceful reunification by uniting the Supreme People’s Assembly of the DPRK and the south Korean “National Assembly” into a single all-Korea legislative body.

The traitorous Syngman Rhee clique responded to the unanimous desire of all the Korean people for peaceful reunification and our just, sincere proposal by launching civil war.

What is this traitorous clique's objective in the civil war it has ignited?

Through fratricidal war, the traitorous Syngman Rhee clique seeks to extend its anti-people, reactionary system of rule to the northern half of Korea and rob our people of the achievements they have scored in the democratic reforms.

The reactionary Syngman Rhee gang aims at taking the land away from the peasants in the northern half of Korea who have become the masters of the land as a result of the agrarian reform carried out on the principle of confiscation without compensation and free distribution, and at returning it to the landlords. It wants to deprive the people in the northern half of all the democratic liberties and rights they have won. The traitorous Syngman Rhee clique seeks to turn our country into a colony of US imperialism and make all the Korean people slaves of US imperialism.

Dear brothers and sisters,

Our country and people are in great danger.

In this war against the Syngman Rhee gang the Korean people must defend the DPRK and its Constitution with their lives, wipe out the traitorous puppet regime and liberate the southern half of our country from the reactionary rule of the traitorous Syngman Rhee clique, restore the people's committees, organs of genuine people's power, in the southern half and win the cause of the country's reunification under the banner of the DPRK.

The war we are fighting against the fratricide provoked by the traitorous Syngman Rhee clique is a just one—a war for the country's reunification, independence, freedom and democracy.

If they do not want to become the slaves of foreign imperialists again, all the Korean people must rise as one in the national-salvation struggle to overthrow and smash the traitorous Syngman Rhee “regime” and its army. We must, at all costs, win ultimate victory.

All the Korean people must heighten their vigilance and keep sharp watch on every movement of the US imperialists who stand behind the traitorous Syngman Rhee clique.

Our People's Army must prove itself brave and devoted in our just struggle to defend the successful democratic reforms in the northern half of Korea, liberate our compatriots in the southern half from reactionary rule and reunify the country under the banner of the People's Republic.

The officers, noncommissioned officers and men of our People's Army have come from the people. The People's Army, made up of best sons and daughters of our people, is the true armed force of the Korean people. The People's Army men have been trained and educated in the love of the country and the people. They are equipped with highly efficient modern weapons and armed with a lofty patriotic spirit with which they fight and sacrifice their lives in the interests of the country and the people. All the People's Army officers and men must fight to the last drop of their blood for the country and the people.

The people in the northern half of Korea must reorganize all their work to put it on a war footing and muster all their strength for victory in the war and wipe out the enemy in a short space of time. We must organize all the people to support the People's Army, send it replacements and reinforcements continually, quickly transport all necessities and munitions to the front and care for the wounded with consideration and affection.

In order to ensure victory at the front, the rear of the People's Army must be made an impregnable fortress.

In the rear, an implacable struggle must be waged against deserters and rumour-mongers, and work must be promptly organized to detect and wipe out spies and subversive elements. The cunning and sinister enemy will make every effort to spread misleading rumours. People must not be fooled by the enemy's vicious demagoguery, and the organs of state power of the Republic must mercilessly execute traitors who aid the enemy.

Workers, technicians and office workers in the northern half of Korea must defend the factories, mills, transport and communications from enemy encroachment, faithfully carry out all production plans

and all tasks assigned to them and meet the needs of the front promptly.

The peasants in the north must increase farm production, supply the People's Army with enough food and give it every assistance to ensure victory.

Men and women guerrillas in the southern half of Korea must wage guerrilla warfare more fiercely and bravely and establish liberated areas and extend them by enlisting the broad masses of the people in the guerrilla detachments. They must attack and wipe out the enemy behind the lines, raid enemy headquarters, cut and destroy railways, roads, bridges, telegraph and telephone lines, etc., cut off communications between the enemy's front and rear by every possible means, and everywhere finish off traitors, restore the people's committees—the organs of people's power—and actively cooperate with the People's Army in its operations.

Compatriots in the southern half should not obey the orders and instructions of the puppet Syngman Rhee government but sabotage them and disrupt the enemy's home-front organizations.

Workers in the south must organize strikes and raise riots everywhere. They must stop the fleeing enemy from destroying factories, milk, mines, railways and other workplaces, and actively aid the People's Army to ensure victory.

Peasants in the southern half must not give food to the enemy. They should take good care of this year's crops, take an active part in the guerrilla movement and spare nothing in cooperating with and assisting the People's Army in all ways.

Middle and small entrepreneurs and traders in the southern half must cooperate in the struggle to extricate our country's national economy from the clutches of US monopoly capital by opposing the Syngman Rhee "regime" and assisting the People's Army.

Cultural workers and intellectuals in the southern half must actively cooperate in the war against the traitorous Syngman Rhee clique to achieve reunification and freedom and to secure conditions for the development of national culture. They must thoroughly expose

the crimes of the traitorous Syngman Rhee gang to the masses of the people and play to the full the role of motivation workers in organizing mass revolts.

Officers and men of the “National Defence Army” of the puppet south Korean government,

Your enemy is none other than the traitorous Syngman Rhee clique. In the interests of the country and the people, you must lose no chance to turn your guns upon this gang of traitors.

You should come over to the side of the People’s Army and the guerrillas and join in the nationwide struggle for the reunification and freedom of the country. You must take an honourable place in the ranks of fighters for the country’s freedom and independence by coming out against the enemy of our people.

Dear compatriots, brothers and sisters,

I call upon all the Korean people to unite more closely around the Government of the DPRK in order quickly to destroy the armed forces and the police system of the traitorous Syngman Rhee clique.

The history of mankind shows that a people that defies death and rises in the struggle for freedom and independence is always victorious. Ours is a just struggle. Victory for our people is certain. I am confident that our just struggle for the country and the people will triumph.

The time has come to reunify our country. Let us march forward valiantly with firm confidence in victory!

Go all out to assist our People’s Army and the front!

Go all out to defeat and wipe out the enemy!

Long live the Korean people who have risen in a just, all-people war!

Long live the Democratic People’s Republic of Korea!

Let us march forward to victory!

THE TASKS OF POLITICAL PARTIES FOR THE VICTORY OF THE FATHERLAND LIBERATION WAR

**Speech Delivered at the Joint Conference of the Chairmen
of Provincial Committees of the Workers' Party of Korea,
the Democratic Party of North Korea and the Chondoist**

Chongu Party of North Korea

June 27, 1950

Comrades,

The present situation at the front is very favourable. The units of our People's Army continue to advance bravely, mopping up the fleeing enemy and liberating many cities and villages in the southern half of the country. Perhaps, they will be able to liberate Seoul tomorrow.

Naturally, the Government of our Republic did not want a fratricidal war. It had made a number of reasonable proposals to the south Korean side for a peaceful reunification of the country and exerted itself sincerely for their realization.

But the traitor Syngman Rhee's clique have accepted none of them. They even turned down the June 19 proposal of the Presidium of the Supreme People's Assembly of the DPRK, offering many concessions, for the peaceful reunification of the country by merging the SPA of the DPRK and the south Korean "National Assembly" into a single legislative body for the whole of Korea, and provoked the war.

It is obvious why the Syngman Rheeites are so doggedly opposed to the reasonable proposals of our Government for peaceful reunification. This was due to their conspiracy to turn not only south Korea but also the northern half of Korea into a US imperialist colony.

The Syngman Rhee clique are a band of puppets set up by the US imperialists to realize their nefarious plan of conquest of Korea. Hence, it is very clear why they did not accept our proposals which reflect the interests and desire of all the Korean people.

Opposing peaceful reunification at the instigation and manipulation of the US imperialists, the puppet clique are making frantic efforts to turn our country into a US imperialist colony. They have indiscriminately massacred the patriotic people who fought for justice and democracy in south Korea, allowed dumping of surplus goods from the United States to disrupt the national economy and introduced decadent “Yankee culture” to obliterate our national culture. They sold off south Korea to the US imperialists as their colony.

The monolithic unity of the democratic forces and the daily strengthening economic foundations and military power in the northern half of Korea cannot but be a heavy blow at the Syngman Rhee puppet clique who are trying to surrender the whole Korea to the US imperialists. So they were long preparing for the desperate gamble to launch a “push north” expedition to sell out the north as a colony before its political, economic and military forces could become stronger. They reinforced their military power by compulsorily drafting young and middle-aged people, equipped the puppet army with modern weapons and built military installations along the 38th Parallel on a large scale. In order to guarantee the “safety” of their rear, before venturing the “push north”, they banned the progressive political parties and social organizations and carried out massive “punitive” operations against the guerrillas in south Korea. Besides, they infiltrated spies, subversive elements and saboteurs into the northern half of Korea in order to undermine it

from within. And last summer they even got the “Horim Unit” of the puppet army to penetrate into Kangwon Province. However, our valiant people and Security Forces wiped it out.

While preparing for the attack, the Syngman Rhee puppet clique bragged that they would “push north” and have breakfast in Haeju, lunch in Pyongyang and supper in Sinuiju.

From the beginning of this year, they speeded up their preparations on a full scale. Syngman Rhee visited Tokyo in February, met MacArthur and struck a deal on the “north expedition”. They deployed a large number of puppet troops along the 38th Parallel and planned to start the offensive before July. At the “inaugural ceremony of a young men’s association”, a high-ranking officer of the south Korean puppet army blustered that the 38th Parallel would disappear in June or July this year.

But we were not mere onlookers of the large-scale war preparations being made by the Syngman Rhee puppet clique. Keeping a watchful eye on every move of the enemy, we have taken necessary steps to cope with the war. That is why we have been able to frustrate their surprise attack quickly and go over to the counteroffensive.

Our war against the puppet clique is a just all-people war for national reunification, independence, freedom and democracy. We must take this opportunity to liberate the south Korean people who are groaning under the reactionary rule of the US imperialists and their stooges, the Syngman Rhee puppet clique, and reunify the country under the banner of the Republic.

There is not a shadow of doubt that we will win the war. Syngman Rhee is reported to have already fled Seoul.

But we must not allow ourselves to become complacent, shouting hurrah, hoping that everything will go on smoothly because the People’s Army units are advancing south and because Syngman Rhee has run away. We must not rest on our laurels. The puppet clique will probably make a last-ditch stand. Moreover, you must remember that they are backed up by the US imperialist aggressors and their

conspirators, the Japanese militarists. The cunning and insidious US imperialists provoked this attack by the puppet troops as a prelude to direct armed intervention to colonize our country and enslave our people. US President Truman has issued a special statement on dispatching their air and naval forces now in Japan to the Korean front. This shows that the US imperialists have openly started armed intervention to realize their aggressive designs on Korea. It can be presumed that they will dispatch large aggressor forces to our country.

As early as the mid-19th century the US imperialists conceived an aggressive design on our country and ever since have worked in every way to that end. In the past, while manoeuvring to conquer our country by force of arms, they also used religion as a means of enslaving our people. They built churches in all parts of our land and preached a doctrine of nonresistance. American missionaries sermonized to Koreans, “Whosoever shall smite thee on thy right cheek, turn to him the other also.” This meant that the Korean people should not resist, even if the United States were to invade Korea. Masquerading under the cloak of “humanism”, the American missionaries had no scruples about committing unimaginable brutalities in our country. An American missionary who resided in Sunan a long time ago etched the word “thief” with hydrochloric acid on the forehead of a Korean child simply because the boy had picked up a fallen apple in his orchard. Such is a crime which can never be forgiven.

Even if the US imperialists were to directly intervene, we are sure to emerge victorious in this war for the defence of freedom and independence of the motherland.

All preconditions and possibilities are there for our triumph.

We have the Government of the Republic round which the people are firmly rallied. All its policies have been in the interests of the country and the people. For its devoted service to the country and the people, it enjoys the unreserved support and confidence of the people, who put their destiny in the hands of this Government. The guarantee

for our success lies in the fact that the Government and people are closely united as one.

We have the People's Army, the genuine armed forces of the Korean people. It is fully prepared politically and ideologically and in military technique, and is actively supported and loved by the people. That is why the People's Army can defeat any enemy.

We have a solid home front. Due to the tottering economy the Syngman Rhee puppet clique are imposing unbearable burdens on the people, and receiving millions of American dollars. In contrast, we meet the demand for war materials, based on our own solid economy.

We are receiving active support and encouragement from the peoples of the Soviet Union, China and other fraternal countries and the peace-loving people the world over.

Success in a war does not come of its own accord, even though we have all the factors for victory. To win this war all parties, social organizations and people of different strata should rise as one, irrespective of their party affiliations, political views and religious beliefs. Under the banner of the united front, the Workers' Party of Korea, the Democratic Party of North Korea and the Chondoist Chongu Party of North Korea closely together have made great efforts to ensure success in democratic construction in the northern half of Korea and build a prosperous, independent, sovereign and democratic state in the whole Korea. In the grave situation prevailing in our country today, all parties should further strengthen the united front and powerfully mobilize all sections of the people in the struggle to win the war.

What, then, should every political party do to ensure victory?

First, the demand of the front for manpower and materiel should be filled in time.

This is one of the fundamental conditions to guarantee victory. The front now needs replacements and reinforcements to the combat forces of the People's Army as well as plenty of ammunition, clothing, footwear, provisions, medicine and other war supplies.

In order to meet the manpower requirements of the People's Army,

every political party should encourage a large number of young and middle-aged people to join up. At the same time, the required number of technicians should be selected and sent to the front.

The front should be fully provided with necessary materiel. Each and every political party should ensure that all the people are mobilized to support the front, those with money giving money, and those who are strong offering their energies, and that all fields and units back up the front in every way. Hospitals should send medicine to the front and take good care of the wounded. Farm villages should provide sufficient vegetables, meat and other non-staple foodstuffs and mountain areas should gather plenty of wild vegetables for the front.

Munitions and other supplies should be transported to the front promptly. Railways and roads may be damaged by enemy bombing. In that case, the people should be mobilized to repair them immediately so that there is no hitch in sending war materials and other supplies to the front.

It is necessary to help the dependants of the People's Army soldiers well. People of all strata should be activated to support the families of servicemen so that they are free from any inconvenience.

Second, the democratic base of the northern half of Korea should be firmly defended.

This base is a reliable guarantee for victory in the war. That is why the enemy is attempting to infiltrate spies, subversive elements and saboteurs in large numbers to undermine our democratic base. Former landlords and other remnants of the overthrown exploiter classes, loafers and grumblers can also manoeuvre insidiously in collusion with them. We should launch a vigorous struggle against the spies, subversive elements and other reactionaries, give them no foothold and expose and wipe them out promptly.

This struggle can only be successful when all the people participate with heightened vigilance. All the political parties should see to it that their members and the people of all strata actively help the interior organs, keep a close watch on every movement of the

reactionaries and guard the factories and farm villages like the apple of the eye. In this way, the spies, subverters and the survivors of the overthrown exploiter classes will be prevented from acting with impunity in factories, farm and fishing villages, residential quarters or anywhere else.

Should the situation turn unfavourable at some time in the future, some people might degenerate. Such degenerates, too, must be combated without mercy.

Third, production should increase continuously.

At the outbreak of war some people become restless, instead of doing their work zealously. This is not good. For victory everyone should work harder and produce more.

In a war when artillery is fired it means so much ammunition spent and when the troops advance it means so much materiel consumed. So it would be impossible to satisfy the need of the front without constantly increasing production.

Continuous stepping up of production is also imperative to rehabilitate the ravaged economy of south Korea and save the south Korean people from distress.

The northern and southern halves of Korea present a striking contrast in the level of economic development and standards of living.

In the north all branches of national economy are rapidly recovering and developing as the days go by. Industrial production is increasing by leaps and bounds, on a much larger scale than in the years before liberation. In the field of agriculture grain output is increasing every year, thanks to the enthusiasm of the peasants, now the owners of land, and to the material aid of the state. The rapid development of national economy in all branches has resulted in higher standards of the material and cultural life of the people.

On the contrary, the south Korean economy is devastated. Industrial production is stagnant because of the shortage of coal and electricity, and grain production, too, is falling due to lack of fertilizer, irrigation, and farm implements. Occupying south Korea

and seizing its economic arteries, the US imperialists are rapaciously plundering the raw material resources and agricultural products. As a result of economic bankruptcy and the predatory policy of the US imperialists, the living conditions of the south Korean people are worse than in the years of Japanese imperialist occupation. Today they are the victims of poverty and hunger. We cannot remain mere onlookers of their misery. We are in duty bound to save them and rehabilitate their devastated economy. We must save the suffering people and rebuild the shattered economy as soon as possible.

All political parties should lead their members and the people of all sections to work harder and produce more, display all their creativity, by bringing home to them the tremendous significance of ceaselessly increasing production in satisfying the material needs of the front, raising the morale of the men and officers of the People's Army, improving the people's living standards in the northern half of Korea and also in saving the people in the south from destitution and rehabilitating the ravaged south Korean economy. In this way the Two-Year National Economic Plan will be fulfilled successfully even in wartime conditions.

Workers, technicians and office employees in the northern half of Korea should more than double their productivity so as to overfulfil not only their own work assignments, but also those for the comrades who are at the front.

Peasants should wage a vigorous struggle to carry out this year's plan of grain production. They should solve the questions of manpower and draught animals by mutual cooperation and self-reliance and obtain irrigation water by digging wells so as to overcome droughts, instead of just depending on the state for them. This year's grain production plan should thus be fulfilled or overfulfilled.

Fourth, information and ideological education should be conducted efficiently among the people in all walks of life.

The foremost task is to give prompt and wide publicity to the successes of the People's Army. The Syngman Rhee puppet clique are

now making false propaganda on the radio that they have occupied Haeju. If we do not inform the people of the victories of the People's Army quickly and widely, they can be deceived by the enemy's false propaganda and demoralized. All the political parties should use all information and motivation media including publications to give wide and timely publicity to the success of the People's Army and thus encourage powerfully the people in the rear in their struggle for increased production.

It is also important to inspire the people with firm faith in victory. In a war one may be confronted with complex and difficult situations of various kinds, which are unpredictable. The people should be educated to struggle stubbornly to overcome all difficulties in their way and win the war ultimately.

Under the wartime conditions every political party should conduct information in a coordinated manner. Some people are now doing this work as they please under the pretext of freedom of speech. But this is not the proper way for a political party to conduct information. From now on, every party should organize and conduct information in accordance with the orientation set by the Government of the Republic.

Last, positive efforts should be made to strengthen the united front

The Workers' Party of Korea, the Democratic Party of North Korea and the Chondoist Chongu Party of North Korea are struggling to attain the common aim—to build a prosperous, independent, sovereign and democratic state and provide the people with a happy life. Nevertheless, some local units of these parties still create friction over trifles now and then. If this is not overcome quickly by every political party, the mobilization of all patriotic forces for the triumph of war may be hampered.

To strengthen the united front, all the units of each party should regularly maintain close contacts and cooperate with each other. They should also promptly expose and defeat the enemy's manoeuvres to destroy the united front. Just as the Hitlerites created bad blood among the anti-fascist democratic forces by trickery during World

War II, the US imperialists and their minions, the Syngman Rhee puppet clique, are scheming to drive wedges between the Workers' Party of Korea, the Democratic Party of North Korea and the Chondoist Chongu Party of North Korea. Every party should categorically oppose these hostile manoeuvres and educate its members properly lest they should be cheated by the enemy moves.

I am firmly convinced that the Workers' Party of Korea, the Democratic Party of North Korea and the Chondoist Chongu Party of North Korea will strive for war victory, cooperating closely with one another just as they have done in the past.

**CONGRATULATORY MESSAGE
TO ALL THE PEOPLE OF KOREA,
THE PEOPLE'S ARMY, AND THE CITIZENS
OF SEOUL, ON THE OCCASION
OF THE LIBERATION OF SEOUL**

June 28, 1950

Dear fellow countrymen,

Valiant officers and men of the People's Army,

Dear citizens of Seoul,

At 11:30 today, June 28, the heroic People's Army completely liberated Seoul, the capital of our country, from the rule of the puppet Syngman Rhee's clique.

On this occasion, I, on behalf of the Government of the Democratic People's Republic of Korea, extend my congratulations to all the Korean people and express my thanks to the officers and men of the heroic People's Army who have participated in the battle to liberate Seoul.

I also offer my congratulations to the citizens of Seoul who have been freed from the fascist oppression of the traitorous Syngman Rhee clique.

All the Korean people should make every effort to actively help the advancing People's Army so as to end as soon as possible the fratricidal war ignited by the traitor Syngman Rhee's band, and to enable our country to resume its peaceful development.

The people and guerrillas behind enemy lines in the southern half

of the country must rise in revolt and generate fierce guerrilla activity everywhere, in order to harass the enemy from behind, prevent the US imperialist aggressors from shipping weapons and other munitions into our land and actively assist the advancing People's Army.

The liberated citizens of Seoul should establish democratic order at the earliest date, restore the people's committees which were dissolved by the reactionaries, set about rehabilitating the capital city and actively help the People's Army.

Long live the reunified Korean people!

Glory to the heroic People's Army!

ON CONFERRING UNIT TITLES

**Order No. 7 of the Supreme Commander
of the Korean People's Army**

July 5, 1950

The men and officers of the Third and Fourth Divisions and the 105th Tank Brigade of the Korean People's Army took the offensive and fought heroically in the battle to liberate Seoul, the country's capital city, and were the first to dash into Seoul. In commendation of their meritorious feats, I award unit titles as follows:

1. The Third and Fourth Divisions of the KPA shall henceforth be known as the Third and Fourth Seoul Divisions of the KPA respectively.

2. The 105th Tank Brigade of the KPA shall be promoted to a tank division and, at the same time, be entitled the 105th Seoul Tank Division of the KPA.

3. Commanding officers of the Third and Fourth Seoul Divisions and the 105th Seoul Tank Division shall recommend for the highest state commendation, deserving officers, noncommissioned officers and men of their units, who performed heroic military exploits in the battle to liberate Seoul.

This order shall be conveyed to all the men and officers of the KPA.

REPEL THE US IMPERIALIST INVASION!

Radio Address to All the Korean People

July 8, 1950

Dear fellow countrymen,

Dear brothers and sisters,

Valiant officers, noncommissioned officers and men of our People's Army,

Guerrillas operating in the south,

The US imperialists have launched an invasion against our country and our people.

The US air force is barbarously bombing the towns and villages of our country and massacring our peaceful people. US warships have unlawfully intruded into our territorial waters and are bombarding coastal towns and villages. US army troops, defiling our territory with their bloodstained paws, have opened a front in the areas we have not yet liberated in the southern part of our country and are resorting to every brutality in an effort to check the southward advance of the People's Army.

Why are the US imperialists hurling their troops into our country? Why are these rapacious bloodsuckers invading our sacred territory?

The Korean people have never encroached upon an inch of the territory of the United States of America, nor have they ever infringed upon its sovereignty in the slightest degree. Our people have never committed any hostile act against the American people, nor have they ever harmed the life and property of the peaceful inhabitants of the

United States of America. Why then do the US imperialists send their troops into our territory, interfere militarily in the internal affairs of our country, wantonly slaughter our people and soak our beautiful land with blood?

Because the US imperialists, in their wild dream to dominate the world, aim to turn our country into their permanent colony and our people into slaves. To achieve this, they installed Syngman Rhee, the sworn enemy of the Korean people, as ruler in the southern half of our country and rigged up the south Korean puppet government. They have also stubbornly blocked the peaceful reunification of the country, the ardent desire of the Korean people, by every possible means—intimidation, fraud, terrorism and massacre. They instigated their lackeys, the traitorous Syngman Rhee clique, to unleash a fratricidal war, and immediately launched an open invasion.

The US imperialists deny the legitimate rights of the Korean people to freedom and independence, they do not consider our people human beings. The US robbers think that the Korean people are destined only to be colonial slaves filling the moneybags of the Wall Street warmongers.

The US imperialist aggressors have turned our peaceful towns and villages into military training grounds and are making targets of our boys and girls, women and old folk in their air strafings and bombings. Pyongyang, Nampho, Haeju, Wonsan, Hamhung and many other cities and nearby villages north of the 38th Parallel, have already undergone repeated, savage air raids. South of the parallel, the liberated cities—Seoul, Chunchon, Kaesong, Uijongbu, Jumunjin, Kangnung and others—and numerous villages are constantly being subjected to vicious bombing by the US air force. The US imperialist air bandits strafe village women as they are busy transplanting rice in the paddy fields and shower bombs on innocent children.

The US imperialists are attempting to justify their invasion of our country with what they call the “resolution” of the UN Security Council on the Korean question. But this “resolution” was “adopted” in violation of the United Nations Charter, without the participation

of either the Korean representative or the delegate of the Soviet Union or China.

In spite of their false propaganda, the truth about the US imperialists' invasion of our country has been fully exposed to all honest-minded people in the world. The fraudulent statement of the US imperialists that US troops are only performing police functions in Korea on behalf of the United Nations can deceive no one.

The United Nations Organization was not established so that the US imperialists might use its flag for bombing our towns and villages and slaughtering our people who aspire to freedom and independence. While showering bombs on the Korean people, the US imperialists claim that what they are doing is for the sake of peace, but there is no one who will take their ravings for the truth.

Such lies and frauds were the infamous stock-in-trade of the Hitler fascists and Japanese imperialists. It is known to the world that Hitler said, "Whenever I speak of peace, I think of war." The Japanese imperialists tried to cover up their aggressive acts in the Far East with the hypocritical statement that they were for peace in Asia. The "imperial edict" issued by the Japanese Emperor on August 29, 1910, stated that Japan was annexing Korea "in order to preserve lasting peace in the East", as though Korea had posed a threat to peace in the East.

The US imperialists, who are today making vicious attempts to deprive our country of its independence and turn Korea into a colony, have the effrontery to try to justify their armed intervention in the internal affairs of our country and their barbarous bombing of our peaceful inhabitants with the false statement that all this is intended for peace, in the same manner as the Hitler fascists and Japanese imperialists.

But no amount of falsehood and deception can cover up or justify the bestial atrocities the US aggressors are perpetrating in Korea in gross violation of all the norms of international law and the United Nations Charter.

However massive an armed force they may mobilize in their desperate invasion of our country, the US imperialists will never be

able to break the indomitable fighting spirit and patriotic stamina of our people who have risen as one for the reunification and independence of their country. The Korean people, united rock-firm around the Workers' Party of Korea, will defy death in fighting against US imperialist aggression and will defend the freedom and honour of their country to the end.

Young and inexperienced in battle as it is, our People's Army has already achieved great combat results in only a few days because of its valour and patriotic devotion.

The People's Army units that liberated our capital city of Seoul have crossed the Han River, in the teeth of savage bombing by the US air force, and broken through the enemy positions on the southern bank. Pursuing the stampeding enemy troops, they have completely liberated our country's industrial areas, including the towns of Yongdungpho, Puphyong and Inchon, and their environs. The brave soldiers of our People's Army have now liberated Suwon, which the enemy called his second base, and are continuing their southward advance.

The People's Army units fighting in the Chunchon and Hongchon areas have liberated many towns, including Wonju, Hoengsong, Ryoju and Jechon, and nearby villages and, in their continued advance southward, have freed Chungju.

Our young air force is putting the enemy forces in disarray and valiantly attacking the US planes. In fierce air battles, Korea's gallant war birds have downed or damaged scores of enemy fighters and bombers, including B-29s, the so-called flying fortresses, thus successfully covering our ground forces' advance.

The tankmen, the pride of our army, have broken through the enemy's defence positions and given him no breathing space by making decisive attacks, and sent him fleeing in disorder. These tank units were the first to storm into our country's capital, Seoul, in pursuit of the enemy, and have now been awarded the title of honour. "Seoul Tank Division".

Our infantrymen and artillerymen are advancing without pause, dealing heavy blows at enemy troops and combat equipment,

demonstrating perseverance on the march and resolution and bravery in attack.

The young naval force of the Republic has also demonstrated valour in fulfilling its combat missions. The sinking of a US cruiser by a torpedo-boat unit in its valiant attack against overwhelming enemy strength will go down as a brilliant feat in the history of our navy.

In their engagements with the ground forces of the US invaders, our People's Army units have inflicted on them their first serious defeat.

Our results on the battle front show that the might of our people, who have risen in struggle for the independence and freedom of the country, is inexhaustible, and that the heroic People's Army can and will drive the US imperialist aggressors from our land.

Our People's Army is provided with every condition for completely smashing the enemy.

It is equipped with modern military technique.

It is not fighting for dollars or to subjugate another nation, as are the hired American troops, but for the country's independence and the people's freedom. It is the lofty spirit of patriotic devotion that provides our People's Army soldiers with an inexhaustible source of courage and heroism.

The US aggressor forces are fighting on foreign soil, whereas our People's Army, surrounded by the love and support of all the people, is fighting on its own territory. The US imperialist robbers are hated by all our people and are meeting with retaliation from the people at every step on account of their brutalities.

The US armed intervention in our country has roused the Korean people's utmost indignation and hatred for the US imperialist colonial plunderers and their running dogs, the Syngman Rhee clique. Our brave young people are flooding into the ranks of the People's Army to volunteer for the front. Already, more than 500,000 have come forward. Volunteer and combined units are being formed across the country from patriots who have risen to rout the invaders promptly in whatever part of the country they may show up and to defend every

inch of the motherland with their blood.

In response to the heroic advance of the People's Army, the intrepid guerrillas are extending their areas of operation in North Kyongsang, South Kyongsang and South Jolla Provinces and, with the active support of the people, are launching vigorous struggles against the US invaders and the traitorous Syngman Rhee gang.

In the areas liberated by the People's Army, the people of all walks of life are enthusiastically welcoming the dauntless officers and men of the People's Army who have rescued them from the police terror of the traitorous Syngman Rhee clique. The liberated people are working to restore the people's committees dissolved by the reactionaries and carry into effect the Constitution of the Democratic People's Republic of Korea which guarantees the people liberties and rights. The peasants have embarked on agrarian reform, their centuries-old desire, in accordance with the decree of the Presidium of the Supreme People's Assembly of the Democratic People's Republic of Korea. All land held by the US imperialists, the Syngman Rhee puppet government and the Korean landlords and the traitors to the nation is being confiscated and turned over to the peasants without charge.

The collapse of Syngman Rhee's puppet army and reactionary state machine has fully revealed the corruption of his puppet regime which was forced upon the south Korean people at US imperialist bayonet-point, and this has shown that the regime has no support from the Korean people.

The victories of the People's Army and the love and assistance the people unanimously shower upon its officers and men prove the superiority of the state and social system of the Democratic People's Republic of Korea and the firm unity of the people. They also show that all the Korean people fervently support the policy of the Government of the Republic of repulsing the US imperialist invasion, bringing about reunification and safeguarding national independence. Our victories have been possible because the people in the northern half of Korea have risen as one to defend the people's democratic system with their lives. This also clearly proves that the people in the

southern half support the Democratic People's Republic of Korea and ardently desire that democratic reforms, which guarantee the political, economic and cultural development of the country and improvements in the people's life, are carried out in south Korea, too.

Now that the Syngman Rhee clique, the faithful minion of US imperialism, that has been carrying out US policies in south Korea, has been defeated, the US bandits have become open in their aggression against the Korean people. Had it not been for their direct armed intervention, the fratricidal war ignited by their underlings would have ended, our country would already have been reunified and the people in the southern half completely liberated from the police terror of US imperialism and the Syngman Rhee clique.

The US imperialist invasion of Korea is arousing the indignation of people throughout the world. In many countries, including the Soviet Union, China, France, Britain, Germany, Australia, Italy, Pakistan and Japan, and even in the United States itself, popular movements are under way against the US imperialist aggression under the slogan "Hands Off Korea!" Our people's just cause of freedom and independence of the country is receiving warm support and encouragement from freedom-loving people the world over.

Dear fellow countrymen, brothers and sisters,

The US imperialists, the vicious enemies of the Korean people, have extended their bloodstained claws to our land in order to subjugate our beloved country by force of arms. All the people must unite as one and counter their armed intervention with decisive blows.

The US imperialists will realize how great and inexhaustible is the united strength of the Korean people and how unbreakable is their indomitable fighting will and their aspirations for freedom and independence.

Under no circumstances will our people become colonial slaves again.

We will never forgive the US imperialists for the crimes they have committed on our soil; we will never pardon them for barbarously bombing our peaceful towns and villages and slaughtering our

parents, brothers and sisters and innocent children. The brutal US imperialist aggressors who have soaked our land with the blood of the people will be cursed for all ages to come by the Korean people.

All Koreans who hold dear the honour of the country and the future of the nation should come out as one man in the sacred Fatherland Liberation War against the US imperialist aggression.

The names of the patriotic fighters who have done heroic deeds in the battle for freedom and independence against the foreign invaders will shine for ever in the history of our country.

All patriots,

Dear brothers and sisters,

The cause of winning freedom and independence for the country is the cause of the Korean people themselves. All the people must strengthen in every way assistance to our People's Army as it continues its southward advance, routing and wiping out the enemy with courage and patriotic devotion in fierce battles against the US imperialist invaders.

Let us mobilize all our forces and resources for aiding the People's Army and for victory. Let us produce more food, cloth, coal, steel, and other goods and use them most economically in order quickly to rout the US imperialist aggressors and the Syngman Rhee clique.

Let us strengthen labour discipline, achieve great feats of labour and rapidly rehabilitate the industrial enterprises damaged by bombing to increase wartime production. Let us maintain sharp vigilance and make our rear an impregnable fortress.

Heroic men and women guerrillas,

People in the areas not yet liberated,

Wage guerrilla struggle against the US imperialist marauders and their flunkies in an all-people movement. Guerrillas, attack the enemy more daringly, bravely and ruthlessly. Destroy roads, railways, bridges and communication lines. Disrupt the aggressors' troop movements and their transportation of weapons and supplies. Raid and destroy the enemy's armories and munition depots and wipe out enemy troops that come your way. Let fires start under the very feet

of the heinous enemy trampling the sacred soil of our country.

Your heroic struggle in the enemy's rear will speed up the advance of the People's Army and bring nearer the great day of victory in the Fatherland Liberation War.

Valiant men, noncommissioned officers and officers of the People's Army,

All the Korean people are following your great exploits in the battle for the country and the people with profound affection and pride.

Annihilate the vicious aggressors more mercilessly and decisively. Clear our land of the US imperialist invaders and their lackeys.

Officers of the People's Army,

Skilfully apply the art of command of modern warfare. Boldly lead your units on mobile operations and surround and wipe out the enemy. Turn our army's technical excellence to full account.

Infantrymen, tankmen, artillerymen, airmen and sailors of the People's Army,

You have already proved your valour and devotion in the battles to rout the Syngman Rhee puppet troops. Be even braver and thoroughly crush the aggressor forces of US imperialism that have invaded our land. Make use of your weapons skilfully and make every shot count.

You should not for a moment forget that you are carrying out a sacred duty for your country and your people. Emulate the noble patriotic spirit of our ancestors, Generals Ulji Mun Dok and Kang Kam Chan and Admiral Ri Sun Sin, who valiantly defended our country against foreign aggressors, and render heroic service, every one of you, in this sacred war for the liberation of the motherland.

Let us march forward to drive the US imperialists to the last man from our soil, where generation after generation of our ancestors lie buried and where our beloved younger generation is growing up. Let us carry our just liberation struggle to victory so that the glorious flag of the Democratic People's Republic of Korea will fly high over Pusan, Mokpho and Mt. Halla on Jeju Island.

Forward to victory!

Long live the freedom and independence of Korea!

TO THE PEOPLE'S ARMY UNITS WHICH PARTICIPATED IN THE COMBAT TO LIBERATE TAEJON

**Order of the Supreme Commander
of the Korean People's Army**

July 23, 1950

At 12:00 on July 20, 1950 the units of the People's Army operating in the direction of Taejon broke through a line of stubborn defence put up by US army ground forces and the routed troops of the puppet Syngman Rhee army and liberated Taejon, which was the enemy's strategically important military base and their political and administrative centre.

In this battle the units of the People's Army annihilated the 24th US Army Division, wiped out the surviving forces of the First and Seventh Divisions of the puppet Syngman Rhee army, took hundreds of them prisoners and captured an enormous amount of booty.

Distinguished services were performed in this battle by Task Force One of the Korean People's Army, including its Fourth Seoul Division, 105th Seoul Tank Division and the 18th Regiment of the Fourth Seoul Division.

In the name of the Military Commission and the Supreme Headquarters I express thanks to the men, noncommissioned officers, officers and generals of the People's Army who have won a brilliant victory in the battle to liberate Taejon by displaying noble patriotism and unparalleled heroism for the country and the people.

Glory to the officers and men of the heroic People's Army who fell in the battle for the independence and reunification of the country!

Glory to the heroic People's Army!

Forward to destroy and drive out the US imperialist occupiers from our country!

**ANSWERS TO THE QUESTIONS
RAISED BY MR. MANIAN,
CORRESPONDENT OF *L'HUMANITE***

July 27, 1950

Question: What is Your Excellency's appraisal of the military situation in Korea today after one month of the outbreak of the war?

Answer: The Korean people did not want the war. They strove for the country's peaceful reunification.

However, the US imperialists and their stooges, the puppet clique of south Korea, unleashed a fratricidal war in our country. The documents obtained by our People's Army in Seoul confirm that the war ignited by the puppet Syngman Rhee's clique had been long prepared under the direction of the US military mission.

It has become very clear now that the civil war in Korea was necessary for the US imperialists not only to invent a pretext for their invasion of Korea but also to carry out their policy of aggression in other parts of Asia.

The war in Korea was necessary to realize the sinister scheme of these war incendiaries; it was necessary to realize the plan for the future militarization and fascistization of the USA and also to shackle more closely to the US imperialists those nations dependent on the USA.

By unleashing the war, the anti-people Syngman Rhee quislings intend to carry out the orders of their US masters as well as bolster up

their ever-crumbling position.

In provoking this war, the US imperialists clearly underestimated the strength of the Korean people. However, in the battles waged for a month with the active support and assistance of the people and guerrillas, our People's Army has liberated three quarters of the whole area of south Korea, annihilated the greater part of Syngman Rhee puppet army and the US imperialist armed forces that had invaded Korea, and it continues to advance bravely after routing the 24th US Army Division.

Our People's Army has been tempered in battles and is growing stronger every day, accumulating combat experience.

Question: What do Your Excellency think of this war; whether it will last long or end soon?

Answer: We do not think that victory will come easily. However, the Korean people are firmly resolved to fight till they drive out all the US imperialist invaders from our soil and achieve final victory.

Question: What are the factors that will enable the Korean People's Army to defeat the US imperialist armed aggressors?

Answer: The main factor that will contribute to its victory is that our People's Army is fighting the US imperialist aggressors and their henchmen for a just cause, for the country's freedom and independence. The officers and men of the Korean People's Army are well aware of this. The Korean people who have suffered from protracted colonial oppression do not want to become the slaves of US imperialists.

The People's Army is fighting with the ceaseless assistance and support of all the Korean people as well as the support and encouragement of the progressive people all over the world. All this inspires our People's Army to perform heroic exploits.

In addition, I should like to point out that our People's Army is

well armed. These are the basic guarantees for the victory of our People's Army.

On the contrary, the US imperialist army carries on an unjust, aggressive war to enslave the Korean people and subjugate them to the US monopoly capitalists. This kind of war is, of course, unnecessary to the American people and soldiers. Therefore, it is not accidental that the US soldiers are fighting badly and surrendering to the People's Army in hundreds to be taken prisoners.

Question: Can the losses caused by US imperialist aggressors' bombing affect the outcome of the war? What do the Korean people think about the enemy's savageries in their country?

Answer: The US imperialist aggressors are indiscriminately bombing Korean towns and villages, and brutally killing peaceful inhabitants. The US imperialist colonialist marauders are flagrantly violating the universally recognized international conventions on war. They are continuously bombing peaceful towns where there have never been any military installations; they are mercilessly raiding inhabited areas, destroying houses, making our people homeless and killing them at random.

The US imperialists cover up their savageries with the resolution of the UN Security Council which they illegally got adopted in violation of the United Nations Charter by putting their voting machine in motion.

They are dyeing the UN flag with the Korean people's blood. The US imperialist invasion of Korea will add a disgraceful dirty page to the history of the United Nations.

The US imperialists have revealed their true foul colours.

Formerly there were some naive people in our country who were deceived by the honeyed words about American "humanitarianism", but today they have shed their illusions about US imperialism after personally undergoing the bitter experiences of its "humanitarianism"

The US imperialist invaders will be unable to break the Korean

people's strong will by their invasion. Their bestialities are adding fuel to our Korean people's hatred for the invaders. Their atrocities are rather increasing than weakening the Korean people's strength in their struggle for freedom and independence.

Question: What is Your Excellency's view on the worldwide movement now going on to support the Korean people's struggle against the invasion by US imperialism?

Answer: All the progressive people are infuriated at the atrocities committed by the US imperialist aggressors in Korea. Powerful voices of thousands and millions of people shouting "US imperialists, hands off Korea!" are ringing out from all countries.

This international solidarity inspires the Korean people and gives them fresh strength in their fight for their country's liberty and independence.

Question: What is Your Excellency's message to the French people?

Answer: I am very glad to avail myself of this opportunity to offer, on behalf of all the Korean people, friendly greetings to the freedom-loving people of France and express thanks to the French people for giving encouragement to the Korean people in their battle against the US imperialist invaders.

ON ORGANIZING THE WORK OF STUDYING AND POPULARIZING COMBAT EXPERIENCE IN THE FATHERLAND LIBERATION WAR

**Order No. 085 of the Supreme Commander
of the Korean People's Army**

August 12, 1950

For the purpose of studying and popularizing combat experience of the People's Army in the Fatherland Liberation War, introducing it in future combat actions and carrying forward the military traditions of the Korean people, I order as follows:

1. All the commanders of units and combined units shall responsibly keep all kinds of military documents (plans of operations, combat orders, situation maps) and any others related to the Fatherland Liberation War.

2. Among the documents mentioned above, those which are no longer needed for military action shall be delivered, whenever occasion offers, to the General Affairs Department of the General Staff.

3. The Minister of National Defence shall organize and guide the work of studying and popularizing war experience satisfactorily, and shall use its material for the training of reserves and actions of combat units.

4. All the commanders of combined units shall organize the job of studying war experience by using their own staff.

5. All the commanders of combined units shall nominate from

among the senior officers in their staff, a competent and qualified staff officer having profound knowledge and rich experience, who will bear the responsibility for this work, while simultaneously carrying out his main duties.

6. If, in case of need, a member of the War Experience Research Department of the General Staff is dispatched to the front, the commander of the unit concerned shall fully guarantee his work, let him read the different kinds of military documents mentioned in this order and arrange talks with the person who organized and led a battle, if the required document was burnt or is insufficient.

7. The Front Commander shall inform the commanders of units and combined units under him of this order, and report by August 30, 1950 on the execution of the order and the list of the personnel noted in article 5 of this order.

LET US DESTROY THE US IMPERIALIST AGGRESSORS AND ACHIEVE COMPLETE LIBERATION OF THE COUNTRY

**Order No. 82 of the Supreme Commander
of the Korean People's Army**

August 15, 1950

Men, commanding officers and cultural workers of army, navy and
air force of the People's Army,

Men and women guerrillas,

Workers, peasants and intellectuals,

Brothers and sisters in the region yet to be liberated from the
tyranny of the US imperialist invaders and the clutches of the
traitorous Syngman Rhee clique,

On behalf of the Government of the Democratic People's Republic
of Korea, I convey fervent greetings to you on the fifth anniversary of
the August 15 liberation.

Five years ago on this day the Japanese imperialist army was
defeated in Korea, and our country threw off its colonial yoke. The
Korean people won freedom and independence and set up a genuine
people's government. Our country, however, was not able to develop
as a unified, independent state on democratic lines because of the plot
of the US imperialists.

The US imperialist colonial plunderers occupied the southern half
of our country and established there a fascist system propped up with
police forces and terrorist gangs, by bringing forward their faithful

stooge Syngman Rhee and his band of traitors, and kept our country divided artificially, with the 38th Parallel as the demarcation line.

In the northern half of Korea economy and culture have developed rapidly since liberation, and living standards of the people have improved with each passing day. In the southern half, however, the people are afflicted by the heavy yoke imposed upon them by the “charitable” Americans, and production both in the industrial and agricultural sectors is going down from day to day. Factories and mills are closing down, unemployment is increasing, and the conditions of workers and peasants are miserable as ever before.

Comrades, today the Korean people are celebrating the fifth anniversary of the August 15 liberation in these trying conditions when we are still fighting the just Fatherland Liberation War against US imperialist interventionists who encroach upon the freedom and independence of our country.

The enemy invaded the northern half of Korea treacherously in flagrant violation of all international laws and conventions. They had calculated that our People’s Army would lose the power of resistance and break down at their initial attack and that the whole of Korea would become an American colony—a base to launch a new war in the Far East. But they were grossly mistaken. The US imperialist aggressors failed to see the unbreakable strength of our People’s Army and the determination of the Korean people to win freedom and independence for the country at any cost.

The fortitude and bravery of our People’s Army, Security Forces and men and women guerrillas foiled all attempts by the enemy. By quickly assuming a counteroffensive the People’s Army dealt and is dealing crushing blows at the enemy. Through battles to annihilate the aggressors, the men and commanding officers of the People’s Army have learnt how to destroy enemy troops and war materials and equipment and foil his attempts and gained rich experience.

The US imperialist aggressor army, boastful of their being elite, and puppet Syngman Rhee’s army are retreating, having suffered heavy losses, under the attack of our People’s Army. By now 29 215

enemy soldiers have been killed and more than 40,000 taken prisoner. The advancing People's Army captured a large amount of war supplies. The remaining forces of the defeated American aggressors and puppet Syngman Rhee's troops are now holding only about one tenth of the total area of the southern half. The day is not far off when the entire south will be liberated from the US imperialist interventionists and the flag of freedom and independence fly over the whole of Korea.

Comrades, the enemy has been defeated. But it has not yet been wiped out. We still have to carry on fierce fight. The US imperialist invaders will make frantic efforts to the last in an attempt to establish colonial rule over our country. Their defeats will only add to their desperation. In the final stage of the war, it will be a pitched battle. We must never be complacent with the victories already achieved; we must fight on bravely until we win ultimately.

The Korean people are firmly resolved to win the Fatherland Liberation War. No aggressors can break their iron will. The enemy has experienced the sharp blows of the People's Army. The aggressors will realize more clearly in the future the strength of the Korean people fighting for peace, freedom and independence of their country.

We should send more units of the People's Army to the front and organize our efforts better so as to win the ultimate victory in the war.

Industries should strive to redouble the speed of production. Workers, peasants, intellectuals and all those on the home front should work hard in better faith and with greater devotion to meet the demands of the front and send more munitions and provisions to the front. The railway workers should carry war materiel to the front on time and continuously. The whole country should be put on a war footing thoroughly, and everything should be subordinated to the attainment of victory in the war.

Men, noncommissioned officers, commanding officers and cultural workers of the People's Army,

Men and women guerrillas,

The struggle to destroy the US imperialist armed interventionists and the puppet Syngman Rhee clique, their stooges, and to drive the imperialist invaders out of the country depends on your stoutness, fortitude, military skill and your determination to carry out your duties towards the country and the people.

We can and must force the US imperialist aggressors out of our land as quickly as possible.

All conditions necessary for the People's Army to attain this noble objective are there. The point is that all the officers, noncommissioned officers and men of our People's Army—machine-gunners, mortar men, tank crews, airmen, sailors and all the rest of arms and services—should apply themselves to military training, master their weapons, be efficient in the performance of their jobs and acquire excellent tactics for annihilating the enemy. When all soldiers of the People's Army are thus prepared, they will be able to wipe out the enemy absolutely.

Warmly congratulating all the men, noncommissioned officers and officers of the Korean People's Army on the occasion of the fifth anniversary of the August 15 liberation, I order as follows:

1. Enlisted men, learn the use of rifles and automatic rifles well, master your weapons, hit the enemy without a single miss, and destroy the American invaders thoroughly!

2. Machine-gunners, artillerymen, mortar men, airmen and sailors, master your weapons and equipment, perform your jobs efficiently and thus crush the US imperialist aggressors! Take good care of weapons and do not waste any ammunition!

Protect yourselves and your equipment from enemy bombing!

Do not throw away even a single captured weapon, a round of ammunition and all other booty! Collect them and use them against the enemy!

Logistical workers, keep supplying weapons, ammunition and other war materiel to the front sufficiently, use the captured goods well, protect military equipment from air raids, repair damaged equipment promptly and send them to the front!

3. Every commanding officer, be an excellent commander capable of leading his men properly. Be an expert in operations, capable of coordinating actions skilfully between different units, arranging proper reconnaissance of the enemy, developing staff work onto a high level, and applying detouring tactics and other forms of manoeuvres adroitly. In this way, prove that the Korean People's Army is a genuine army which serves the people faithfully, an army capable of fulfilling creditably its noble mission of liberating the country! Enforce an iron discipline and strict order in the array and strengthen the system of undivided responsibility!

4. All the officers and men of army, navy and air force of the Korean People's Army, must advance bravely and finish off the defeated forces of the US imperialist aggressors and the puppet army of Syngman Rhee and liberate our country completely!

Deny the enemy even a breathing spell and prevent them from building up defences on a new line! Throw them into confusion and destroy their troops and military equipment by all means! Deliver a final fatal blow at the enemy!

5. Men and women guerrillas, step up actions behind enemy lines, destroying their means of communications, their headquarters and combat equipment! Strike a mortal blow to the US imperialists who have invaded our country!

Hail the fifth anniversary of the August 15 liberation!

Long live the Korean People's Army!

Long live our heroic men and women guerrillas!

Long live the freedom and independence of our country!

Make every effort in support of the heroic People's Army!

Death to the US imperialist invaders!

Forward to victory!

Everlasting honour to the officers and men of the People's Army who fell in the battle for the freedom and independence of the country!

EVERYTHING TO THE FRONT

Report at the Pyongyang Celebration of the Fifth Anniversary of the August 15 Liberation

August 15, 1950

Fellow countrymen,
Brothers and sisters,

Five years have already elapsed since our country was liberated from the yoke of a long-drawn-out colonial rule of Japanese imperialism.

Today all the Korean people are celebrating the fifth anniversary of the August 15 liberation while we are still fighting the righteous Fatherland Liberation War against the US imperialists who have invaded our country, and against the traitorous Syngman Rhee clique, their stooges, and in defence of the independence, freedom and honour of the country.

Valiant officers and men of our People's Army, and men and women guerrillas are honourably defending the independence and freedom of the country by displaying peerless bravery and heroism in the fierce battles against the US imperialist aggressor forces and Syngman Rhee's puppet army. They are liberating the southern half of our country and the people there who have been downtrodden by the US imperialist marauders and the traitor Syngman Rhee's band, their stooges.

After having reorganized all the work on the home front keeping in mind the wartime conditions, our workers, peasants, office

employees, intellectuals, patriotic entrepreneurs, merchants and handicraftsmen are subordinating everything to the interests of the frontline in order to ensure victory there. They are also launching a movement to increase production with unparalleled patriotic devotion and creativity. In this way, they are meeting the ever-increasing demands of the frontline successfully.

Today when they are hailing the fifth anniversary of the August 15 liberation, both the officers and men of the People's Army at the front and the people at the rear are living and fighting with one mind and purpose. They are doing this to annihilate the US imperialist marauders and Syngman Rhee's puppet army as quickly as possible, sweep them off our land, and win an ultimate victory in the righteous Fatherland Liberation War.

When we celebrate the fifth anniversary of the August 15 liberation under these circumstances, we are going to look back briefly on the course that the north and the south of our country has traversed in a span of five years, so as to understand the righteousness of our cause better.

Brothers and sisters,

After the August 15 liberation, the Korean people were confronted with the task of building a unified, independent and democratic state which is rich and strong by developing the country on democratic principles, by quickly removing the miseries, which are the aftereffects of the many years of Japanese imperialist rule, and by advancing industry, agriculture and culture.

In order to implement this important task, it was necessary to consolidate the people's committees set up by the initiative of the people in all parts of Korea immediately after liberation, ensure freedom of speech, press and assembly, form and consolidate democratic social organizations such as the trade unions, Peasants' Union, Democratic Youth League and Women's Union, carry out the agrarian reform, nationalize the mills, factories, railways, mines and banks, owned by the Japanese imperialists and traitors to the nation, rehabilitate the damaged factories and other enterprises quickly, raise

the living standards and cultural levels of the people, train cadres for state administration, establish the democratic educational system and expand and strengthen educational institutions and establish new ones.

The Korean people, however, were able to carry out this task only in north Korea, and not in south Korea where the US troops were stationed. Immediately after liberation, north Korea was provided with every facility to enable the Korean people to rehabilitate and develop the country into an independent state by their own efforts and to rebuild it on a democratic basis.

In the northern half of Korea, a magnificent building up of democracy has been undertaken in the five years since liberation. The people's committees, the organs of genuine people's power, have been consolidated and developed through a number of democratic elections. Democratic reforms including the agrarian reform and nationalization of industries have been carried out, and thousands and thousands of cadres trained.

As a result of this magnificent building up of democracy, the national economy has been rehabilitated and developed quickly, the people's material and cultural standards have improved noticeably, and national culture and art has advanced rapidly.

Already in 1949 the industrial output in the northern half of Korea was 3.5 times greater than that in 1946 and the production of machines increased by 146.9 per cent compared with the figure in 1944.

Great success has also been registered in agriculture since the agrarian reform. The sown area has expanded considerably, and the total amount of crop harvest in 1949 grew by 9.8 per cent over the figure in 1944. As a result, the northern half of Korea has been turned from an area short of food into an area capable of meeting its own demand for food.

As for education, in the years between 1944 and 1949 the number of primary schools increased by 2.8 times, their enrolments by 1.7 times; junior and senior middle schools by 22 times, their enrolments

by 23 times; various specialized schools by 12 times, and their enrolments by 10 times. In particular, 15 institutions of higher learning have been established during the five years, although there was none before liberation.

Brothers and sisters,

These brief figures give a clear idea of the magnificent building up of democracy in the northern half of Korea in the five years since liberation. As you can see, the success achieved by the Korean people in the north during this short period is enormous.

The developments in the southern half of Korea during the same period, however, show a striking contrast. Since the first day of its presence in the south of our country, US imperialism has invariably implemented its premeditated plan of colonizing our country, enslaving our people and turning our land into its base of aggression in the Far East.

During the past five years, the US imperialists established a police system of terrorism in the southern half of Korea by getting together the pro-Japanese elements, national betrayers and all other reactionaries. They put down all the patriotic and democratic political parties and social organizations, drove them underground and got hundreds of thousands of fine patriots jailed and slaughtered at the hands of the Syngman Rhee clique, their stooges.

The economy in the southern half of our country fell into the grip of US imperialism and the national industry was devastated in the half decade of its rule. In the first half of 1949 the number of enterprises was 36 per cent of the figure in 1943 under Japanese imperialist rule, and production in the machine-building industry in particular was only five per cent.

Agriculture in the south has been ruined in the five-year period since liberation. In 1949 the cultivated area was 55 per cent of the figure before liberation, and the crop yields were smaller by five million *sok*. The peasants have been impoverished greatly because of the law for forced delivery of grain and the law of its purchase.

With an eye to enslaving the Korean people, the US imperialists

have introduced colonial slave education and are following the policy of obliterating our nation's cultural tradition and encouraging a decadent "Yankee culture".

The US imperialists egged on the traitor Syngman Rhee's clique to set up a fascist system propped up with military and police forces in the southern half of our country and pursued the policy of wiping out all patriotic and democratic forces.

The war brought to light the fact that the traitorous Syngman Rhee clique had reduced the southern half of our country to a living hell of torture and massacre. In Jeju Island alone the traitors butchered more than 37,000 persons and burnt down hundreds of villages.

The war revealed the truth that thousands and thousands of people had been massacred by the traitorous clique in Inchon, Suwon, Taejon, Chungju, Kongju, Kangnung and other places. It also revealed their crime of having devastated hundreds of villages in the past.

All this was the colonial enslavement policy followed by the US imperialists against our country in the south during the past five years. It was a policy meant to divide our nation and unleash a civil war.

This is a brief review of the political and economic situation in the southern half of our country during the five years since the August 15 liberation.

Although the people in north and south Korea have been living for five years under different conditions, they have had only one aim and aspiration. Our land is one and so is our nation. That is why all the Korean people both in the north and the south have kept on struggling against US imperialism and the Syngman Rhee clique and for the reunification, independence and democratization of the country in the past five years.

But the US imperialists and the traitorous Syngman Rhee clique have kindled flames of war in our country.

Brothers and sisters,

The Korean people do not want this war. The patriotic, democratic

forces in this land have taken every possible step to tirelessly struggle for a peaceful reunification of the country.

Under the direct manipulation of US imperialism, however, the traitorous Syngman Rhee clique provoked a fratricidal war on last June 25 by launching a surprise invasion on the area north of the 38th Parallel. With an aim to realize their predatory design of aggression on Korea, the US imperialists are flagrantly interfering in our internal affairs and are invading our land and waters by mobilizing their army, navy and air force which have been kept in readiness.

The US imperialists and the traitor Syngman Rhee's clique have been meticulously preparing for this war for a long time.

This is clear from the fact that the puppet Syngman Rhee's clique, having massed huge forces along the 38th Parallel long before the outbreak of the war, frequently provoked clashes on this line and "purged the rear" in an attempt to incite war. Furthermore, a number of confidential documents seized by the People's Army in Seoul and the statements of the "VIPs" of the puppet regime and the "members of the National Assembly", who surrendered, prove that the war was provoked by the traitor Syngman Rhee's clique after a long preparation under the direct instruction of the US imperialists and under the direct supervision of the US military mission in Seoul.

What, then, is the aim of the traitorous Syngman Rhee clique and the US imperialists in this war?

By means of this war the traitorous Syngman Rhee clique aims to extend their anti-people reactionary system of police rule to the north in an attempt to wipe out the people's democratic system established there, kill the fine sons and daughters of our country en masse, deprive the Korean people of the democratic rights and freedom which they have won, nullify all the results of the democratic reforms and bolster up their crumbling foothold.

The traitorous Syngman Rheeites have provoked the war in order to implement the instructions of their master, the United States, to make our country its colony, and the Korean people its slaves.

Why are the US imperialists invading our country, resorting to

violent military intervention in the internal affairs of our country, bombing our peaceful towns and villages and slaughtering our brothers and sisters?

Dreaming of world domination, they are trying to turn our country into their permanent colony and to make it a strategic military base for Asian aggression and enslave our people. They not only refuse to recognize the Korean people's right to liberty and independence, but do not regard the Koreans as human beings. They believe that the Korean people are destined to a life of slavery. For this reason, ever since the day our country was liberated from the shackles of Japanese imperialist rule, they have ignored the cherished desire of the Korean people to build an independent and democratic state and obstructed its realization in every way.

As the course of the war shows, the US imperialists got the traitor Syngman Rhee and his band to provoke a fratricidal war to find an excuse for their armed intervention in our country. They are even manoeuvring to put into effect their plot of carrying out aggression on other parts of Asia. By launching an invasion on our country, they are implementing the underhanded plan of aggression, the plan of militarizing and fascistizing their own country and further subjugating their dependent countries.

The US imperialists are loudly advertising their overt act of aggression against our country as a "police action" based on the "resolution" of the UN Security Council. This will not deceive even a child in arms. They are trying to cloak their act of aggression with the Security Council "resolution" adopted illegally, without the participation of the representatives of the Democratic People's Republic of Korea, and of the Soviet Union and the People's Republic of China, the two permanent member nations of the Security Council.

The aim of the US imperialist invasion on Korea, however, is only too clear to the progressive people the world over. No one is going to be taken in by the noisy statement of the United States warmongers that the American troops are only performing "police duties" in

Korea, in the name of the United Nations.

The US imperialists' invasion on Korea constitutes a gross violation of the UN Charter and the international law. The UN was established for the sake of a lasting world peace and security and not to serve the aggressive aim of the US imperialists to invade the territory of other countries, trample upon their independence and freedom and impose the yoke of colonial slavery upon small and weak nations. The UN was not set up as an instrument of aggression to help the US imperialist invaders to interfere in the internal affairs of our country by force of arms. It was not set up to bomb our peaceful towns and villages indiscriminately, destroy the industrial establishments built with the sweat of their brows by the Korean people, kill women and other peaceful inhabitants by showering bombs over their heads nor to make colonial slaves of our nation, by mobilizing their army, navy and air force.

Nevertheless, the American marauders are perpetrating piratic armed intervention in our country under the cloak of the "United Nations forces" behind the UN flag.

Air force units of the American marauders are bombing Nampho, Pyongyang, Wonsan, Hungnam and many other towns and villages in the northern half of Korea barbarously and indiscriminately every day. They are destroying the industrial enterprises, cultural institutions and dwelling houses which have been rehabilitated and constructed by the people in the north despite all the difficulties and obstacles during the five years since liberation. They are slaughtering peaceful inhabitants, men and women, young and old, without discrimination.

Airplanes of the American marauders are daily bombing Seoul and many other towns and villages in the southern half of Korea, and their fleets are carrying out brutal naval bombardments on coastal towns and areas.

These barbaric and indiscriminate bombings have already reduced to ashes Tongduchon, Uijongbu, Suwon, Taejon, Chungju, Kongju, Kangnung, Jumunjin and many other towns, farming and fishing

villages in the south. Innumerable people have been killed and thousands and thousands of peaceful inhabitants have been deprived of their homes.

By carrying out these brutal bombings and bombardments, the US air and naval forces are seeking to destroy our industry, massacre our people and plunge the Korean people into destitution. That is why they attack, under prearranged plans, industrial enterprises which are peaceful and which have nothing to do with military targets and have never produced munitions. They indiscriminately bomb densely inhabited areas and even hurl bombs over the heads of weeding peasants, women doing washing on riversides, school children in class and peaceful inhabitants going to take shelter.

MacArthur's headquarters braggingly reports the inhumane air raids in which they drop thousands of tons of bombs over our peaceful towns and villages and over the heads of peaceful inhabitants every day, shamelessly describing them as "good deeds" in favour of the Korean people.

These atrocities of the US imperialists have provoked all the Korean people to indignation and excited them to rise in the Fatherland Liberation War to defend the independence, liberty and honour of the country at the cost of their lives.

In provoking the war in Korea, they have underestimated the source of the inexhaustible strength of our people and the might of our People's Army backed up and encouraged by all the Korean people.

During the one month and a half since it assumed a counteroffensive under the support of the Korean people, our People's Army has liberated wide areas covering nine-tenths of the total area of south Korea and 92 per cent of its total population.

By waging fierce battles against the enemy, our heroic People's Army has liberated whole areas of the Ongjin Peninsula, south Yonbaek, Kyonggi Province, North and South Chungchong Provinces, North and South Jolla Provinces and South Kangwon Province and parts of North and South Kyongsang Provinces. Now

audacious battles are being fought to liberate the rest of these two provinces. In these battles our heroic People's Army killed or wounded nearly 50,000 hostile troops and captured over 40,000 enemy soldiers and a huge amount of booty.

Our People's Army crushed the main forces of puppet Syngman Rhee's army a long time ago and is dealing heavy blows at the US ground forces including the 24th US Army Division, naval fleets and air forces, in daring and successful battles to wipe out the enemy forces from our land.

Our People's Army has been toughened in battles. Having accumulated a wealth of combat experience, it has grown stronger than ever before.

Our units of different arms have demonstrated peerless bravery, heroism and a spirit of patriotic devotion in the successive offensive and fierce counteroffensive battles to wipe out the enemy.

Our courageous and honourable infantrymen, tank crews and artillerymen have proved their strength, fortitude, courage and noble fighting spirit in the river-crossing operations to break through enemy defence lines on the Rimjin, Han, Kum, and Raktong, and in the continued attack and pursuit of the enemy across steep mountains and rugged passes and in assaults. The enemy is terrified and destroyed by the shock actions of our infantry and tanks.

Our young air and naval forces are bravely fighting the preponderant enemy, shooting down many of their planes and defending our coasts from their attacking fleets.

Great, indeed, is the bravery, heroism and patriotic devotion displayed by the soldiers of our People's Army in the just Fatherland Liberation War to defend the independence, freedom and honour of the country. A large number of officers and men of the People's Army have been awarded the title of Hero, the highest honour accorded to a citizen of the Democratic People's Republic of Korea, and tens of thousands of them have been honoured with distinguished service medals and decorations. All the Korean people, therefore, unquestioningly trust and love the People's Army.

What is the reason for the fledgling People's Army to win a victory over the US imperialist invaders and puppet Syngman Rhee's army?

The reason is first of all that all the officers and men of the People's Army know well for what and whom they are fighting. The People's Army is not fighting for dollars or to subjugate other nations like the butchers on the American payroll are. They are fighting for the independence and freedom of their own country against the US aggressors and their stooges.

For 36 years the Korean people suffered bitterly under the long-drawn-out colonial rule of Japanese imperialism. For five years now since liberation they have directly benefited from the successful democratic reforms and enjoy genuine rights and freedom in the northern half of Korea. They do not want to suffer again the lot of colonial slavery and yield the results of their democratic reforms to anyone else.

The officers and men of the People's Army are well aware that the war against the US imperialist invaders and the puppet Syngman Rhee's clique is a war in which the independence, freedom and honour of the country must be defended with their lives; a war which will decide the destiny of our nation and the future of our posterity. For this reason, they feel in their hearts an ardent love for their country and a burning hatred for the enemy, and this is the inexhaustible source of the bravery and heroism which they display in battles.

The People's Army is victorious also because it commands the support and encouragement of all the Korean people. History clearly shows that an army enjoying the support and encouragement of the people has never suffered defeat. All the Korean population, who have turned out as one against US imperialist invasion, back up the People's Army with all their energies, talents and resources.

Our People's Army has a powerful home front behind it. More than 800,000 youths in the northern half of Korea are volunteering for the People's Army, and 400,000 workers, peasants, youths and

students in the southern half have expressed their readiness to join the Volunteers Corps and guerrillas.

Everywhere in the south, the liberated people are enthusiastically welcoming the advancing People's Army. They are repairing roads and bridges and carrying food and munitions to help the People's Army despite the enemy bombing.

The valiant guerrillas in the south have been fighting bravely even at the risk of their lives for the independence and liberty of the country and for the rights of the people. In response to the advancing People's Army, they are actively launching guerrilla action behind enemy lines.

These facts speak eloquently for the way all the Korean people are supporting and encouraging the People's Army, their own armed forces, and where the source of the strength of this army lies.

The triumph of the People's Army is also due to the fact that our honourable People's Army is solidly equipped with advanced military science and technology and is using modern technical equipment skilfully.

The People's Army also owes its victory to the international sympathy and support for the Korean people from the Soviet Union and People's Democracies including the People's Republic of China and also from freedom-loving people the world over. Such international sympathy and support is an added encouragement to our people who have turned out as one in the righteous struggle to defend the independence, freedom and honour of the country at the risk of their lives, and inspires us with boundless strength and confidence in victory.

In contrast, the US imperialist aggressor troops which have launched an invasion against our country and people are being strongly condemned by the freedom-loving people of the whole world, and are certainly not receiving international support or encouragement.

What are the soldiers paid by the US imperialists fighting for in this war? They are fighting in a foreign land, far away from their

homeland, for dollars and in the interests of the US imperialists who are attempting to subjugate our country.

It is only natural, therefore, that the American aggressor troops cannot receive support both from their own people and from the progressive people the world over. Today hundreds of millions of people all over the world are raising their voices louder and louder in the cry, “US imperialists, hands off Korea!” and these voices are growing louder even in the United States.

Failing to win support from their own people and the world’s progressive people, the US invaders will inevitably fail in the predatory war of aggression against our country and people; the Korean people will triumph without fail in their righteous war of defending the independence, freedom and honour of their country.

Brothers and sisters, victory, however, does not come by itself. It must be won through a fierce struggle against the enemy by overcoming all sorts of difficulties and obstacles. In order to win this just war against the US imperialist invaders and the traitor Syngman Rhee’s clique, their stooges, the battle and home fronts must unite as one, and the victory already achieved must be followed up by operations for fresh victories.

The success scored by our heroic People’s Army at the front is tremendous. But this does not mean that we have won an ultimate victory nor does it imply that the US invaders will meekly withdraw from our country.

History knows of no instance in which imperialist marauders have withdrawn before they are hit decisively; it shows that aggressors will grow more frantic as their dirty designs are frustrated. Pressed into a narrow zone in North and South Kyongsang Provinces after a series of defeats by the advancing heroic People’s Army, the surviving forces of the US aggressors and the Syngman Rhee puppet army are becoming more desperate in their efforts to save themselves from an impending total destruction.

Consequently, the war is becoming fiercer and grimmer as it reaches the final stage where the enemy is to be driven out from their

last foothold in our land. The heroic People's Army and all the people must redouble their efforts and mobilize all their forces to wipe out the enemy and sweep them off our country.

Combined forces and small units of the valiant People's Army must annihilate the enemy and rush forward to Pusan and Jinhae, denying the enemy breathing time and preventing them from bringing in fresh reinforcements.

Unit commanders and other officers of our People's Army should further improve their military leadership. They should control their units better, command them swiftly and flexibly, and conduct bold military operations to destroy the enemy by encircling them, and display ingenuities in battles.

The brave soldiers of the People's Army should have a better command of their weapons, use them skilfully, and take good care of them. They should refrain from wasting ammunition, and instead should actively utilize captured enemy weapons and ammunition to cause the enemy's destruction. They should protect themselves, their unit weapons and equipment from enemy bombing, and improve their marksmanship to kill more enemies. They should display bravery, patriotic devotion and an offensive spirit in battles.

Logistics workers should send weapons, ammunition and other munitions to the front promptly and in time; they should carefully protect war supplies from enemy air raids, sort out the booty accurately for utilization, and quickly repair damaged equipment and send it to the frontline.

The people in the rear must step up support for the valiant People's Army soldiers who are bravely fighting the enemy self-sacrificingly to end the war quickly and win a final victory.

The people in the rear should mobilize all resources and goods in keeping with the demands at the front and subordinate all home-front efforts to the interests of the frontline. They should launch a movement to economize on raw materials and other goods and foodstuffs and increase production so as to send more munitions and other goods including provisions to the front.

All efforts on the home front should be directed to ensuring victory at the front, under the slogans: “Everything to the front!” and “Everything for victory in the war!”

The workers in the rear should increase the production of coal, steel, weapons and other munitions. Those mills and factories which have been bombed by the enemy should be quickly rebuilt for prompt operation, and production should be speeded up to meet the demands of the front. They should also defend their mills and factories from bombing.

Peasants should protect their harvests, unafraid of air raids, and develop a campaign for increased crop yields more vigorously in order to supply more food grain to the front and rear and provide industry with raw materials satisfactorily.

The peasants in the liberated areas should successfully carry out an agrarian reform on the principle of confiscation without compensation and free distribution. They should cultivate the land well as it comes under their ownership and ensure high crop yields by weeding and reaping in season. They should help the People’s Army to advance without a hitch by quickly repairing roads and bridges.

The workers and office employees in the south should quickly rehabilitate industrial enterprises, railways, bridges, transport and communications establishments damaged by the enemy and thus meet the demands of the front and also ensure that all work on the home front is carried out promptly.

The people in the south who have been liberated thanks to the heroic struggle of the People’s Army must know that they are masters of the country, and not slaves suffering from oppression and suppression as in the days of Syngman Rhee’s rule.

The people in the south should restore everywhere the people’s committees, their own organs of power; they should all participate in the elections to the people’s committees and elect their fine representatives. In this way, the people’s committees will be brought in to rehabilitate the ravaged economy in the south quickly, stabilize the lives of the impoverished people, develop culture and give active

support to the advancing People's Army.

The guerrillas operating behind the enemy line should step up their activities in response to the advance of the People's Army. They must cut off the enemy's supply route, attack them from behind, and destroy their port facilities so as to obstruct the landing of fresh forces of the US invaders. They must burn down munition depots and raid enemy headquarters.

The enemy is vicious, cunning and crafty. All the people on the home front should keep military secrets strictly, and defend with their lives their workplaces, farm villages and hometowns from enemy encroachment. Furthermore, vigilance against the enemy should be sharpened. They should mercilessly fight those who spread misleading rumours, shirkers and subversive elements and detect and punish spies and secret agents in time.

All the people should strive to bring our just struggle for national independence, liberty and honour to an ultimate victory quickly.

Victory will ultimately come to the Korean people who have risen in this just war. Let us march forward bravely to annihilate the US imperialist invaders and the traitorous Syngman Rhee clique, their stooges, as soon as possible and win a complete victory.

Hail the fifth anniversary of the August 15 liberation of our country from the long-drawn-out colonial rule of Japanese imperialism!

Glory to the Korean people and the heroic People's Army, their armed forces, who are fighting the righteous Fatherland Liberation War in defence of the independence, liberty and honour of the country against the US imperialist invaders and the traitor Syngman Rhee's clique!

Glory to the officers and men of the heroic People's Army and the men and women guerrillas who laid down their lives in the righteous Fatherland Liberation War to defend the independence and freedom and honour of the country!

Long live the united Korean people!

Long live the Democratic People's Republic of Korea!

LET US DEFEND THE HOME FRONT SOLIDLY

**Speech at the Consultative Meeting of Senior Cadres
of the Ministries of the Interior and National Defence,
the Chairmen of Provincial People's Committees
and the Chiefs of Provincial Interior Departments**

August 29, 1950

Comrades,

At today's meeting I would like to speak about a few problems arising in defending the home front solidly.

Hard hit by our People's Army, now on the counteroffensive, the US imperialist aggressors have massed their army, navy and air force on the Korean front. And not satisfied with this, they are bringing even the mercenaries of their satellite countries. The aggressors are attempting to land on the east and west coasts in order to retrieve their defeat and are barbarously bombing and bombarding our peaceful towns and villages without discrimination by sending a large number of air and naval craft. But whatever the means and methods, they will not be able to defeat the Korean people and the People's Army that are closely united around our Party and the Government of the Republic.

The US imperialists are engaged in an aggressive war to turn our country into their colony, while we are fighting a just war against the American imperialist aggressors and their stooges, the Syngman Rhee clique, in order to liberate our country. For this reason, our people and People's Army are fighting with peerless courage and patriotic

devotion both at the front and in the rear, refusing to be brought under the yoke of colonial slavery by the American imperialists. There is no doubt that our people who are fighting for the freedom and independence of the country will be crowned with ultimate success.

But we must not just imagine that we shall win the war easily. Although suffering one defeat after another, confronted with the raging waves of the advancing People's Army, the enemy is making desperate efforts to retrieve his defeats, refusing to withdraw meekly. Driven back to the Raktong River line, the enemy is trying to launch a counteroffensive in various ways, entrenching himself in new defensive positions. Our people and People's Army, therefore, should not rest content with the success already achieved; they must strive to deliver heavier blows at the enemy and win a final victory.

One of our important tasks at present is to defend the home front solidly.

To this end, first of all, an all-people coastal defence system should be established thoroughly.

The enemy is attempting to land large forces on the east and west coasts. In this situation it would be impossible to defend our coastlines firmly only with the efforts of the interior servicemen and self-defence corps members.

We must not yield an inch to the enemy or permit him to land on our coast. If every province organizes all its people actively for coastal defence, it will be able to prevent the enemy from landing.

In the years of the anti-Japanese armed struggle, we were able to defend the guerrilla base from the enemy's "punitive" attack for many years because we had established an all-people defence system thoroughly. At that time we were short of rifles and many other things. Nevertheless, all the people in the guerrilla base, men and women, young and old, rose to the occasion and fought the enemy in solid unity with the guerrillas so that they could repel the attack by large forces of the Japanese imperialists and crack down on the enemy's secret agents who had penetrated into the guerrilla base. This experience shows that if we mobilize all the people, we shall be able to destroy the enemy, no

matter how large a force he may land on our coast.

At present, the People's Army is in the first line of defence on the east and west coasts. The interior establishment must undertake the responsibility to organize the defence of the second line and of the gaps in the People's Army dispositions.

What is important in the organization of the second-line defence is to form the main forces with the interior servicemen and members of self-defence corps and properly integrate into them the efforts of the people. The self-defence corps must be composed of fine people and they should be provided with weapons. If there are not enough rifles to equip them all, at least spears should be supplied to them so that they can be ready to fight the enemy. Every province should produce hand grenades and the like on its own with which to arm the self-defence corps.

Meanwhile, strong defensive positions should be built on the coastal areas of possible enemy invasion. Trenches should be dug along coastlines, and pillboxes and bunkers built on vantage points to prevent enemy approach to the coast. At the same time, various kinds of barriers should be set up in large numbers with an active use of local materials. This is important. Such barriers will check and delay enemy landing and facilitate the mopping up of invading troops.

Inchon, Cho Island, Nampho, Anju, Cholsan and Tasa Island on the west coast and Wonsan, Hamhung, Sinpho and the like on the east coast are the spots of probable hostile landing. So special efforts should be directed to the organization of an effective defence of these coastal areas.

The chiefs of the provincial interior departments must take direct responsibility to plan coastal defence and quickly build defence works by mobilizing the self-defence corps and the local people. It would be a good idea for the Ministry of National Defence to give coordinated technical guidance to the construction of defences. If instructions are given by different people, each in his own way, it will only create confusion.

For an efficient coastal defence, communication over the command

network must be ensured. All the local means of communication should be integrated to this end.

The next thing to do to defend the home front solidly is to take effective anti-aircraft measures.

The US imperialist aggressors' atrocious bombing of our towns, farm and fishing villages is intensifying as the days go by. By such barbarous indiscriminate bombing the enemy is destroying our mills and factories, railways and bridges, and killing our parents and brothers in cold blood. This is really heartrending.

The workers of the people's government bodies and the interior establishment should take thoroughgoing anti-aircraft measures by mobilizing the broad masses and thus prevent the loss of the state and public wealth and the lives and property of the people from the attack by the US imperialist air pirates.

An important step to avoid loss from enemy bombing is to take adequate measures for shelter. Bomb-shelters should be prepared in places where many people gather, for instance, theatres, cinemas and markets and also around each dwelling house and at the edges of the fields in the countryside, to say nothing of all institutions, mills and factories. This can prevent loss from enemy bombing. Nevertheless, in some localities they are not only neglecting the digging of bomb-shelters, but are allowing even the existing ones to become unusable due to lack of proper care. Local government bodies and interior organs should guide and control all institutions, enterprises and homes to build durable bomb-shelters and take good care of them at all times.

Durable shelters for automobiles, too, should be built. The existing ones are very perfunctory. They have been built so carelessly on roadsides that vehicles in them are damaged by the strafing of passing enemy aircraft. Work should not be done in such a perfunctory manner. Strong shelters for automobiles should be built in ravines or by hillsides, a little away from the road, and they should be camouflaged carefully to avoid being discovered and damaged by enemy aircraft.

Air-raid watch and warning system should be meticulously

organized. If in this way an early air-raid warning signal is given when the approaching enemy aircraft is at a long distance, people can take shelter and save themselves. At present, air-raid watch and warning system are not properly organized so that the alarm goes when enemy aircraft is overhead. As a result, people get no time to take shelter and suffer casualties. So the organization of air-raid precautions and the warning system should be reexamined and appropriate measures taken. Watchers should be posted at proper intervals along major roads to warn pedestrians and automobiles of approaching hostile craft. Signals can be given by means of rifle shots and ringing bells.

People's government bodies and interior organs should also actively carry on the work of evacuating and dispersing urban institutions and inhabitants.

The aged people, children and other dependants and those who need not be in towns had better be evacuated to the country. If a town is populated densely when enemy bombing is heavy, there will be casualties. That is why the people who need not live in towns should be evacuated and dispersed, new residence should not be permitted, nor people entering towns for no special reason allowed to do so.

At present, large crowds are allowed to gather in markets with no protective measures at all. This is no good. The enemy is now brutally bombing peaceful inhabitants, men and women, young and old. What would happen if a large number of people are crowded in a market in such a situation? Urban markets should be removed to safe places as soon as possible.

Granaries, munition depots and the like should be evacuated to safety. Many of them still have not been moved. If they are not quickly shifted, they may suffer from enemy air raids. Provisions and munitions in storage should be removed to safe mountainous areas and spread out in dumps and well camouflaged to prevent the loss of a single grain or a single item of military supplies from enemy bombing.

In order to avoid damages and casualties from air attack, you must camouflage possible targets well and black out lights thoroughly. Both in towns and villages people are now careless about camouflage and

blackout, some even leave their lights burning brightly at night. All this is the manifestation of indolence and laxity. Such a negligence will easily expose them to enemy air attack. You should, therefore, take stringent measures for camouflage and blackout. You should see to it that even the draught cattle as well as the people working on the farms are all camouflaged. The local government bodies and interior organs should educate the inhabitants to be meticulous about camouflage and blackout and supervise and control them in this regard and even punish those who do not comply with the requirement of air defence. It is also necessary to organize anti-air-raid training frequently and keep the inhabitants wide-awake.

Thorough concealment and blackout of probable targets of enemy bombing should be buttressed with the organized effort to deceive and lure the enemy by presenting a large number of false targets. If false tanks, dummy trucks, deceptive gun positions, simulated warehouses and sham targets with tights which can be switched on and off at night are set up in large numbers at places far away from inhabited areas, the enemy will find himself in great confusion. If different kinds of false targets are set up in many places, the enemy may drop bombs over them, taking them for the real targets, and fly away. So various measures are needed to deceive the enemy.

At present, enemy airplanes fly at a low altitude for dropping bombs. Hence the need to develop a widespread struggle to shoot them down. You should never be afraid of them. If one fears the enemy, one cannot fight him or win a war. We must shoot down enemy planes by all means and keep them from flying about in our sky with impunity.

We must use all types of small arms including heavy machine guns and rifles, to say nothing of anti-aircraft guns, in combatting enemy aircraft. If we thus shoot them while they are diving and while they are climbing up, if we shoot them individually and by groups both at the front and in the rear, we shall be able to bring them down in large numbers and deter them from flying around freely in our sky. The interior force as well as the People's Army must zealously participate in the combat against enemy aircraft.

In consolidating the home front, it is very important to rescue promptly people injured by air attack and quickly rebuild damaged mills, factories, railways, roads and bridges.

Rescue parties should be organized in every district to save the people wounded in air raids by giving them prompt treatment. At the same time, rehabilitation corps should be formed for timely reconstruction of bombed facilities to ensure wartime production and transport to the front without a hitch.

These days transport for the front is often impeded by damage to railways, roads and bridges from enemy air raids. For a smooth transport of weapons, ammunition, provisions and other supplies for the front, it is necessary to take measures to repair damaged railway tracks and roads quickly, in particular, detours must be arranged at strategic points on the supply routes to the front, and submerged bridges built across the Taedong and Chongchon, and other large and small rivers. Railway Rehabilitation Corps and road rehabilitation corps should be organized for their prompt rebuilding in case of damage, and necessary materials kept ready near bridges to facilitate their reconstruction when damaged.

Damaged railways, roads and bridges cannot be satisfactorily rebuilt only by the efforts of those rehabilitation corps, in all parts of the country, therefore, a mass movement should be launched to rehabilitate such facilities.

Further, anti-aircraft weapons should be deployed near major railways, roads and bridges to protect them and cover transport for the front. Anti-aircraft weapons should also be emplaced at power plants, major mills and factories, and especially power production centres should be protected from air attack. If power stations are bombed, wartime production may suffer greatly.

To proceed. If we are to defend the home front effectively, we must increase our efforts to combat spies, subversive elements, saboteurs and other reactionaries. Without wiping them out in time, we will be unable to strengthen the home front or ensure victory in the war.

Interior organs should step up the campaign against spies and

reactionaries and maintain public order efficiently. Spies, subverters, saboteurs and other reactionaries are now working in a crafty manner to disturb our home front and frustrate wartime production. Lurking in factories and farm villages, they are engaged in subversive activities and sabotage and try to cause public disturbance by spreading various misleading rumours.

They also sometimes sneak about here and there in the guise of lunatics. So the interior organs must not be indifferent to them, but keep an alert eye on them.

Interior organs must strengthen guards and the control of strangers in boarding and lodging houses and pay particular attention to the coastal areas. Many spies, subverters and saboteurs are now infiltrating into our rear through the coastlines. While keeping the coastal areas under closer surveillance, you should take various measures to prevent spies from gaining footholds in inhabited areas.

In order to strengthen the struggle against spies and reactionaries, it is necessary to mobilize the broad masses in this work. Spies, no matter how crafty, cannot act without the knowledge of the masses. If you activate the masses and depend on their efforts, you can have all the acts of the spies and reactionaries at your finger tips. You should, therefore, see to it that not only the members of the self-defence corps but also women, aged people, even children and all the rest of the people are roused to be on the lookout for undesirable elements and inform interior organs of suspicious persons on their appearance. In this way not a single enemy will be allowed to gain footholds and move about in our rear.

Cases of shirkers and runaways from the People's Army are said to have occurred, though in a very small number. This is due to an inadequate work among the young people. Experience in the years of the anti-Japanese armed struggle shows that the men who lack confidence in victory behave in a cowardly manner in battles and even go the length of surrendering to the enemy or becoming turncoats. So the Party organizations, government bodies and working people's organizations at all levels should step up explanation and information

among the youth to inspire them with the conviction of victory and arouse them to actively join the sacred Fatherland Liberation War to destroy the sworn enemies of our nation, the US imperialists and the traitorous Syngman Rhee clique. But class enemies and those who oppose us deliberately should be shown no mercy.

If we are to defend the home front strongly, it may be necessary to deploy some army forces in provinces in addition to the self-defence corps. It would be advisable to organize a security regiment in each province.

The chairmen of the provincial people's committees and the chiefs of the provincial interior departments should quickly return and take steps to implement the tasks given at this meeting by consulting the chairmen of the provincial Party committees. And it would be appropriate for members of the Military Commission to go to each province and guide the implementation of the tasks.

TASKS FOR ENSURING WARTIME AGRICULTURAL PRODUCTION

**Concluding Speech at the 24th Plenary Meeting
of the Cabinet of the Democratic People's
Republic of Korea**
September 1, 1950

This meeting has discussed the implementation of the 1950 plan of agricultural production and various other topics.

The agricultural production plan for this year is a gigantic one. It envisages a growth of 15.9 per cent in the output of grain, 17 per cent in the number of cattle, 26.5 per cent in pigs and 16.8 per cent in sheep, compared with the figures in the previous year.

When the current farm production plan is fulfilled, the problems of food and raw material for industries will be solved to a great extent. The state, therefore, has taken various measures to implement this plan from the beginning of the year, attaching a great significance to its fulfilment.

At the Joint Meeting of the Leading Officials in the Fields of Agriculture, Forestry and Fishery held last January, we put forward specific ways and means to implement the farm production plan this year. This was followed by steps taken in February to set up farm machine hire stations in many parts of the country. The Ministry of Agriculture and Forestry has made great efforts to implement the tasks set at the joint conference. The peasants, too, have striven to fulfil and exceed the production target for the current year with a high degree of enthusiasm.

The result is that, in spite of the unprecedentedly severe drought

and the outbreak of war this year, the total output of grain is expected to rise more than 15 per cent over and above the figure of last year. I think this is a tremendous success.

Nevertheless, quite a few shortcomings in farming have been revealed this year.

The most serious defect is that a sizable area of land has not been cultivated because of the failure to overcome the drought. Kangwon Province neglected the use of rivers and subterranean water for irrigation and failed to take good care of rice nurseries. This resulted in a shortage of irrigation water and rice seedlings so that seedlings were not bedded out to more than 10,000 hectares of paddy fields. In South Hamgyong Province, the area of paddy fields where seedlings were transplanted decreased by 4.8 per cent compared with last year. In these provinces no alternative crops have ever been cultivated in the fields where rice transplantation failed and they were left idle.

Another shortcoming in this year's farming is that spring sowing, the bedding out of rice seedlings and weeding have not been done in season. In some areas the transplantation of rice seedlings was as late as at the end of June, and a few paddy fields had been left unweeded, until the beginning of August.

These shortcomings are due mainly to inefficient guidance to agriculture on the part of the local government bodies, the provincial people's committees in particular.

Guidance of agriculture should always be the central task of the local government bodies at all levels. Since guidance to factories and other enterprises is directly given by the Ministry of Industry, and guidance to transport directly by the Ministry of Transport, what can be the more important function of the local government bodies than the guidance of agriculture? Local government bodies at all levels should take agriculture in hand and concentrate their efforts on it.

Some provincial people's committees, however, are not paying attention to the guidance of the rural economy, leaving the matter exclusively to the officials of local departments of agriculture and forestry. They did not take measures to overcome the drought, nor did

they organize the efforts to finish sowing and bedding out seasonably in a meticulous way. The central authorities reiterated the directives on planting alternative crops where the sowing of intended crops failed, but nothing was done to implement them. The chairman of the Jagang Provincial People's Committee does not even know how many hectares of farm land has not been sown. This being the case, how efficient would have been his guidance of agriculture, even if he had tried?

Since the outbreak of war, workers of local government bodies have been concerned only about the battle results of the People's Army and neglected agriculture. Of course, this orientation cannot be condemned in toto. But more importantly, the local government officials should have striven to reorganize agricultural work on a war footing and step up production.

Not only does war entail the destruction of large numbers of buildings and damage to crops, but also it requires the mobilization of huge manpower resources. So it is inevitable that there is strain on manpower in the countryside during war. If local people's government officials had foreseen this and taken necessary steps at the outbreak of the war, there would not have been, despite manpower shortage, the practice of leaving fields unsown or failing to weed them at the right time.

As for the chairmen of the provincial and county people's committees who have hindered agricultural production by their irresponsible guidance this year, they should be questioned and brought to account. In future, indifference shown to rural work by government workers should not be ignored, but dealt strictly with.

The effort to increase food production during war is a struggle to ensure victory at the front. Without provisions you cannot win the war. Workers of government bodies at all levels must understand correctly the importance of increased food production in winning the war and strive to produce more in keeping with the triumphant advance of the People's Army.

Government officials at all echelons must quickly put all farming work on a war footing, concentrate all efforts on agricultural production and provide substantial guidance to current autumnal farm

work. Agricultural production plan this year should thus be fully implemented to satisfy the demands of the front and the rear for food and other farm products.

First of all, autumn vegetables should be planted on uncultivated fields. If these fields are left idle during the war, the demands for agricultural products cannot be met fully, and also a great loss can be incurred politically. We must not let even an inch of land lie fallow. If we grow vegetables in the idle fields even now, we shall be able to produce plenty of radishes to be dried in slices and cabbages to be dehydrated, if unfit for *kimchi*.

Autumn harvest should be gathered on time. If not, crops may be damaged by frost and hail, and this will decrease the grain yields. So the grain crops must be reaped in as soon as they are ripe.

If the harvest is to be reaped seasonably in spite of manpower shortage in the countryside, the work force should be organized rationally, and manpower support given properly. Local people's committees should see to it that mutual-labour-aid teams are widely formed among the peasants with a village as a unit for reaping the harvest. At the same time, the people evacuated to the country, urban residents and students should be mobilized for harvesting. The local people's committees should see to it that dependent families of the soldiers of the People's Army and those of the people who are away for a long time, drafted by the state for labour service, are given help on priority basis in reaping their harvest.

The harvests should not be stacked in the fields, but quickly hauled in and threshed so that not even a single grain of the precious crop is lost.

The government bodies at all levels should see to it that the area sown with winter wheat and barley is increased positively. They should also check that good seeds are planted in broad furrows and plenty of compost spread so as to ensure high yields. In particular, the provincial people's committees in the liberated areas in the southern half of Korea should quickly draw up a plan for sowing winter wheat and barley and make good preparations for their timely planting.

People's government officials at all echelons should pay the greatest attention to ensuring that the peasants work safely on their farms even under the heavy, atrocious bombing of the enemy. They should see to it that peasants camouflage themselves when engaged in farm work and that bomb shelters are built at the edge of fields.

Farming for next year should be prepared well.

What is most important in this respect is to prepare plenty of compost.

The Hungnam Fertilizer Factory has been damaged by barbarous enemy bombing. Even if this factory is rebuilt, it will be difficult to transport fertilizer under heavy bombing. So, if the production of compost is not stressed, the standard of farming will not be satisfactory next year. Government officials should not always depend on the state to provide them with chemical fertilizer, but ensure the production of compost sufficient for next year's farming.

You can find the abundant sources of compost everywhere. So, if you arouse the peasants, they will produce as much as necessary. Mountains are thick with grass. By cutting and letting it decompose, you can get good compost. If pigs and other domestic animals are reared, they will provide plenty of manure. Government officials should properly organize and guide the preparation of natural fertilizer—grass mowing and obtaining barnyard manure—so that every farm household will have large amounts of compost.

You should conduct proper political work among peasants to raise their enthusiasm regarding the production of compost. Just as decorations were awarded in the past to workers and technicians of the fertilizer factory who contributed to the increased output of farm products by producing plenty of fertilizer, honours should be awarded by the state to peasants who set example in the production of compost. Also the importance of compost production should be widely propagated through newspapers and radios so as to develop a mass movement in this field.

Chairmen of the provincial people's committees should, on their return, organize the production of natural fertilizer and push it dynamically. This is the only way to ensure the success of next year's farming.

Good seeds are needed to increase yields. Every farmer should be encouraged to choose good-quality seeds and keep them well. Also the state should take steps for the supply of good-quality seeds.

Measures should be taken to produce farm implements. Peasants should be encouraged to prepare necessary farm implements for themselves. At the same time, factories and producers' cooperatives should manufacture them on a large scale, so that agricultural production next year does not suffer from the lack of farm implements.

Like this year there might be a severe drought next spring. We should, therefore, take steps to secure irrigation water beforehand and actively protect pumping facilities from enemy bombing.

Autumn ploughing should be undertaken as soon as the harvesting is completed. Along with this, steps should be taken to restore the land cratered by the air attack to cultivation and conserve soil.

Last, I would like to emphasize a few points.

Agricultural tax in kind should be collected properly.

It has been suggested that rates of tax in kind be fixed in accordance with the fertility of the land. There may be advantages of such a tax system. But private farming is still prevalent in the countryside, and crop yields vary from year to year. This makes the adoption of this suggestion unpracticable. We should continue with the current system of collecting tax in kind on the basis of correct assessment of actual crop yields. The principle behind collecting agricultural tax in kind is that the tax should be received from the peasants exactly as stipulated by the regulations, neither more nor less.

If you are to avoid deviation in the collection of the tax, you must first see to it that crop yields are assessed accurately. This year the assessment of yields should not be left exclusively to the care of the assessment committee members. Workers of the sub-county and ri people's committees should go out to the fields themselves and guide the assessment.

The responsibilities for the collection of agricultural tax in kind need to be demarcated clearly between the Ministry of Agriculture and Forestry and the Food Administration Bureau of the Cabinet. Last

year, because there was no clear demarcation there were instances of shirking responsibilities or shifting them. This greatly interfered with the collection of the tax. In future, assessment of the tax in kind should be the responsibility of the Ministry of Agriculture and Forestry, and its collection should be undertaken mainly by the Food Administration Bureau of the Cabinet with the help of the former. This will ensure promptness and accuracy in this work.

Every provincial people's committee should conduct political work well among the peasants to ensure that they pay the agricultural tax in kind within the stipulated period.

Special attention must be paid to the smooth collection of agricultural tax in kind without deviation in the liberated area of the southern half of Korea. Since this is the first time we are trying out this tax system in that part of the country, there might be deviations unless the people's government bodies handle this matter prudently.

In order to ensure accurate tax collection in the liberated area, the significance of the agricultural tax in kind should be brought home to the peasants. They suffered from the forced delivery of grain at the hands of the Japanese imperialists before the August 15 liberation and then from the coercion of the puppet Syngman Rhee clique after liberation. Also, they have been subjected to distorted propaganda of the reactionaries against the system of agricultural tax in kind adopted by the Government of our Republic. For this reason, they might harbour the mistaken notion that agricultural tax in kind is the same as forced delivery. The people's government bodies in the liberated area, therefore, should widely explain to the peasants that the system of agricultural tax in kind is the most democratic and popular one, and fundamentally different from the forced delivery. They should ensure that the peasants will welcome it warmly with the correct understanding. It would be advisable to organize meetings to welcome the introduction of the agricultural tax in kind system.

Organs of the people's government in the liberated area of the south should correctly assess the actual crop yields and, on this basis, levy the tax in kind fairly. This will encourage peasants to place greater

confidence in the people's government and pay it voluntarily.

Collection of agricultural tax in kind and storage of cereals should be in keeping with the wartime conditions. When bombing is heavy, peasants should not be allowed to move about in groups to deliver the tax in kind. Tax should be delivered individually, and the cereals stored safely in different places rather than concentrated in one place in great piles. Warehouses and dumps for the grain should be camouflaged thoroughly.

Collection of the tax in kind and storage of cereals under wartime conditions is a very important and responsible work. So the chairmen of provincial people's committees should not just sit at their desks and give instructions to their subordinates in a bureaucratic way. The chairman of a provincial people's committee is master of that province. Since he is entrusted with the responsibility of organizing and guiding all work in his province, he ought to go to the field to organize and guide the collection of tax in kind and the storage of cereals.

You should work efficiently to ensure victory in the war.

The Fatherland Liberation War may end soon or drag on for quite some time. If the US imperialists bring only a small force of their aggressor troops to the Korean front, the war will be over soon; if they come in large numbers, it will continue for a long time. So we must be prepared in every way to cope with a long-drawn-out war. Even if the war ends soon we have nothing to lose by our preparedness. On the contrary, if the war continues for a long time and we are not ready at all, the consequences will be irretrievable. So the chairmen of provincial people's committees should not waste even a day, but strive against time to be prepared thoroughly for a long war.

All factories and enterprises should stock sufficient fuel, raw materials and other goods for normal production even in winter.

We must have supplies of clothing in reserve. We must increase the strength of the People's Army against possible reinforcement of the US imperialist aggressor troops. This is why we should have supplies of uniforms, shoes, blankets and other clothing ready with which to provide new units as soon as they are set up. We must therefore procure cotton and cotton fabrics on an extensive scale.

The purchase of cereals should be conducted well to accumulate food grain in reserve. This is important especially for the provincial people's committees in the liberated area of the south. Since the frontline has moved far down to the south, it would be difficult to carry food supplies all the way from the northern half of Korea. In such circumstances, the provincial people's committees in the liberated south should be proficient in the procurement of grain and supply it to the front responsibly. Each provincial people's committee should not only organize the purchase of grain, but also arrange carts and manpower necessary for the transport of the purchased grain.

Weapons, ammunition and other war supplies should be carried to the frontline units on time. When railway lines are damaged by enemy bombing, carts and people should be mobilized for the purpose. The people in South Jolla and North Kyongsang Provinces are said to be transporting ammunition and food to the troops on the battle line in spite of danger. This is laudable, indeed! If all the people help frontline units in this way, the enemy will not be able to cut off the front from the rear, no matter how desperately he tries.

Maintaining a steady flow of reinforcements and replacements to the People's Army is most important in ensuring victory in the war. The chairmen of provincial people's committees must perform this task with responsibility.

Communications should be improved. Without that, the state activities cannot be carried on satisfactorily. At present, however, communications are not properly maintained between provinces and counties, counties and sub-counties, sub-counties and ri, and even between the centre and provinces. In this crisis with the destiny of the country at stake, such inefficient communications pose a serious problem. Communications should be improved to ensure prompt and accurate transmission of directives from the centre down through provinces, counties, sub-counties and ri. Prompt measures should be taken for conveying instructions from the centre in case the communication system suffers damage. A few messengers should stand by at each county, sub-county and ri at all times to carry messages when necessary.

**ON THE OCCASION OF THE SECOND
ANNIVERSARY OF THE FOUNDING
OF THE DEMOCRATIC PEOPLE'S
REPUBLIC OF KOREA**

Radio Address to All the Korean People

September 9, 1950

Dear fellow countrymen and brothers,
Officers and men of the heroic People's Army,
Valiant men and women guerrillas,

Today, all the Korean people are greeting the second anniversary of the founding of the Democratic People's Republic of Korea, the result of a long-drawn-out struggle.

Two years ago, on September 9, 1948, the First Session of the Supreme People's Assembly adopted the Constitution of the DPRK, proclaimed the Republic and established its Government.

The Korean people celebrate the second birthday of the Republic in the raging flames of the Fatherland Liberation War against the US imperialist invaders and their stooges, the traitorous Syngman Rhee clique, and for the independence, freedom and honour of their country.

All patriotic Koreans, regardless of their social position, profession, property status, political views and religion, have risen as one man in the war to defend the Republic set up by their own hands and to safeguard the liberties won by their own struggle.

Our Republic was the first state in the world to be founded by the people who were liberated from the yoke of colonial slavery.

It is only two years since the establishment of the Republic. But in this period our people have achieved a great success in their sacred struggle to build an independent democratic state.

The path traversed by our Republic in the two years of its existence was not smooth. It was the path of fierce struggle to overcome difficulties and obstacles and to defend the Republic from enemy intrusion; yet an honourable path on which a brilliant victory was won.

Ever since its foundation, our Republic has undergone severe trials because of interference by the reactionaries at home and abroad, headed by the US imperialist marauders. The US imperialists who are pursuing the policy of colonial plunder in the southern half of our country and their stooges, the traitor Syngman Rheeites, have tried to smother our Republic since its inception by rallying reactionary forces at home and abroad, and at present they are making a brutal attack against the Republic and the Korean people.

Our Republic has opposed the colonial enslavement policy of the imperialist marauders, defended the independence and sovereignty of our nation and championed the interests and democratic rights of our people. Our Republic which enjoys the unanimous support of all the Korean people is advancing triumphantly on the honourable road in the cause of the country and the people, overcoming all trials.

Dear fellow countrymen, brothers and sisters,
Officers and men of the heroic People's Army,
Valiant men and women guerrillas,

Ever since the day they occupied the southern half of our country, the US imperialists have made frantic efforts to divide our nation, turn our country into their colony, devastate our national economy, plunder our people, and make Korea a bridgehead for their continental aggression. For this purpose, they manipulated their minions, the traitorous Syngman Rhee clique, to conduct separate elections in south Korea on May 10, 1948 and set up his reactionary, anti-people police rule.

When our country and people were confronted with the danger of partition and colonial enslavement, we held north-south general

elections on August 25, 1948, proclaimed the Democratic People's Republic and established its Government, in accordance with the will of all the Korean people who love the country and desire its reunification and independence on democratic lines. This was a great victory our people achieved in their just struggle to realize the cherished desire of the nation.

On the day of its founding, the Government of the Republic published its historic political programme for the realization of complete national reunification and for the building of a prosperous, independent and democratic state in our country.

The political programme of the Government of the Republic declared that every effort would be made to build a unified, independent, sovereign and democratic state as soon as possible, achieve territorial integrity and completely reunify the nation, by uniting all the Korean people closely around the Government.

The programme also declared that the baneful aftereffects of the many years of Japanese imperialist colonial rule would be wiped out from the political, economic and cultural life of our country, that lawful punishment would be meted out to the collaborators and other traitors who had actively helped the Japanese imperialists against the interests of the Korean people, that the survivals of the outdated Japanese imperialist ideology would be eradicated and that an active struggle would be launched against every attempt of the reactionaries to sell out our country again to foreign imperialists and undermine the democratic system established by our people.

The programme pointed out that the Government would declare null and void all the laws enacted in the years of Japanese imperialist rule to enslave our nation and all anti-people, anti-democratic legislation rigged up by the reactionary puppet regime in south Korea, and strive to consolidate and develop the results of the democratic measures such as the agrarian reform, the nationalization of industries, and the introduction of the Labour Law and the Law on Sex Equality, etc., in north Korea and extend them throughout the country.

The programme elucidated that in order to build a prosperous,

independent and democratic state in Korea, steadily improve the material well-being of the people and consolidate the political and economic independence of the country, the colonial dependence and deformity of our economy would be eliminated and an independent national economy built in opposition to the policy of economic enslavement pursued by foreign monopoly capitalists to colonize our country again.

The programme also set forth the task of ensuring big strides in education, culture and health service.

Pointing out that the people's committee, a new form of political power established by the free will of the Korean people, was the genuine political power of all the Korean people, the programme emphasized the task of struggle to consolidate local people's committees in areas where they had already been established and rebuild them where they had been dissolved by the reactionary forces.

The programme stated that our people would be led into ranks of the liberty-loving people of the whole world, that friendship would be promoted with the freedom-loving democratic nations which respect the sovereignty and liberty of our nation and desire to establish relations with us on an equal basis and that all imperialist states which attempt to revive aggressive imperialist Japan would be considered hostile to our nation.

Last, the programme said that greatest effort would be made to strengthen the People's Army in every way so as to defend our territory, the rights of the people and the results of the democratic reforms from hostile encroachment and to prevent our people from suffering again the bitter lot of a homeless people.

In the period of only two years since its establishment, the Government of the Republic has already achieved great success in implementing the historic tasks embodied in the political programme, under the ardent support of all the Korean people.

In order to establish powerful political and economic foundations in the northern half of Korea for achieving the reunification and independence of the country on democratic lines under the situation

where the country is divided into north and south because of the US imperialist policy of colonial enslavement and national division, the Government of the Republic got down to the colossal task of strengthening the local people's government bodies, consolidating and developing the results of the democratic reforms carried out already in the north, rapidly advancing the national economy and bringing about the blossoming of national culture, in the northern half the national economy and culture have been rehabilitated and developed, the material and cultural standards of the people have risen by leaps and bounds, and thousands and thousands of national cadres have been trained. As a result, the northern half has become a powerful democratic base for national reunification.

In the field of foreign policy, the DPRK Government has made every effort to enhance the international prestige of the Republic, consolidate and develop friendly relations with the peoples of many peace-loving democratic countries and strengthen solidarity and cooperation in the democratic camp as an equal member.

Having established diplomatic relations with the Soviet Union, the People's Republic of China, Poland, Czechoslovakia, Romania, Hungary, Bulgaria, Albania, the German Democratic Republic, the Mongolian People's Republic and the Democratic Republic of Vietnam, our Republic is now developing relations of internationalist cooperation and friendship and receiving ardent support and encouragement from the freedom-loving people the world over in the struggle against the US imperialist aggressors, the provoker of a new war.

Ever since its establishment, the DPRK Government has used every possible method and taken every possible step to achieve territorial integrity and national reunification by peaceful means and build a unified, independent and democratic state. It has all along maintained the line of peaceful national reunification to settle the Korean question by checking the sinister attempt of the US imperialists and their stooges, the traitorous Syngman Rhee clique, to unleash a fratricidal war and drown our beautiful land in blood for the purpose of turning

the northern half also into a colony of the United States.

The struggle to implement the decision of the Moscow Three Foreign Ministers Conference, a reasonable international agreement for the settlement of the Korean question; then the effort to push forward the work of the USSR-US Joint Commission and, after the failure of the joint commission, to put into effect the just proposal of the Soviet Government for a simultaneous withdrawal of Soviet and US troops from Korea and for leaving the Korean question to the Korean people themselves for solution; the convocation of the April 1948 north-south joint conference, its proposal for holding north-south general elections and the struggle to put it into effect; the strivings to realize the measures for peaceful national reunification proposed by the Democratic Front for the Reunification of Korea in June 1949 and to put into practice the appeal of the DFRK made in June 1950 on pushing ahead with the measures for peaceful national reunification—all this shows how sincere efforts the Government of the Republic and our people made to reunify the country peacefully by avoiding bloodshed planned by the US imperialists and the traitorous Syngman Rhee clique against our country and people.

In order to avoid extending clashes on the 38th Parallel and the tragedy of fratricide, the Government of the Republic put up all along with the provocations by the Syngman Rhee's puppet army and police forces on thousands of occasions in recent two years; under the manipulation of the US imperialists they ceaselessly intruded into the area north of the 38th Parallel, often kidnapping its inhabitants, raiding farmhouses, robbing them of their property, burning them down, and killing innocent people.

What, then, was the answer of the US imperialists and the traitorous Syngman Rhee clique to the consistent effort of the Government of the Republic and the Korean people to settle the Korean question peacefully? They deliberately frustrated the work of the USSR-US Joint Commission for the implementation of the decision of the Moscow Three Foreign Ministers Conference. They turned down the reasonable Soviet proposal for a simultaneous withdrawal of Soviet

and US troops from Korea. They reinforced the anti-people, terrorist police system in south Korea and resorted to terrorism against Korean patriots and slaughtered them with unparalleled brutality. They rigged up the treacherous separate elections at the point of the bayonet on May 10, 1948 in opposition to the proposal on the country's peaceful reunification through north-south general elections made by the April joint conference of the representatives of 56 political parties and social organizations of north and south Korea embracing more than 12 million members. They replied to the two DFRK proposals on the measures for peaceful national reunification by a surprise invasion on the northern half of Korea, provocation of fratricidal war and direct intervention of the US imperialist army, navy and air force.

All the Korean people and their armed forces, the heroic People's Army, who love their motherland, the DPRK, took up arms and are fighting the war against the traitorous Syngman Rhee clique and the US imperialist invaders, to liberate the country and defend its independence, freedom and honour at the cost of their lives.

Dear fellow countrymen, brothers and sisters,

The Fatherland Liberation War has been going on more than two months now. In this honourable war the Korean people and their heroic People's Army have registered a great success. In the two-odd months of war our valiant People's Army officers and men have destroyed the main forces of Syngman Rhee's puppet army and US army divisions in our land and liberated a vast area of the southern half of our country.

By its brilliant success in the righteous Fatherland Liberation War, our People's Army has won the love and respect of all the Korean people and the freedom-loving people the world over.

On the occasion of the second anniversary of the foundation of the DPRK, I would like, on behalf of the Government of the Republic, to offer thanks to the officers and men of the heroic People's Army and the men and women guerrillas who are defending the independence, freedom and honour of the country in fierce battles against the enemy.

Today our People's Army is in fact fighting the invaders of US imperialism, the leader of world imperialism, rather than the Syngman

Rhee's puppet army. The remnants of the puppet army destroyed by our army are not strong enough to check the powerful advance of the People's Army. In the two-odd months of battles, the puppet army has lost the bulk of its main forces and weapons. Now it is a mere fig leaf to hide the US imperialists' armed aggression.

The hired soldiers on the payroll of US monopolists who invade the territory of other nations, trample on their independence and freedom and try to subjugate them, have already paid a heavy toll for the misery and disasters they have brought to our country. As the Supreme Headquarters of the Korean People's Army reported recently, in the past two months of battles the American imperialist aggressor army casualties alone amount to 15,176 killed, 45,000 wounded, and 1,736 captured by our heroic People's Army.

As the US imperialist invasion of our country continues, their hirelings will have to pay heavier toll, confronted with our heroic People's Army launching more powerful offensives to deliver them crushing blows.

Not only the People's Army, but all the Korean people are fighting the American imperialist invaders. Our people in the rear are exerting all their efforts and making immense sacrifices to ensure victory at the front in support of the People's Army which is upholding the honour of the country in the fierce battles against the enemy. On the occasion of the second birthday of the Republic, I express my gratitude and give honour to all the people in the rear for their unprecedented heroism and patriotic devotion shown to ensure the victory at the front.

Today, the Government of the DPRK is exercising its authority not only in the northern half of Korea, but in the whole of the south except a small area of North and South Kyongsang Provinces. Nearly 95 per cent of our territory and 97 per cent of the population are now unified and united under the flag of the glorious DPRK. The people in the southern half who have won back their liberty and rights are now free from oppression, poverty, darkness and rightlessness, are joining the people in the north in the worthwhile struggle for the prosperity of the country and their own happiness.

Now I congratulate all the people in the south on their liberation from the reactionary rule of the US imperialists and the traitorous Syngman Rhee clique.

The liberated people in the south, too, are making concerted efforts to defend the Republic and giving active support to the advancing People's Army.

In the liberated area the people's committee, the organ of genuine people's government, which was established by the initiative of the people but dissolved under the repression of US imperialism and the traitorous Syngman Rhee clique, has been re-established, and its elections in counties, sub-counties and ri (dong) are being held successfully.

The voters in the south are participating actively in the elections with a high degree of political enthusiasm and patriotic ardour unknown in the years of Syngman Rhee rule. The people in the south were not at all interested then in the elections to the ruling machinery which oppressed them. But today, they are electing the organ of their own government in accordance with their own will. So it is natural that they are showing a very high degree of political awareness.

In the elections to the people's committee in counties, sub-counties and ri (dong) in the liberated area of the south, 97 to 98 per cent of the voters have participated. This eloquently shows how enthusiastically the people in the south participated in the elections to their organ of power and how ardently they support the Government of the Republic.

The same democratic reforms as in the northern half are being successively carried out in the liberated south. An agrarian reform has been introduced on the principle of confiscation without compensation and free distribution to meet the centuries-old desire of the peasants; and a labour law is in force for the workers and office employees.

As a result of the agrarian reform, peasants in the south, too, have become owners of land, free forever from subjugation and exploitation by landlords, from poverty and ignorance, and from rightlessness and humiliation. By this reform, a large area of land has been expropriated from the Syngman Rhee puppet regime, US imperialism and landlords

and distributed without compensation among hired farm hands and the peasants who have no or little land. In Kyonggi Province 156,824 hectares of land was distributed among 214,115 farm families, in South Kangwon Province 35,293 hectares among 74,789, and in South Chungchong Province 95,241 hectares among 216,980 as of August 31. The agrarian reform is being successfully carried out with the enthusiastic participation of the peasants in every province of the south and through their energetic struggle against landlords and the traitorous Syngman Rhee clique.

All the democratic reforms carried out by the Government of the Republic in the liberated area of the south are winning ardent support of the people there.

The people in the southern half who have been suffering under the anti-people, reactionary police rule of US imperialism and the traitorous Syngman Rhee clique, are zealously joining the people in the north in the Fatherland Liberation War aimed at destroying and forcing out the US imperialist invaders and the traitorous Syngman Rhee band from our country. Hundreds of thousands of patriotic young men and women in the south have joined the People's Army and the People's Volunteers Corps of their own accord and are fighting arms in hand bravely against these invaders and traitorous clique.

Our war against the American imperialist invaders is the just Fatherland Liberation War which is waged not only by the People's Army, but by all the people.

These invaders will feel more keenly as the days go by how strong the Korean people are, who have risen up against the aggressors.

They are trying to justify behind the UN flag their aggressive military actions against our country on the basis of the illegal resolution of the UN Security Council adopted in the absence of the representatives of the Soviet Union, the People's Republic of China and the Korean people.

As the world knows, the UN was set up to respect the territories of all nations, their independence, freedom and sovereignty, and to safeguard world peace and security. By pressing their hirelings into

service as voting machines, however, the US imperialists are misusing the UN for their aggressive purpose of encroaching upon the territories of other countries and the independence, freedom and sovereignty of other nations. If it is to respect the independence and sovereignty of all nations and safeguard peace and security in the true sense of the words, the UN must stop at once the US imperialists' piratic aggression against our country and their brutal bombing of our peaceful towns and villages.

Recently, at the proposal of the Democratic Front for the Reunification of Korea, a "Korean People's Statement" was published, requesting the UN Security Council to take steps to terminate immediately the US imperialist invasion on our country and withdraw their aggressor troops from our land right away. The statement is signed by more than 13 million Koreans aged 15 and above. If it refuses to be a tool of US imperialist aggression and respects the rights and liberty of the Korean people, the UN must heed to their voice and check the invasion.

The US imperialist invaders and their minions must know clearly that Korea is not a California of the United States but belongs to the Korean people, that the Korean people are firmly determined to fight to the last drop of their blood in defence of the independence, freedom and honour of their country and that the Korean people who are fighting a just war will emerge victorious.

Describing their brutal acts of aggression against our country as "UN police action", the American imperialists try to hide the tremendous losses their troops have sustained in the Korean war and their difficulties and crisis from their own people and the world public. Who will believe as "police action" the continuing US imperialist military operations which have taken a toll of more than 15,000 lives just in a matter of two months?

MacArthur's headquarters boastfully report of the thousands of tons of bombs dropped every day on our peaceful villages and towns and over the heads of innocent people. This is advertised shamelessly as "UN police action" by the incendiaries of a new war and leaders of

aggression such as Truman, MacArthur and Acheson.

The US imperialist invaders are implementing their long meditated predatory plan of conquering the Korean people by force of arms and intimidation, massacring them, enslaving them, plunging them into poverty and starvation and devastating the economy of our country.

By atrocious bombing and naval bombardment, the American gangsters have destroyed Chongjin, Wonsan, Nampho, Taejon, Wonju and many other towns, burnt down thousands of villages and killed large numbers of peaceful inhabitants in cold blood. The American imperialist armed intruders have devastated innumerable industrial enterprises, among them the Hungnam Fertilizer Factory, the Nampho Glass Factory, the Pyongyang Tobacco Factory, the Pyongyang Cornstarch Factory, the Nampho Smelter, the Hwanghae Iron Works and the Chongjin Steel Plant—the pride of our country.

The American gangsters can possibly destroy our towns, villages and industrial establishments, but they will not be able to deprive the Korean people of their liberty, independence and sovereignty. The Korean people will never forget these imperialist invaders' atrocities against our country and people, and will curse them for generations to come.

By bombing our country and people barbarously, the US imperialist armed aggressors have earned the burning hatred and resentment of all the Korean people and have exposed their beastly nature even to those people who worshipped the United States.

To kneel before the colonialist enslavers or to fight for the independence, liberty and honour of their country—these were the two alternatives. All patriotic Koreans have chosen the latter course without hesitation. All the Korean people and their armed forces, the heroic People's Army, are fighting the Fatherland Liberation War as one man to win an ultimate victory over the US imperialist invaders. The officers and men of our People's Army are displaying peerless bravery and patriotism in fierce battles and repelling the enemy valiantly. The people at the home front are striving with heroism and patriotic devotion to ensure victory at the battle front. Our People's Army is courageous without equal, and our people are heroic.

The officers and men of our People's Army have gained rich experience in the two months of battles, and acquired combat efficiency in surprising the enemy from behind and surrounding and destroying him more successfully. Our People's Army is now stronger than ever before and is capable of dealing fatal blows at the enemy. The course of war over the past two months has shown that our People's Army is stronger than the US imperialist invading army and that our officers who come from the people are superior to the enemy officers.

In a vain attempt to find an excuse for their acts of aggression, the US imperialist invaders describe as "aggressors" the Korean people who have risen in defence of the independence, liberty and honour of their country. This reminds us of the old sayings, "A thief accuses the victim" and "A nonsense ridiculous enough to make a cow laugh."

The logic of the United States robbers presents as "aggressors" the Korean people who are fighting to defend their national independence, freedom and rights from the invaders from across the ocean whereas it describes as the "defender of peace and good conduct" the colonial plunderers who are invading the territory of other country by mobilizing their army, navy and air force, trampling upon the rights and freedom of the other nation, bombing its peaceful towns and villages barbarously and massacring innocent people.

The essence of American "philosophy" by which the US imperialists define an aggressor is fully revealed in the confession of Kim Hyo Sok, the so-called former Minister of Home Affairs of the Syngman Rhee puppet regime. He related what happened when he and Beard, an American police adviser to the Syngman Rhee puppet regime, visited the American Embassy in south Korea in April 1949. American ambassador Muccio, after sociable talks with them, had said that politics meant force, that there was no need to discriminate ways and means when forces collided, that the stronger force would win over the weaker, that victory meant good and defeat evil.

The US imperialists will never be able to justify their acts of aggression committed by instigating the traitor Syngman Rheeites to provoke a fratricidal war and by launching a direct armed intervention

against our country and people according to their long meditated plan. How can they explain the already published map of strategic plan worked out by themselves and the Syngman Rhee clique to “push north?” How can they excuse themselves for the agreements on “push north” between MacArthur and Syngman Rhee in Tokyo, Japan in February this year? How can they hide the truth of the sinister trips ceaselessly made by US Congressmen, diplomatic envoys and the representatives of the Defence Department since February this year and Dulles’s visit to south Korea and his inspection of the area along the 38th Parallel and the trenches of the Syngman Rhee puppet army on the eve of the “push north?” As the Soviet delegate Malik pointed out at a UN Security Council session, nobody will think Dulles was picking wild lilies in a trench of the Syngman Rhee puppet army.

As an illustration to expose how the traitorous Syngman Rhee cabal prepared the fratricidal war under the direct manipulation of US imperialism, I would like to quote a passage from a secret letter from Syngman Rhee to Cho Byong Ok, his “special envoy”, dated April 10, 1949, discovered at the former’s secret archives. It reads: “I think you should frankly discuss this situation in fullest confidence with high officials of both the United Nations and the United States. In a strictly confidential manner tell them what plans we have for the unification of north and south. As a matter of fact, we are ready for the unification now in every respect but one; namely, we lack arms and ammunition.... We need two naval vessels of 8,000 tons each, with 18 inch guns, for the defense of the Yalu and Tumen Rivers. We need fast running patrol boats to guard against Communist underground movements along our coasts. We need 200,000 soldiers trained and organized for defense along the northern border. We need planes for defense and anti-aircraft guns. And we need them now.” In his letter to Robert Oliver, dated September 30, 1949, Syngman Rhee said, “I received your letters and thank you for them.... I wish I had time to write out from time to time some of my thoughts relating to the changing events both here and in America.... I want to tell you briefly concerning our situation. I feel strongly that now is the most psychological moment when we should

take an aggressive measure.... We will drive some of Kim Il Sung's men to the mountain region and where we will gradually starve them out. Then our line of defense must be strengthened along the Tumen and Yalu Rivers. We will be in a 100% better position. The natural boundary line along the river and the Paikdoo Mts can be made almost impenetrable with sufficient number of planes and two or three fast running naval vessels standing at the mouths of the two rivers with fighting planes defending all the coast lines including Cheju Island.... I am sure we can settle this question within a reasonable short time if we are only allowed to do it."

The secret reply from the "special envoy" Cho Byong Ok then at Lake Success addressed to Syngman Rhee on October 12, 1949 reads in part: "It was with great care and interest that I read your letter to Dr. Oliver.... The proposals you expounded therein are, under the circumstances prevailing, the only logical and ultimate method of bringing about our desired unification. However, after taking into consideration all the factors involved I am inclined to view that the time is not opportune as yet to carry out such a project, in the first place, I seriously question our preparedness, and the international opinion will not approve of such an action to be taken.... I have discussed it with Ambassador Chang and Dr. Oliver and we unanimously agreed that this matter should be regarded as the basic plan of our government that should be carried out when we are ready and the time is opportune."

These secret documents show that US imperialism and the traitorous Syngman Rhee clique were preparing for the "push north" and the fratricidal war for a long time. Now that the secret is out, they will never be able to hide their aggressive nature, no matter what excuse they bring forth.

Dear fellow countrymen, brothers and sisters,
Officers and men of the heroic People's Army,
Brave men and women guerrillas,

The Fatherland Liberation War of the Korean people against the US imperialist invaders is now at the decisive stage. The enemy is

completely surrounded on three sides, pressed into a narrow zone marked by Kyongju, Yongchon, Taegu, Changnyong, Masan and Jinhae. His only way out is the Korea Strait.

In an effort to extricate himself from impending defeat, the enemy is putting up a desperate resistance, mobilizing all the troops and weapons of the three services.

However, he will be crushed by the advance of the heroic People's Army, and he will be wiped out from our country before long.

The nearer approaches the time of his destruction, the more frantic will the enemy grow. The narrower the space where he is pressed, the more desperate will be his resistance.

Officers and men of the People's Army and guerrillas must, therefore, fight more bravely and more heroically and intensify your attack and surprise actions to wipe out the enemy troops who refuse to surrender. You must not waste even a single bullet or shell but make effective use of it, and protect your lives and weapons well from enemy air-raids. The heavier the enemy air attack, the closer you must approach his positions, break through his defence adroitly, penetrate into the depth of his defence and deeper into his rear and destroy him by surrounding him. You must know this.

Officers and men of the People's Army and men and women guerrillas, the unavenged death of the women and children killed brutally by the indiscriminate barbarous bombing and naval gunfire of the US imperialists and the towns and villages in flames are calling for revenge. With growing hatred and resentment at the barbarous bombing and atrocities perpetrated by the American imperialist gangsters against our country and people and in a fury of vengeance, you must fight the enemy more bravely and mercilessly. You must wipe out the American invaders from our country and win a brilliant victory in the honourable Fatherland Liberation War as soon as possible.

All the people in the rear must further consolidate the home front, promptly repair the roads and bridges damaged by the enemy, increase the production of munitions and provisions so as to satisfy the growing demands of the front in time and ensure victory in the battlefield, and at

the same time give increased support to the families of the People's Army soldiers.

Factory workers should produce more weapons and ammunition, transport workers should carry munitions to the front quickly by racing against time, and peasants should harvest in season and pay the tax in kind in time braving enemy air-raids to supply more food to the front and rear.

All the people at the home front must heighten their vigilance, uncover secret enemy agents, subverters and saboteurs opportunely and deal mercilessly with them in accordance with the wartime laws and decrees.

We Korean people are not fighting alone in the war against the US imperialist invaders and their stooges, the traitorous Syngman Rhee clique. In their just struggle to defend the independence, freedom and honour of their country, the Korean people are receiving fervent international encouragement and support from the peoples of the Soviet Union and many People's Democracies and also from the peace-loving people the world over. This international support and encouragement inspires us with great strength in our struggle and gives our people greater confidence in victory. Victory belongs to the Korean people who are fighting in a just cause.

Glory to the heroic Korean people, the officers and men of the valiant People's Army, their armed forces, and the men and women guerrillas, honourably fighting against the American imperialist invaders!

Let us march forward to destroy and drive out of our land the US imperialist invaders and the traitorous Syngman Rhee clique, their stooges, to the last man, as soon as possible, the enemies who encroach upon the independence, freedom and honour of our country and upon the rights of our people!

Long live the Korean people unified under the banner of the DPRK!

Long live the heroic People's Army, the armed forces of the Korean people!

Long live the Democratic People's Republic of Korea!

ON IMPROVING COMMUNICATIONS TO SUIT THE WARTIME CONDITIONS

**Concluding Speech at the 26th Plenary Meeting
of the Cabinet of the Democratic People's Republic of Korea**

September 15, 1950

The plenary meeting of the Cabinet today discussed ways of improving communications and a number of other problems. I would like to stress a few points on improving communications in keeping with the wartime conditions.

As we often say, communications form the network of nerves of a country. Just as nerves play an important part in a man's action, communications perform a major function in the activity of a state. A man cannot do anything properly, if his nerves are not working. Similarly, the state cannot function properly, if its communications system is paralysed. Improving this service is absolutely necessary for success in all state affairs—political, economic, cultural, military and other activities—and particularly in ensuring victory in a war. Communications workers should feel highly honoured in being entrusted with the nation's nerve and strive to perform their duties well specially during wartime.

They should, above all, ensure prompt and accurate telegraph and telephone communications.

This is an important requirement of modern warfare.

A modern war requires a high degree of mobility. It can be said that the outcome of a war depends on the mobility of combat troops, their

weapons, equipment and supplies. So it is of paramount importance in a modern war to guarantee swift and accurate communications to facilitate prompt movement of soldiers, their weapons, equipment and supplies.

If prompt telegraph and telephone communications are to be maintained, the signal equipment damages caused by enemy bombing and bombardment should be repaired quickly.

At present the enemy is intensifying air and artillery attacks on communications facilities in an attempt to paralyse our command system. So if we do not repair the damages quickly, we shall not be able to carry on successful operations of the command network both at the front and in the rear.

The Ministry of Communications, however, is repairing these facilities very carelessly.

Officials of the ministry, to begin with, were conservative in forming the communication-lines rehabilitation corps. They have organized only one company of this type ever since the outbreak of the war. They say this was due to manpower shortage. That is only an excuse. Can they not find even the manpower to perform such a task, however the shortage is acute? It was entirely due to their negligence of organizing activity.

The consequences of their conservatism in organizing the rehabilitation corps are very serious. Failure to repair the damaged lines quickly hampered command-communications seriously both at the front and in the rear. Worse still, sometimes it resulted in paralysing telegraph and telephone communications between the centre and North and South Hamgyong Provinces for almost a score of days on end.

For efficient telegraph and telephone communications, the rehabilitation corps should be reinforced drastically. The Ministry of Communications should organize another company for the northern half of Korea and form an appropriate number for the south, after a survey of the different conditions there and in keeping with the specific situation.

The ministry should instruct the members of the communication lines rehabilitation corps properly so as to increase their efficiency and make them responsible workers. It should also help them actively to play their role satisfactorily and provide them with adequate telephone lines, communications equipment, materials and mobile means so that they can do the repair work without a hitch.

In order to ensure telegraph and telephone services, it is necessary to supply in time the signal appliances and equipment required at the front and in the rear.

Signal appliances and equipment are the basic means of telegraph and telephone communications. Without them telegraph and telephone communications would be impossible, no matter how quickly their lines are repaired. We are now short of these appliances and equipment, but not in a position to import them right now either. We should meet the demand at the front and in the rear on our own by all means.

If they explore latent reserves to the full in a high spirit of self-reliance, the communications workers will be able to resolve the problem of signal equipment.

At present many of these appliances are lying in a damaged condition at the front. If all of them are collected and made usable again, the shortage will be overcome considerably. The officials of the Communications Ministry should take steps to collect such equipment for later use. At the same time, they should strive to make new ones for themselves. The communications equipment factory in Seoul, if run properly, will be able to manufacture a number of signal equipment.

Communication-relay stations should be moved to safe places and equipped properly.

The Pyongyang-Kumchon relay stations along roads and railways should be moved quickly to mountainous areas. Of course, this project requires plenty of funds, materials and labour. But the relay stations at their present spots are open to heavy air raids of the enemy. So this project should be finished as soon as possible.

The Ministry of Communications says that it can finish this project

within the set period if it is provided with materials and manpower. We should comply with its request. Materials, funds, civil engineers and labour should be provided by the State Planning Commission, Ministry of Finance, Ministry of City Management and provincial people's committees respectively. This project should be carried out under the order of the Military Commission in view of its great importance and urgency.

Next, postal communication should be guaranteed.

Newspapers and other publications are not being delivered properly to the liberated areas. Leading officials of the Communications Ministry have not taken any steps to improve the delivery of publications. This has been unsatisfactory since the outbreak of the Fatherland Liberation War two months back. Only now they have requested for mail vans. They say that letters have not been delivered because there were no mail vans, a lame excuse.

These shortcomings persist because they have no clear understanding of the importance of postal service. Postal service is not a mere business delivering publications or letters. It is an honourable and worthwhile mission as it contributes to the education of the people and promotes their convenience. Moreover, maintaining a good postal service during a war means a battle by nature and is particularly important. It encourages soldiers of the People's Army and the people to a burning hatred for US imperialism and to wiping out the enemy.

If they are to improve postal service, they should establish closer links with the Ministries of Transport and National Defence and others. They should maintain close contact especially with the Transport and National Defence Ministries and arrange for bogies carrying mail to be attached to both civilian and military trains.

Mail should be dispatched by vans to some areas of the northern half of Korea, Seoul and the provincial seats in the south, where train services have been disrupted because of railway damages from bombing of the US imperialist air pirates. The Road Transport Management Bureau of the Ministry of Transport should take the responsibility of dispatching mail by car.

Next, communications workers should also be trained well.

This is always important in developing communications services and all the more so during war. At present there is a great demand both at the front and in the rear for communications workers qualified politically and ideologically, technically and practically. But there are not so many competent signal workers as to meet the present requirements. This is a considerable obstacle to our communications services.

Officials in the Ministry of Communications should have trained signal workers with foresight to provide against the daily worsening situation in our country. But they did not do it. They did not even evolve a long-term training plan in concrete terms. Still less did they think of training communications workers for the Ministries of National Defence and the Interior. In consequence, they failed to meet the great demand of those ministries for signal men when the Fatherland Liberation War broke out. Even those who were enlisted in the service are not efficient. The Ministry of Communications has not trained even switchboard operators properly during the five years since liberation.

The Ministry of Communications should make every effort to train signal workers more and better. It should not train any people randomly since they are to handle communication of important information of the Party and the state directly. It should select fine persons who are ideologically sound as well as hardworking and train them to be communications workers.

The Ministry of Communications should educate the trainees effectively. Their politico-ideological education and technical training should be strengthened so that they will become excellent communications workers equipped with sound ideology and highly qualified technically.

Political and ideological education for communications workers should be intensified.

Without raising the level of their ideological consciousness steadily in this way, they will be unable to improve communications services to

suit the wartime conditions and discharge their duties satisfactorily.

At present, communications workers have a very low level of ideological awareness; they do not seem to love their country enough in particular. Since the outbreak of the war a large number of ardent patriots have emerged in other areas but very few in the field of communications. Railway workers are ensuring wartime transport even under heavy enemy bombing displaying the spirit of self-sacrifice. In contrast, communications workers did not do properly even what they could, and this seriously affected wartime communications. If they had worked with fervent patriotism like the railway workers, they would have ensured wartime communications.

Political and ideological education should be given to all communications workers so that they ensure wartime communications service with fervent patriotism and staunch fighting spirit.

The Minister, Vice-Ministers and other officials of the Ministry of Communications should enhance their sense of responsibility and role.

They are leadership personnel responsible to the state and people for communications service of the country. The prompt and correct implementation of the communications policy of the Party and the Government depends entirely on their efforts. So, if they are to improve communications, they must decisively increase their sense of responsibility and role.

So far, they have not striven to carry out the communications policy of the Party and the Government; they have not worked in a manner of masters.

When the US imperialists were rearming the Japanese militarists and instigating the puppet Syngman Rhee's clique to frequent military provocations against the north around the 38th Parallel, we foresaw that the enemy would unleash an aggressive war sooner or later against the northern half of Korea and urged the officials of the Communications Ministry more than once to develop communications with foresight. But they did not prepare themselves well to meet the nation's requirement in case of emergency. So, when the Fatherland Liberation War broke out, they, unlike in other branches, failed to gear

up communications on a war footing at once as required by the Party and go on working to suit the wartime conditions. They went on whiling away the time. The Minister of Communications committed a serious crime by not contributing to attainment of victory in the war.

The Minister, Vice-Ministers and other leading officials of the Ministry of Communications have not worked like masters from the standpoint of the state. The Minister should be held responsible before the state and the people for his failure to ensure proper communications during war.

He is not enthusiastic about his work, nor does he feel very repentant about the inefficient communications service. If they find knotty problems in their work, leadership officials of other ministries bring them up in time for solution. But he has never asked the Cabinet for guidance and assistance, although his ministry is not following the right path. He did not even attach much importance to this Cabinet meeting though he was told that it would take up the matters relating to his ministry.

The leadership officials of this ministry should seriously criticize themselves for their own shortcomings in the past and work responsibly in future.

They should thoroughly establish a revolutionary habit of carrying out state decisions and directives without reservation.

Besides, they should plan their work in detail, take in hand all the ministerial affairs, give them a coordinated guidance and do their job effectively. If the Minister and Vice-Ministers each works in his own way, they will not be able to carry out the task allocated to the ministry. The Minister should give detailed assignments to his Vice-Ministers and other subordinates and properly guide and help them to carry them out.

I firmly believe that the officials of the Ministry of Communications will strive to improve wartime communications service and contribute greatly to an ultimate victory in the Fatherland Liberation War.

TEMPORARY STRATEGIC RETREAT AND THE TASKS OF PARTY ORGANIZATIONS

Speech at a Consultative Meeting of Provincial

Party Committee Chairmen

September 27, 1950

Today I would like to speak to you comrades about some immediate tasks of the Party organizations in regard to temporary strategic retreat.

The military and political situation in our country today has taken a sudden turn, and our people find themselves in a crisis.

The US imperialist aggressors, hard hit by the counterattack of the People's Army, are escalating their aggressive war by pouring in huge armed forces and war materiel in an attempt to recover from their heavy defeat and, at the same time, to realize their aggressive aim of occupying the whole of Korea at any cost. They have thrown all their ground, naval and air forces in the Pacific area into the Korean front and brought in part of their Mediterranean Fleet and even troops of Britain, France and other satellite countries. On the last 13th the US imperialists launched a large-scale landing operation at Inchon with hundreds of warships, some 1,000 planes and a force of over 50,000 troops. At present, they are making a frantic attack in the Seoul area. The enemy is attempting to take the area including Inchon, Seoul and Wonju in order to cut off our front from the rear and encircle and destroy the main force of the People's Army at the front and then occupy the whole of Korea as quickly as possible.

The men and officers of the People's Army are fighting heroically to repel the massive invading enemy forces. Displaying a noble spirit of patriotism and mass heroism, in defence of the Inchon-Seoul area, they have been holding up enemy advance for several days despite his numerical and technical superiority, in particular, those manning the coastal artillery battery on Wolmi Island gave a do-or-die battle to the enemy who outnumbered them scores or even hundreds of times over and dealt him a heavy blow, even fighting him hand-to-hand.

The people are also fighting heroically in support of the People's Army. The Seoul citizens, men and women, young and old, are all out to carry ammunition and cook meals for our soldiers even under the rain of bullets.

The situation at the front, however, has turned unfavourable to us on account of the massive enemy invasion of the Inchon-Seoul area and his switchover to a large-scale counterattack on the Raktong River line. This has caused a marked disparity in the balance of forces between the two sides. We are fighting against heavy odds without adequately organized reserves and necessary weapons and equipment.

In this military and political situation, the Party Central Committee has put forward a policy of organizing a temporary strategic retreat in order to tide over the difficulty flexibly.

Our Party's strategic policy at the present stage is to delay the enemy's advance as much as possible in order to gain time and thus save the main force of the People's Army, and organize fresh reserves with which to form powerful counteroffensive forces, while organizing a planned retreat.

According to the Party's strategic policy, the People's Army units which are to retreat after fighting in the Seoul area will build strong defences along the 38th Parallel and contain the enemy attacks so as to ensure the evacuation of the main force, a part of which will remain in the occupied area, attacking and harassing the enemy ceaselessly from the rear. And at the same time, on the home front reserve forces will be formed and regrouping and reinforcement will be effected as quickly as possible by turning all conditions and possibilities to good account.

We are not retreating just for the sake of retreat but with a strategic aim of strengthening our forces and dealing still heavier blows at the enemy.

The world's attention is now focussed on the Korean front. Many military experts and people of the world are watching the action of our People's Army, concerned about the possibility of its main force breaking through the "encirclement" by the Americans.

Gloating over the "encirclement" of the main force of the People's Army, the US imperialist aggressors are bragging that they will win. But the enemy is doomed to failure and his delight will change into grief.

The "encirclement" noisily advertised by the enemy is only in name. It covers such a wide area that the enemy is not in a position to follow it up. In this area are the men and officers of the main force of the People's Army. They are boundlessly loyal to the Party and the country and firmly determined to wipe out the enemy. In particular, the commanding officers include many of the veterans who were tempered in the anti-Japanese armed struggle. They had broken through many an encirclement of the enemy in those years of arduous and trying battles against the Japanese. When they were surrounded by large enemy forces, commanding officers of the anti-Japanese guerrillas used to break through boldly even with small forces and deal the enemy crushing blows. Likewise, the commanding officers of the People's Army will lead their units skilfully out of enemy "encirclement", ensure the organized retreat and defeat and destroy the enemy more decisively. Breaches have already been made in some parts of the front, and the organized retreat of the People's Army units is under way.

Party organizations at all levels should strive in every way to carry out the Party's policy on strategic retreat.

The temporary strategic retreat will be a harsh trial for our Party and people. We shall have to fight fierce battles to frustrate the enemy attack while, at the same time, ensuring the organized retreat of the main force and also evacuating production facilities and other

materials to safe places under the enemy's ceaseless indiscriminate bombing. So the People's Army and the rest of the people will have to overcome a great deal of hardships and obstacles. But we must brave all these trials and carry out the Party's policy on strategic retreat, come what may.

In this connection, the Party organizations should first strengthen information and political education among the people.

This is the primary duty of the Party organizations. This task is all the more urgent under the present situation where we have to overcome severe trials of strategic retreat. Only when education for the people is intensified, will they be able to fight on unwaveringly in any adversity.

What is important in political education is to give the people a firm faith in victory.

When the People's Army was advancing south like a surging wave, quite a few people believed that the war would end very soon. If they see their army retreat, they might lose confidence in victory and think that it is all over with us.

Party organizations should get to know clearly the people's political and ideological mood and educate them positively and suitably lest they should be frightened and confused. It is of particular importance to explain to them clearly our Party's policy on strategic retreat. A war presupposes both attack and retreat. This can be likened to a football match. In this game, if one side gets off balance being hard pressed by the opposing team, it falls back to recoup and then presses forward by seizing upon a favourable chance. Party organizations should imbue the people with the validity and significance of the Party's policy on strategic retreat so that they will fight on courageously, riding out the difficulties in retreat, with a firm faith in victory.

You must always remember that in this national crisis the US imperialists and hostile elements lurking in our ranks may spread all sorts of false rumours in a crafty way. Party organizations at all levels should sharpen their vigilance still further and expose and crush the enemy's sly manoeuvres in time to prevent him from deceiving the people. In this way the whole people will be led to tide over the grim

trials of strategic retreat without the slightest confusion.

In addition, Party organizations should educate the people properly to help the retreating People's Army with all their love and care. All the people should be encouraged to help the retreating soldiers like their own children and brothers, carrying loads for them, offering them lodgings and meals and taking care of the wounded.

Next, the Party organizations must get fully ready to fight the invading enemy.

Our cardinal task today is to defend every inch of the country even at the cost of our blood. We must not fall back without resistance to the invaders; we must defend our home towns and villages to the last. This is the noble duty of every Party organization and its workers.

Party bodies and their workers, the chairmen of provincial Party committees in particular, must not leave the area under their jurisdiction even if the enemy occupies it. They should go underground, guide guerrilla actions and mobilize the people in the struggle against the enemy. When the People's Army forces advance again, they should join them in liberating the occupied areas and normalize all work promptly.

To this end, all Party organizations should form combatant forces, prepare weapons and arrange many other material conditions. Especially in the coastal provinces they should dig trenches and build up defences of various types near the shores where enemy landing is possible. If he attempts a landing, they should throw him into the sea, even by rolling stones upon him. When direct confrontation becomes unfavourable and the enemy forces his way through, they should switch over to guerrilla warfare.

Perhaps, you think a guerrilla action is something mysterious. But it is not. There is no mystery about it. Anybody can do it. You may be short of weapons for guerrilla actions and may find it difficult to command battles. But weapons you can capture from the enemy, and leadership you will acquire gradually in the course of action.

Our country is mountainous, and this is very favourable to guerrilla warfare. One can see mountains in every province and in every county.

In particular, Mt. Kuwol in Hwanghae Province, the Masik and Rangnim Ranges and their foothills will provide excellent conditions for guerrilla warfare. They will serve as bases for active guerrilla war. The point is how the Party organizations at all levels organize Party members and the rest of the people.

All Party organizations should rouse their members and other people to bold guerrilla action. They should raid and destroy enemy headquarters, cut off his supply lines, play havoc with his means of communications and burn down his munition depots and military installations. They should thus throw the enemy into confusion and panic at all times by ceaseless harassing actions from behind.

Party organizations at all levels should also organize underground activities meticulously. Competent workers and Party members should be dispatched to enemy-held areas on a mission to educate the people, collect secret information about the enemy and disrupt him from within. This is the way to rouse the people to a dynamic struggle, foil the enemy attempt at every step and deal him still heavier blows.

To continue. An orderly withdrawal of provincial Party and state bodies should be organized, and the evacuation of production facilities and all materials arranged properly.

A well-organized evacuation will prevent the loss of state property, ensure the preparation for a second counteroffensive, wartime production and economic rehabilitation in the future. Evacuation is a difficult and complicated task involving a colossal amount of work and requiring secrecy and swiftness. So all the Party organizations should arrange it in all details. It should be hastened and finished before the enemy arrives.

First of all, major equipment of factories and other enterprises in provinces should be moved to safe places.

There are important industrial establishments with plenty of valuable equipment in each province. In South Hamgyong Province, for instance, are the five important factories of the Hungnam district and many other major industrial enterprises. If we leave such equipment behind, the invaders will surely use them or carry them

away. We can never leave them at the mercy of the enemy.

All Party organizations should ensure that important industrial equipment is evacuated to safety as much as possible or water-proofed and buried in case evacuation is impossible. The nation's priceless equipment should thus be saved from falling into the hands of the enemy or getting damaged.

Food grain and other strategic materials should also be evacuated properly. In particular, the state provisions in granaries and rice mills should be quickly removed to safe places lest a single grain should fall into the hands of the enemy.

Party organizations should pay close attention to the arrangement for the retreat and evacuation of the people.

The US imperialist aggressors will perpetrate all sorts of atrocities—arresting, imprisoning and butchering innocent people in sight at all places under their dirty jackboots. Many people, therefore, may be killed if such arrangement is neglected. All the Party units should get down to the organization of the people's retreat and evacuation and carry it out without the slightest deviation.

Next, strenuous efforts should be made to ensure wartime production.

We should not suspend or neglect wartime production because of the retreat. Without continuous production, we can neither prepare for the counteroffensive nor stabilize the livelihood of the people. So we must ensure the retreat and at the same time intensify the struggle for increased production.

Party organizations at all levels should make sure that industrial equipment and facilities are reinstalled in safe places to resume production. In this way, weapons, ammunition, hand grenades, and daily necessities for the people will be produced everywhere. In those years of the anti-Japanese armed struggle we built up a small arsenal, where we manufactured the “Yongil” bombs and repaired weapons. Our production facilities now are incomparably better than those we had at that time, and our working conditions, too, are much better. Therefore, if only our officials organize work efficiently, they can

produce plenty of weapons and ammunition and ensure continued production even under wartime conditions.

In the countryside harvesting and threshing should be rushed so that not a grain is lost to the enemy.

Success in the difficult work of the Party organizations at all levels depends entirely on the work attitude and standpoint of the provincial Party committee chairmen. When confronted with a difficult task, subordinates first look up to their commanders. At this time when the country is in a crisis and when arduous and complex fighting tasks are encountered, your subordinates will look up to you comrades and watch your action.

Upon your return, you comrades should plan and organize the retreat with composure, deal with urgent and complex problems correctly and swiftly, and push forward your work more audaciously. This will inspire your subordinates with confidence in victory and encourage them to work properly and ensure success in the difficult strategic retreat.

There is every indication that our retreat will not last too long, say, a month or month and a half at the most.

Although we are making a temporary strategic retreat now, we will administer even heavier blows at the enemy in the near future. Victory belongs to our people who are fighting in defence of the freedom and independence of the country from the enemy's encroachment. We will emerge victorious without fail because we have the wise leadership of the Workers' Party of Korea, the heroic People's Army and people united closely around the Party, and a solid home front.

I firmly believe that you comrades will carry out the difficult task of strategic retreat successfully, displaying unswerving loyalty to the Party, the country and the people and a high degree of self-sacrificing spirit, with a firm faith in victory.

LET US DEFEND EVERY INCH OF OUR MOTHERLAND AT THE COST OF OUR BLOOD

Radio Address to All the Korean People

October 11, 1950

Dear fellow countrymen,
Brothers and sisters,
Officers and men of the heroic People's Army,
Valiant men and women guerrillas,

The American gangsters are still invading Korea in an attempt to colonize our country and enslave our 30 million people.

The US imperialists have sustained hard blows and heavy losses of strength but are nevertheless launching a large-scale offensive by mobilizing all their Pacific forces.

Our People's Army has thus been compelled to undertake a strategic retreat while still fighting the enemy. Today our frontline situation is serious. Our country is in great danger.

Alarmed by the crushing defeat of the Syngman Rhee clique, their stooges, and at the sudden collapse of their reactionary ruling system, the US imperialists started an overt invasion against the Korean people following a premeditated scheme.

US imperialist armed intervention in Korea aims to make our country their colony, enslave the Korean people and to turn Korea into a strategic base for suppressing the national-liberation struggle of the Asian peoples and invading China and the Soviet Union.

The US imperialists are usurping the name of UN with a view to

covering their aggression on Korea. They clamour that their troops in Korea are acting on the “resolution” of the UN Security Council.

Actually, their armed intervention in Korea had started before this “resolution” was adopted and the “resolution” itself is null and void; it was adopted without the participation of representatives of the Soviet Union and the People’s Republic of China, the permanent member nations of the UN Security Council, to say nothing of the Korean people’s representation.

The US imperialist robbers, under the UN flag, are soaking our land with blood, committing all sorts of atrocities. The US air and naval craft are burning down our peaceful towns and villages and destroying industrial enterprises at random, all of which have been constructed by the sweat and blood of the Korean people. These aggressors are indiscriminately massacring the inhabitants, men and women, young and old, who are peacefully living in our land. In flagrant violation of the UN Charter and in disregard of the international law and the standards of human morality, they are trying most brutally to break the indomitable fighting spirit of the Korean people, who are headed towards freedom and independence.

No frenzied effort on their part, however, will be able to conquer the Korean people, who are fighting the aggressors as one, in a sacred war to liberate the country and win its freedom and independence, nor will it be able to frustrate the patriotic struggle of our valiant People’s Army, guerrillas and the rest of the people in the rear.

The US imperialist aggressor forces were in the critical position of being wiped out from our land, having lost one battle after another, confronted with the angry waves of the counterattack of the heroic People’s Army. In this situation, they undertook a frantic offensive, by mobilizing all their Pacific ground, naval and air forces, part of their Mediterranean Fleet and even their reserve warships, in an attempt to recover their lost prestige and realize their aggressive aim at all costs.

Bringing hundreds of thousands of troops to the Korean front, the US imperialist aggressors all of a sudden landed over 50,000 troops at Inchon, on September 16. Several hundred naval vessels and

approximately 1,000 aircraft took part in this landing operation. The enemy attempted to capture Seoul with one stroke. But they could not succeed easily in this attempt. The People's Army, with the support of Seoul citizens and the People's Volunteers Corps, held the overwhelming enemy attack in check for 14 days, showing an example of unparalleled patriotic devotion and heroism.

The enemy also became dominant in other sectors of the front.

Under the circumstances, our People's Army had to make a strategic retreat. The situation at the front is grave. The enemy is crossing the 38th Parallel into the north.

Invading the northern area of Korea across the 38th Parallel, seriously threatening peace and security in Asia, the US imperialists have also turned down another proposal of the Soviet Government aimed at a peaceful settlement of the Korean question. The proposal made by the Soviet delegate at the UN General Assembly session was to terminate military action, effect withdrawal of foreign troops from Korean territory and peacefully reunify the country by holding free north-south general elections. It fully concurs with the interests of the Korean people. The US imperialists, however, rejected even this proposal with the help of their pliant voting machine and continue their war of plunder.

While extending their invasion in Korea, the US imperialists are becoming more and more open in their brutal, marauding acts against the people. They are blatantly revealing their true nature as being the most vicious enemy of both the Korean and the rest of the Asian peoples.

Most sacred and righteous is the war our people are waging against the US imperialist aggressors to defend the freedom and independence of the country, to bring happiness to our future generations, and to prevent being enslaved again by the colonialists.

As history shows, the course of the people's struggle for the great cause of the freedom and independence of their country is not smooth. A struggle can forge ahead through successful efforts and incidental setbacks. This can be illustrated by the experience of struggle of the Soviet people. After the Great October Socialist Revolution, the imperialist armed interventionists including the United States, Britain

and France invaded the young Soviet Republics in an attempt to stamp them out. At that time the armed interventionists pressed the centre of Russia hard in a narrow encirclement and believed that they would win before long. But the Soviet people repelled them and emerged victorious in their arduous struggle against the allied forces of imperialism, and safeguarded the freedom and independence of their motherland.

The same is true of the struggle of the Chinese people. Imperialists and Chinese reactionaries thought that they could suppress the resistance movement of the Chinese people for the freedom and independence of their country. But the Chinese people defeated the domestic reactionaries and the imperialist forces of aggression and led the revolution to triumph in the end.

Doomed imperialism makes every vicious attempt to turn back the wheel of history. This attempt was made in vain in Russia. The same was repeated in China, but it was also futile. At present imperialism is trying to enslave the Korean people. But this time also, the aggressive design of piratical American imperialism will inevitably fail.

The Korean people are displaying incomparable bravery and heroism in the fierce struggle against the US imperialist aggressors. Their unparalleled courage and indomitable fighting spirit, manifested in their sacred all-out war of national liberation for the freedom and independence of their country, are not at all derived from any transient and incidental factors. These traits stem from an unswerving determination of our people never to yield their country to imperialists again, never to be enslaved again—from their bitter experience of the long years of slavery under Japanese imperialism. These qualities come from a keen awareness that the national-liberation struggle against imperialist aggression alone will bring freedom and independence to their country and happiness and prosperity to themselves and to posterity.

The Korean people, who are fully ready to devote everything to the liberation of their country and fellow countrymen and convinced of the righteousness of their cause, will courageously overcome whatever difficulties and trials they meet with, to win a brilliant victory without

fail. Today, we have all factors, which will lead us to victory, in our favour. Victory will surely be ours.

The three months of war have proved clearly what tremendous strength our people have. Our people rose up in the struggle against the US imperialist aggressors and their stooges, the traitorous Syngman Rhee clique, to defend the freedom and independence of the country and the results of democratic reforms, to win for themselves happiness and a bright future, and to avoid repeating the bitter experience of being homeless people. They have clearly demonstrated their united strength and unbreakable fighting spirit to the whole world.

Dear fellow countrymen,

Valiant officers and men of the People's Army and guerrillas,

We must fight more resolutely with an indomitable fighting spirit, in order to ride out the current national crisis, repel the aggressors and save the country and the people.

The officers and men of the People's Army should courageously struggle to the last drop of their blood to defend every inch of our motherland and safeguard our towns and villages. We should thus take a thousand-fold revenge upon the US imperialist aggressors and the traitorous Syngman Rhee clique, for the massacre of our parents and brothers, and defend the results of our democratic reforms.

Transport and communications workers should reorganize their work to suit the prevailing situation, quickly repair the roads and lines damaged by enemy bombing, protect the means of transport and communications and accurately ensure the supply of all materials meant for the front. The workers should work against time to increase the production of weapons and ammunition, so as to meet the requirements of the front. The peasants should increase their crop yields to supply enough provisions to the front and rear and take good care of the harvested crops and deliver the tax in kind in time.

The peasants in south Korea should continue fighting bravely against the US imperialist aggressors to defend the gains of the agrarian reform and liberate the country.

All the people should harass the enemy from behind. In case they

have to retreat, they should evacuate all materials and means of railway transport, lest a single locomotive or freight car or even a single grain of rice should be captured by the enemy.

In the enemy-occupied areas widespread guerrilla actions should be launched, destroying enemy headquarters by surprise attacks, cutting off roads, bridges and other supply lines everywhere, demolishing their means of communications such as telegraph and telephone facilities and setting fire to their depots and war materials.

Everyone should be highly vigilant, promptly expose and crush spies, subverters and saboteurs on their penetration into our home front and launch an uncompromising struggle against those who spread false rumours, cowards and shirkers.

All the Korean people should devote all their efforts to the victory of the Fatherland Liberation War and assist the People's Army in every possible way.

The Korean people are not alone in their struggle for the freedom and independence of the country. All the officers and men of the People's Army, guerrillas behind enemy lines and all the Korean people should understand that their struggle in the great cause is actively supported and aided by the peoples of the Soviet Union, Chinese People's Republic and other People's Democracies and has the unanimous sympathy of all progressive mankind.

The most important task confronting us today is to defend every inch of the homeland at the cost of our blood and prepare ourselves fully to deal a fresh, decisive blow to the enemy. We should wipe out the foreign interventionists and the Syngman Rhee clique from our land once and for all.

People of entire Korea, hold high the banner of the Democratic People's Republic of Korea, the banner of victory!

Glory to the heroic Korean People's Army!

Glory to the guerrillas fighting courageously behind enemy lines!

Long live the heroic Korean people who are fighting against the US imperialist aggressors for the freedom, independence and honour of the country!

ON FORMING WORKERS' PARTY OF KOREA ORGANIZATIONS IN THE PEOPLE'S ARMY

**Concluding Speech Delivered at a Meeting
of the Political Committee of the Central Committee
of the Workers' Party of Korea**

October 21, 1950

Comrades,

The Political Committee of the Party Central Committee this time has discussed and decided on the problem of forming organizations of the Workers' Party of Korea in the People's Army.

No Party organizations have so far existed in the People's Army except for military academies and some units. In the army the cultural department has been responsible for cultural education of soldiers and for work with the Party members. After the war was started by US imperialism and its stooges, our Party dispatched military commissars to the People's Army in order to strengthen Party leadership and political education in accordance with the wartime conditions. Cultural department workers and military commissars played a big role in educating the army men politically, ideologically and in a cultured way.

Because there were no Party organizations in the People's Army, however, we could not exercise effective Party leadership over the army and work properly to strengthen the fighting capacity of the troops.

In the process of the war, particularly during our retreat, we keenly felt the necessity of forming Party organizations and enhancing their role in the army.

Introducing Party organizations into the People's Army is an important guarantee for establishing iron discipline in the army and increasing its combat efficiency.

Our People's Army firmly defended the democratic gains against the enemy's encroachment in the period of peaceful construction, and displayed unbounded devotion, heroism and fortitude in the war to defend the freedom, independence and honour of the country. The brave officers and men ensured success in strategic retreat led by the Party, overcoming manifold hardships without losing confidence in victory even under the difficult conditions of retreat. Our army has grown up into a powerful force which has been further tempered and has accumulated rich combat experience through attack and retreat.

During the war the People's Army achieved great victory and other successes but revealed quite a few shortcomings, too. Some of the soldiers wavered, losing confidence in victory in the face of temporary difficulties. There were instances of indiscipline and disorder in the army and some unit commanders and officers hardly made any efforts to carry out orders and instructions to the letter. Such intolerable practices were strongly manifested among many army men in charge of supply service.

To strengthen army discipline and raise its fighting capacity is our important task at present, in order to wipe out the US imperialist aggressors and win victory, we should further tighten army discipline and increase its combat efficiency in every way.

But now shortcomings in the army are not properly criticized and, therefore, they are not rectified quickly. This is mainly because the army has no Party organization. Orders alone cannot strengthen discipline and order or raise combat efficiency. Forming Party organizations in the People's Army and increasing their role is imperative for stronger army discipline, its greater fighting capacity and its final victory in the war.

Establishment of Party organizations in the People's Army is also vital for heightening our Party's leading role in the army and conducting vigorous political education of soldiers.

It is our Party's consistent policy to intensify its leading role and political education in the army. Ever since the foundation of the People's Army, our Party has deeply concerned about this.

The present military and political situation in our country and the actual state of the People's Army urgently demand that we strengthen the Party's leading role in the army and conduct political education among the soldiers more vigorously.

Owing to the large-scale armed intervention by the US imperialist aggressors, the Fatherland Liberation War has taken on a protracted character and situation at the front is very acute.

According to our Party's strategic policy many reserve forces were mustered, with the result that the People's Army has quickly grown in number. What is most important in improving the quality of such an army strength is to intensify the Party's leading role and firmly equip the servicemen politically and ideologically.

The formation of Party organizations in the People's Army fully accords with its intrinsic nature and mission.

The People's Army is a revolutionary armed force founded by our Party; it is entrusted with a mission of guaranteeing the Party's revolutionary cause by force of arms. That is why the People's Army should be led only by the Workers' Party of Korea, and in the army there can be no other Party organization than ours.

With a view to intensifying Party leadership over the People's Army, we should introduce Party organizations into the army units and set up political organs.

We should reorganize the Cultural Training Bureau of the Ministry of National Defence into the General Political Bureau and the cultural departments at all echelons into political departments, and set up a post of assistant commander in charge of political affairs in every unit and element. We should organize a Party cell in the company, a battalion Party committee in the battalion and a regimental Party committee in

the regiment and ensure that Party organizations are guided by the political departments concerned. It is advisable to set up *ad hoc* committees at the division, the corps and the General Political Bureau levels so that they discuss and decide on Party organizational problems.

The relevant department of the Party Central Committee should quickly work out detailed regulations necessary for setting up Party organizations and political organs in the People's Army and deal with the appointment of cadres properly. They should register Party members and distribute Party force in the army correctly.

We should form Party organizations and political organs in the People's Army and conduct the elections to Party leadership bodies at all levels on a high political and ideological level. In this way we should make this undertaking serve as an important political work strengthening military-political training and establishing military discipline in the army.

The formation of Party units and political organs in the army will greatly contribute to further strengthening its fighting capacity and ensuring victory in the war, by equipping the soldiers politically and ideologically and enhancing the vanguard role of Party members. This alone, however, is not enough to solve every question.

Once Party organizations and political organs are established in the People's Army, their functions and role should be increased in every way.

These bodies should ensure Party, political leadership over the army so that it can acquit itself of its assignments given by our Party, country and people.

They should, above all, intensify political education to firmly prepare the army men ideologically.

An army ideologically unprepared cannot be strong. The source of invincible strength of a revolutionary army lies in its soldiers' political and moral superiority. This is proved by our experience in the anti-Japanese armed struggle and by those in revolutionary wars in other countries, too.

The army should strengthen education in Party policy to arm the soldiers firmly with our Party's ideology. The practices in the army of liberalism, indiscipline and vacillation from lack of confidence in victory are mainly due to the fact that the soldiers are not armed with the Party's ideology. The Party organizations and political organs in the army should bring our Party's line, policies, decisions and directives home to the army men in time and accurately, so that they think and act according to what the Party requires and devote all their energies to carry out the Party's policies.

We should instil into the minds of soldiers patriotic ideas with which to faithfully serve the Party, the country and the people, and educate them to have faith in victory. Only when they have lofty patriotic ideas and unshaken confidence in victory, can they overcome all difficulties and hardships and show gallantry in fighting the enemy.

Hatred for the enemy should be instilled in the mind of every soldier. The US imperialist aggressors are making desperate efforts to occupy the whole of Korea and make our people colonial slaves again. They are now perpetrating the thrice-cursed atrocities killing our dear parents and brothers at random in their occupied areas and soaking our soil with blood.

We should clearly inform our men of the aggressive nature of US imperialism and the barbarities it is committing in the occupied areas. In this way they will be encouraged to nurse a strong idea of revenge and mercilessly annihilate the US imperialist aggressors who have sneaked their way into our land.

An important aspect of political education for the soldiers is to teach them to implement their units' combat assignments in good faith. Party organizations and political workers should convince them of the character and mission of the People's Army, fighting tasks of their units and their importance and rouse them energetically to render great services in battle.

Discipline is the life and soul of an army and the source of its combat efficiency. Party organizations and political workers should give day-to-day education to the soldiers so that they behave as

required by military regulations and the army manuals, and should wage an uncompromising ideological struggle against even the slightest infringement of discipline. An iron military discipline should thus be established in the army.

To continue. Party organizations and political organs in the People's Army should strengthen Party life of the membership and ensure that they take the lead both in battles and military-political training.

Because of the absence of Party organization in the People's Army, many Party members have not been so far bound in Party organizational life. Therefore, it is a matter of special importance to strengthen Party organizational life in the army.

Party organizations should make all the members participate in Party meetings and should never allow double standards of discipline in the Party. There cannot be superior or inferior members in Party organizational life. A dynamic struggle should be waged against those who do not take part in Party life honestly or are reluctant to be guided and controlled by the Party organizations, because they are high-ranking officers. Party organizations should give assignments to every member without exception and review their execution regularly.

Chiefs of political departments at all levels should regularly grasp the work of Party committees and cells of the elements under their jurisdiction and help the Party organizations in playing their part satisfactorily. They should pay close attention to strengthening company Party cells in particular.

The work of Party growth should be done properly in the People's Army.

Last August, the Organizing Committee of the Party Central Committee adopted a decision on admitting into the Party the model soldiers who had displayed bravery and self-sacrificing spirit in battles. The work of increasing Party membership in the army, however, has made little headway.

At present, the officers and men of the People's Army are courageously fighting with all devotion for the Party, the country and

the people, and they regard it as the greatest happiness and honour to become a member of the Workers' Party of Korea. Many of them met their last moment at the front, expressing the wish to be called the members of this Party.

The Party organizations in the People's Army should admit in a big way to the Party the model fighters who fought valiantly for the Party, the country and the people.

I firmly believe that you comrades will promote the work of forming Party organizations and political organs in the People's Army on a high political and ideological level and thus make active contribution to strengthening the army's fighting capacity and hastening the final victory in the Fatherland Liberation War.

LET US BE FULLY PREPARED FOR A NEW COUNTEROFFENSIVE

**Speech at a Meeting of Officers and Generals
Assigned to the Supreme Headquarters
of the Korean People's Army**

October 30, 1950

Comrades,

The present military and political situation in our country is very serious.

Having instigated the Syngman Rhee puppet clique to unleash an aggressive war against the northern half of Korea, the US imperialist aggressors have started a direct armed intervention in our country by usurping the name of the United Nations. However, they have sustained one crushing defeat after another in the face of the angry waves of the advancing People's Army. When things came to this pass, they made desperate attempts to recover from their disastrous defeat and attain their aggressive ends in Korea at any cost.

In mid-September, the US imperialist aggressors mobilized a large number of armed forces and launched a landing operation at Inchon and a large-scale counterattack on the front line along the Raktong River. This was aimed to cut off our front line from the rear, encircle and wipe out at a stroke the main units of the People's Army operating on the river and to occupy the whole area of the northern half of Korea in a short time. As a result, the military situation turned to our disadvantage and the enemy gained temporary ascendancy in the

balance of forces. In those days, we were not prepared to counter their large-scale armed intervention. We were not in a position to activate more units though we had many who could fight with gun in hand; we had no guns and lacked military personnel who were capable of commanding the units. If only we had reserves of weapons and military commanders skilled in modern warfare, we could have formed more units. Then we would have been able to check the enemy's counterattack on the Raktong River line and frustrate their landing operation at Inchon.

We did not have sufficient reserves of strategic materiel either; we even failed to supply the materiel on hand promptly to the frontline units.

Under these circumstances, we organized a temporary strategic retreat. This was aimed at rescuing our main units at the front by gaining time through delaying the enemy's advance, and also at dealing a decisive blow to the US imperialist aggressors by preparing reserve units and regrouping our forces. This was a flexible and positive strategy to meet the prevailing military situation.

Upholding the Party's policy of a strategic retreat, the officers and men of our heroic People's Army successfully carried out the task of retreat in spite of difficult conditions, dealing the enemy heavy blows through stubborn defensive battles and surprise attacks.

Today I am not going to dwell further on the successes we have scored in our temporary strategic retreat; I will refer instead to our shortcomings revealed so far in the war and to our immediate tasks.

A major defect revealed during the Fatherland Liberation War is that some people were not confident of victory.

As soon as the People's Army started a temporary strategic retreat, some people lost confidence in victory and vacillated: they began to think that our Republic had been ruined and the People's Army defeated. What is worse, some people overrated the enemy's "technical superiority"; they claimed that it was difficult to fight the enemy without planes and that they were forced to retreat because of the shortage of planes. Complaining of the difficulty of fighting

without aircraft is a defeatist attitude.

It is true that weapons and equipment play an important role in a war. But they cannot decide the fate of the war. The essential factor of a victory lies in the political and moral superiority of the soldiers. In other words, it is not the weapons and combat equipment that play a decisive role in the war, but the man who handles them. If all the commanders and soldiers fight heroically with a firm faith in victory and with an indomitable will, they can even defeat any technically superior enemy.

A revolutionary army wins a battle not because it is superior to the enemy numerically or technically. A revolutionary army starts a struggle with a small number of people and trifling weapons, and yet, in the course of the struggle its ranks swell and it is tempered ideologically; and, finally, it annihilates the enemy which is hundreds of times stronger than itself and wins a final victory. In the past, the anti-Japanese guerrillas won battles against the Japanese imperialist aggressor troops who were armed to the teeth. This was not because they had better weapons than the enemy. They could win because they fought with an indomitable revolutionary spirit to defeat the Japanese imperialist marauders and liberate the country at any cost. This shows what is decisive in war is not weapons or equipment but the lofty political and moral qualities of the soldiers.

You cannot win the war if you lose confidence in victory and vacillate in the face of transient difficulties. You cannot carry out a revolution the way you would take a royal road. In the course of a revolution, you may encounter rugged mountain passes and thorny bushes or face deep rivers. When you overcome these hardships audaciously, you can win the ultimate victory of the revolution. Therefore, a revolutionary must have an unyielding fighting spirit and the conviction of victory. If he falls a hundred times he must rise up a hundred times and make his way through all difficulties and devote his all for the country and people and for revolutionary victory.

In the years of the anti-Japanese armed struggle the guerrillas encountered many indescribable hardships. Sometimes hunger and

cold threatened their lives; at other times the enemy launched “punitive operations” on all sides and resorted to every kind of vile propaganda in order to disintegrate the Anti-Japanese Guerrilla Army from within. However, the anti-Japanese guerrillas never buckled under their difficulties. For 15 long years, they waged an arduous struggle braving manifold difficulties in the firm belief that the revolution would triumph, and at long last they emerged victorious.

We are now fighting in a favourable situation incomparable with that in the days of the anti-Japanese armed struggle. So we have no difficulties that are insurmountable. It is not becoming to a revolutionary to lose faith in victory and waver in the face of momentary hardships.

Another major shortcoming is that some military commanders have not been observing revolutionary discipline and order and have failed to carry out the orders and instructions of their superiors in time and accurately.

When the situation changed suddenly owing to the large-scale armed intervention of the US imperialist aggressors, we gave an instruction to the chief of the General Commissariat Bureau to transport rice and cotton wool from Hwanghae Province as well as the piles of salt at the salt farms to storage in Kanggye or Manpho. But he took no measures to carry out this instruction. As a result a large amount of rice, cotton wool and salt went into the hands of enemy. Later, we gave another task to him and to the director of the Ordnance Production Bureau—that of transferring to safe places the cotton padded clothes, blankets and ammunition preserved in Jongju and many other places. However, they did not strive to carry out this task.

Some departments of the Ministry of National Defence retreated wilfully without prior approval from their superiors. A senior local Party official did not implement the Party’s instruction to make adequate organizational arrangement for the retreat of provincial organizations and to mobilize the people to join hands with the People’s Army units so that they could put up a stubborn resistance to the attacking enemy and form guerrilla detachments to fight the enemy

in case the province was occupied by them. He retreated before the others. Such practices were apparent also among some People's Army officers.

In any adversity a revolutionary must first think of his country and people rather than his own safety. It is definitely worthier and prouder for one to fight the enemy bravely for the sake of the country and people even if one has to give up his all, than to give up one's revolutionary honour and principles and bow down before the enemy and live a disgraceful life. How long can a man live anyway? Even if his life is to be short, he must live a worthy and proud life for the country and people. A revolutionary must go to the extent of carrying gunpowder on his back and throwing himself into the fire without hesitation, if his country and people want him to. A man who fights bravely at the battlefield without fear of death, does not die easily.

Yet another major shortcoming is that the commanders and political workers failed to conduct satisfactory political work among the soldiers and the people.

When the People's Army started its retreat, the enemy resorted to all sorts of malicious propaganda to cause ideological vacillation among our people and the People's Army personnel. Therefore, the commanders and political workers should have conducted their political work better than ever before to expose and crush the enemy's wicked propaganda and to encourage all the people and soldiers to fight valiantly with confidence in victory. But they failed to do so. Consequently, some soldiers headed north and did not fight the enemy resolutely, quite unaware of the aim of the strategic retreat: still others dropped off from their ranks and retreated separately.

It is one of the lofty political and moral traits of the People's Army to strictly observe military and public discipline. The People's Army soldiers enjoyed great support and love from the people when they had advanced, liberating the southern half, because they strictly adhered to this discipline. However, during the retreat some soldiers violated public discipline, failed to keep themselves neat and tidy and were

uncivil. Such a detraction from the lofty political and moral traits of the People's Army is, in the final analysis, due to the fact that the commanders and political workers did not conduct political work properly among the soldiers.

In the past period of the war more than just a few shortcomings were revealed. But we can and must remedy them.

Comrades, we have retreated far up to the northern border area. Now we cannot retreat any farther, even if we want to. The Amnok River flows behind us. In the bygone days many sons and daughters of Korea crossed this river shedding bitter tears, because they had lost their country to the Japanese imperialists. We cannot cross this river again leaving the land where our forefathers lie in their graves and which is permeated with the red blood of our revolutionary forerunners. We must fight the enemy in our homeland come what may.

Are we to become slaves of US imperialism or are we going to defend our freedom and independence by waging a life-and-death struggle to defeat the US imperialist invaders who have crept into our country? We have the two alternatives now. In the past our people suffered all kinds of maltreatment and contempt because our country was occupied by the Japanese imperialists. How can we allow our country to be seized by foreign aggressors again and lead the life of a homeless people? We can never do so. We must fight the enemy making any sacrifice that is necessary, and safeguard our country's freedom and independence.

Korea is not dead but alive. Our people and People's Army are going strong and fighting the enemy bravely.

We must launch a decisive counteroffensive. The whole country is filled with the people's wrath at the brutal atrocities of the US imperialist wolves. The people, groaning under the occupation of the US imperialist aggressors, are waiting impatiently for our helping hand; and the country is calling us to a new decisive battle, to a battle of vengeance. It is high time that we humbled the pride of the US imperialists and demonstrated the mettle of the Koreans. The US

imperialist aggressors have reduced our beautiful land to ruins and slaughtered our beloved parents and brothers in cold blood. We must avenge them a hundred and thousand times so as to satisfy our people's deep-rooted grudge. All the officers and men of the People's Army must rise up as one in the sacred struggle to annihilate the US imperialist aggressors.

The war maniac MacArthur is now frenziedly driving the mercenary troops into the battlefield, bragging that he will occupy the whole territory of the northern half of Korea by "blitz warfare" and that he will be back in his country in time to raise a toast at "Christmas". This is but a delusion, however. The Korean people will surely win victory in the just Fatherland Liberation War and the US imperialist aggressors will sustain an ignominious defeat and be driven out of our land once and for all.

We have every factor for victory.

We have the Workers' Party of Korea, the leading and guiding force of the Korean people, as well as the Government of the Republic. The Workers' Party of Korea leads all the Korean people wisely along the road to victory. The intelligent guidance of our Party is the decisive guarantee for all victories.

We have an awakened and tempered people. Our people of today are the full-fledged masters of an independent and sovereign state. They have personally experienced a new, happy life, seizing power in their own hands. Our people have risen as one in the sacred Fatherland Liberation War against the US imperialist aggressors and their stooges, firmly determined not to repeat the bitter life of colonial slaves. No aggressor will be able to check the just cause of our people nor subdue them in their struggle.

We have the People's Army that is displaying mass heroism and unparalleled valour in the righteous Fatherland Liberation War to defend the country's freedom and independence. The People's Army is an army that has directly inherited the brilliant traditions of the anti-Japanese armed struggle. It is a genuine people's army with a lofty mission to safeguard the country and the people from foreign

aggressors. The People's Army enjoys a deep love and trust from the people and the superiors and subordinates are united firmly with one idea. That is why, even though it is only three years old, it has accomplished immortal achievements and become invincible in the war against the US imperialist aggressors and their lackeys. Its achievements will shine for ever in the history of our country. The People's Army led by our Party is invincible.

We are receiving unstinted assistance, support and encouragement from the peoples of the mighty democratic camp and the peace-loving people the world over. In particular, the Chinese people have sent their best sons and daughters to the Korean front to help us at the risk of their own lives.

We are sure to win victory. We have the Workers' Party of Korea, the guiding force of our people, and the Government of the Republic; we also have the awakened and tempered people, the invincible People's Army and international support and encouragement.

On the other hand, the US imperialist aggressors cannot escape an ignominious defeat. They are soldiers who have been hired out to the front, deceived by the false propaganda that Korea abounds in gold. The Syngman Rhee puppet troops are a mob who have been whipped together. Therefore, their fighting capacity is insignificant. What is worse, they are floundering at the front. The US imperialist aggressor army and the Syngman Rhee puppet army are not well coordinated and there is a gap between the western and eastern sectors of their front. Besides, they are unable to conduct proper military manoeuvres in the steep mountain areas in the height of winter. To make matters worse, they are far away from their rear now and their supplies are being held up because of the active struggle being waged by our units and inhabitants behind enemy lines.

But we must not think that everything will go smoothly just because we have everything in our favour for victory and the enemy has been thrown into a dilemma. The desperate enemy is bound to make a last-ditch effort. The deeper the enemy is driven into a quandary, the harder must we hit him.

The People's Army units should do everything possible to make full preparations for a new counteroffensive in the shortest possible time and deal a fatal blow to the US imperialist aggressors. This is their most important task, for the present.

The officers and men of the People's Army must completely eliminate undisciplined practices and shake off their defeatist and pessimistic attitudes.

In war it is possible that sometimes we win and sometimes we suffer a momentary failure; it is also possible that sometimes we may advance and sometimes retreat. We may have to wage a more arduous struggle in the future. The officers and men of the People's Army should not be contented with victory or discouraged with temporary setbacks; they should have a firm ideological resolve to fight the enemy valiantly in any adversity devoting their all.

We must strive to ensure unity and cohesion in our revolutionary ranks. We must strongly fight those cowards and delinquents who outwardly profess to be patriots, but who in fact have ulterior motives.

Discipline is the quintessence of an army; it is the source of fighting efficiency. A revolutionary discipline and a strict system of command should be established at all units from the Supreme Headquarters down to the lowest echelon. When the situation is more difficult and complex, all soldiers must observe military discipline voluntarily and wage a strong ideological struggle against undisciplined practices. This will turn the People's Army into iron ranks—an invincible revolutionary armed force that can fight through fire and water to carry out the Party's orders and instructions unconditionally, and brave any hardships and ordeals.

The People's Army units must not waste precious time. They should make the most of their time to reorganize their ranks and develop their present front line into an advance base for a counteroffensive. They must set up checkpoints at the roadside. They must send patrols and personnel administration officers there, who will incorporate the soldiers who are retreating separately, into the units and combined units which are stationed in the given areas, regardless of where they belonged formerly.

Meanwhile, we must form new units with the retreating young and middle-aged people and conduct military and political training. The training must be given to suit our specific situation based on the experience gained in the course of the war. In this way the new units will acquire a great fighting capacity as soon as possible.

The frontline units must go on with the battles to encircle and wipe out the enemy and conduct well-coordinated operations with the Chinese People's Volunteers. At the same time they must replenish their ranks.

The combined units of the People's Army behind enemy lines must be in close touch with the people's guerrillas so as to cut off the routes of the enemy's convoys everywhere, assault their headquarters, rescue the patriots detained by them and expand the liberated areas.

Widespread actions should be developed to shoot down enemy planes. If you are to fight enemy planes, you must not fear them. Otherwise, you will become defeatists and will not be able to fight the enemy. You must fight enemy planes actively and prevent them from flying into our airspace freely.

We are short of planes now. But it will not be long before we have many of them. Yet, there is the problem of pilots. Their training requires time. But we cannot sit with our arms folded until they are trained. Although we have a small number of aircraft, we must give thought to how we can prevent enemy planes from intruding into our airspace freely and shoot down as many of them as possible. If we think very hard, we can find ways and means.

We must use every possible means to fight enemy planes. We must put in motion not only anti-aircraft guns and anti-aircraft machine guns, but also all kinds of small arms such as light and heavy machine guns. Then, we shall be able to shoot enemy planes flying in from any direction at any altitude, and we will be able to bring down many of them and prevent them from flying wild.

Strengthening Party political work in the People's Army decisively is essential for increasing its combat capability and winning our final victory in the Fatherland Liberation War.

Recently the Political Committee of the Party Central Committee took steps to form Party organizations in all the units and reorganize the cultural department into the political department. This was aimed at tightening Party leadership over the People's Army and improving political work in the army. These steps should be completed in the army units as early as possible and the role of the new organizations and departments should be intensified.

Party organizations and political bodies at all levels in the People's Army must intensify ideological education, which will help enhance the morale of the soldiers and inspire them with confidence in victory. They must apply various forms and methods, including motivation and lecture, to arm the soldiers firmly with our Party's policy and Marxism-Leninism. They must widely introduce and propagate the exploits of heroic soldiers among them. In this way we will induce all of them to have a strong conviction of victory and display matchless valour and mass heroism in the struggle against the US imperialist aggressors.

All the soldiers must be educated to observe public discipline voluntarily. The People's Army has come from among the people and fights in their interests. So they should never violate this discipline. Party organizations and political bodies must educate all the soldiers to cherish the property of the people and have close ties of kinship with them.

We must pay careful attention to improving the work of the Democratic Youth League organizations in the People's Army. Party organizations and political bodies must see to it that the DYL organizations do their work well to conform with the characteristic features of the young soldiers. This will train them into revolutionary fighters, firmly armed politically and ideologically, into dependable reserves of our Party.

Party organizations and political bodies in the People's Army must do good political work among the people. They must acquaint the people with the aggressive nature of the US imperialists and explain that the aggressors can be defeated if everyone unites firmly with the People's Army and fights. They should thus get all the population to

take an active part in the struggle against US imperialism with a strong conviction of victory.

We must thoroughly expose the US imperialists' aggressive machinations, brutalities and atrocities to the world's people and thereby isolate them still further.

We must ensure proper supplies for the army. If we fail to do this, we cannot raise the combat efficiency of the units. The commanders and political workers must look after the lives of the combatants with parental care; they must always pay careful attention to feeding and clothing the combatants well and giving them ample rest. For the present they must see to it that all the soldiers get winter clothes. The sick and wounded should be evacuated to the rear where they will be safe and will be given proper treatment so that they can recover as soon as possible and fight in the combat ranks again.

One of the important tasks confronting the commanders and political workers is that of strengthening their ties with local Party and power organizations and giving them active help in their work. They should thus see to it that social disorder is put right as speedily as possible. They must also get in touch with the interior service organs, judicial organs and public prosecutor's offices to intensify the struggle against spies and subverters and saboteurs and expose and crush the enemy's machinations at every step.

In conclusion I should like to reemphasize that every second counts now. We must thwart the enemy's attack and make good use of our time in getting fully ready for a counteroffensive. This is the only way to bring about a radical change at the front as early as possible.

You must make a correct analysis of the retreat in the context of today's meeting, draw experience and lessons and take steps to make full preparations for a counterattack.

The Party places great trust in you and expects a great deal from you.

I firmly believe that you will not fail to live up to this trust and expectations.

ON INTENSIFYING OPERATIONS BEHIND ENEMY LINES

**Instructions Given to the Commander of the Second
Corps of the Korean People's Army**

November 17, 1950

We have already heard that you are fighting well behind enemy lines. In spite of the difficult circumstances of retreat, you have carried out vigorous activities there and liberated Yangyang, Kosong, Thongchon and many other areas, and rescued numerous patriots and inhabitants. We are satisfied and highly appreciate your successful activities behind enemy lines. Your struggle has given the people in the enemy-held areas courage and confidence in victory and inspired them greatly in their struggle against the US imperialists and the Syngman Rhee puppet clique. Everywhere they are now waging valiant guerrilla and underground activities in the face of savage repression by the enemy.

I would like to extend my thanks to all the officers, noncommissioned officers and soldiers of your unit, who have waged an unflinching struggle and won a brilliant victory under difficult circumstances behind enemy lines.

The situation at the front is turning in our favour now. Our first operation in the third stage of the war dealt the enemy a heavy blow and frustrated their attack; they are now in a flurry on the Chongchon River, Lake Jangjin and the Orang River. However, MacArthur, the cutthroat, has not given up his designs of attack; he is preparing for the

so-called “Christmas general offensive”, bragging that they would occupy the whole of the northern half of Korea before the forthcoming “Christmas”.

At present all the forces under the Eighth US Army, the enemy’s main group, are concentrated on the Chongchon River. In the eastern sector of the front are deployed the Tenth US Corps and the First Corps of the Syngman Rhee puppet army. Judging from the deployment of the enemy forces and their movements, their main attack, as we have foreseen, will be directed to the western sector of the front, and their secondary attack to the eastern sector. Thus they are scheming to seize the whole territory of the northern half of Korea in one go. But the enemy’s scheme is a mere delusion.

From the military point of view, the enemy’s operational plan and commanding system have fundamental drawbacks. Their front is more than 1,000 *ri* wide; it extends from the estuary of the Chongchon River to the Orang River. For that matter, it consists mostly of rugged mountainous areas. Therefore, there is a gap between the enemy forces in the western and eastern sectors of the front, although they have pushed in massive forces consisting of scores of divisions. Moreover, their flanks have already been exposed to us because their attack has been mainly along the highways. Besides, the enemy’s commanding system is confused and they fail to maintain proper coordination between their forces. The Eighth US Army, the main force of the enemy, and the Tenth US Corps operate separately under the command of MacArthur, Commander-in-Chief of the US Armed Forces in the Far East, who is in Japan. From there, he cannot properly command the corps at the front, no matter how shrewd he may be. That is why there is always confusion in the command of the frontline forces and in the coordination between them.

We will turn to good account these military defects of the enemy, frustrate their design to attack and switch over to a decisive counteroffensive.

In our future operations, we shall launch into counterattack along the whole front, aiming our main strike at the western sector. We shall

also conduct active combined operations between our main force and the second-front units operating behind enemy lines. This will be effective in encircling and wiping out the main enemy groups on the Chongchon River and Lake Jangjin and in and around Hamhung and Chongjin, and liberating all areas of the northern half of Korea under enemy occupation. We shall continue to further our achievement in battle to areas south of the 38th Parallel and expedite our final victory in the war. This is our basic operational policy.

In our forthcoming counterattack we shall not merely drive the enemy back, but will encircle and destroy them everywhere, to prevent them from regrouping their forces. To begin with, we shall surround and crush the main enemy force—the Eighth US Army—concentrated on the Chongchon River and break through the western sector of the front. This will cause great confusion throughout the entire enemy front. Then our units around Chongjin and Lake Jangjin shall destroy the enemy before them and swiftly link up in the Hamhung area to form a new sphere of encirclement in the eastern sector of the front, the direction of our secondary effort.

When our main force switches over to the counteroffensive, the second-front units must engage the enemy actively and strike them from behind. Then, they will be able to drive the enemy into a large encirclement and wipe them out to a man.

The main task for the Second Corps is to hold a wide area in Hwanghae and Kangwon Provinces and hit the enemy from behind through intensive operations in their rear. You should take the initiative and fight actively everywhere and destroy or take control of the roads and bridges, cut off the enemy's transport routes and retreat, and wipe out the retreating enemy troops and their reinforcements. In this way you will ensure success in the counteroffensive.

When our second operation starts, the Second Corps must control the Pyongyang-Kaesong, Pyongyang-Singye and Yangdok-Wonsan roads and hit the fleeing enemy. As our main units exploit the success in their attack, the enemy may make desperate attempts to resist by falling back on switch positions along the 38th Parallel, using their

stragglers and operational reserves. Therefore, you must not lose time in taking control of the 38th Parallel and wiping out the enemy's reinforcements, and thus smash their scheme for defence in the switch line.

At the same time, you must liberate the enemy-held areas, restore the Party and people's government organizations in the liberated areas, and intensify political work among the people there to encourage them to fight vigorously against the US imperialist aggressors. Even at this moment many of our parents and brothers are being slaughtered in cold blood by the enemy. We must save them as soon as possible.

Whether or not your corps can fulfil its task of fighting behind enemy lines depends largely on how it will wage its guerrilla warfare. You should conduct it skilfully, drawing on the experience of the past anti-Japanese armed struggle.

To ensure success in guerrilla warfare, you must first build up your unit militarily and politically.

You must finish regrouping quickly, and designate appropriate zones of activity for the regrouped combined units and others, and assign them proper combat tasks. Meanwhile, you should enlist all the separately retreating units and soldiers into the second-front units for joint efforts.

You should tighten discipline in your unit. At present indisciplined practices are being revealed among some units behind enemy lines; for instance, they change the organizational system of their political bodies at random. Such a practice should be stopped immediately.

You must properly educate the soldiers in ideology. Special attention must be paid to this work in view of unit actions behind enemy lines. What is important in ideological education is to convince the soldiers of victory. The commanders and political workers must bring home to them that we are sure to win, because we have the Workers' Party of Korea, the General Staff of the revolution, the people firmly united around the Party and the courageous People's Army and because we enjoy support and encouragement from many fraternal peoples as well as other peace-loving people. They should

also make it clear to the soldiers that before long the People's Army will switch over to a decisive counteroffensive together with the Chinese People's Volunteers. Thus they can encourage all the soldiers to fight with a confidence in victory.

Next in importance is to seize the initiative in battles. This is the key to victory. Taking the initiative is particularly important in guerrilla warfare. If one seizes the initiative in this, one can hit the enemy as one pleases but, if not, one will have to be on the defensive and will not be able to escape setbacks in the battle.

If you are to take the initiative in guerrilla warfare, you should have a good grasp of the enemy and never fail to forestall them. To do this, you must reconnoitre them better, and swiftly concentrate, disperse or move your unit to suit the prevailing situation and the specific circumstances. You must deftly apply various combat actions. You should thus destroy the enemy headquarters, communication centres, storages, roads and bridges everywhere, and throw them into disarray.

Next, you must choose the right bases and expand and strengthen them steadily.

You must strive to do this because you are fighting behind enemy lines. You must build up your bases in zones advantageous from the military, political and geographical points of view. You must rely on these bases in organizing your units, giving your soldiers military and political training and ensuring them rest and treating the wounded. The units operating behind enemy lines must also restore the Party and people's government organizations at the bases, stabilize the livelihood of the people, and conduct political work among them, to induce them to take an active part in the struggle against the US imperialist aggressors. When you return to the enemy's rear this time, you ought to take some Party and people's government officials who will work in the liberated areas.

Active support and encouragement from the people and unity with them is one of the factors enabling a revolutionary army to be always victorious in fighting the enemy. We emerged victorious from the arduous armed struggle against the Japanese imperialists because we

enjoyed unreserved support and encouragement from the people.

Since you are fighting behind enemy lines, you must strive to strengthen your ties with the people, so as to receive their active support and encouragement anywhere and at any time. You must always love and help the people. You must never inflict losses on their property or encroach upon their interests. As for provisions, you must wrest them from the enemy. When you have no other choice but to get them from the people, you must not fail to pay for them. If you have no money, you should leave them credit notes so that they may be paid later.

Meanwhile, you must develop closer ties with the people's guerrillas operating behind enemy lines. In response to our October 11 radio address, the people in the enemy-held areas have organized people's guerrilla units in many places and are putting up a valiant struggle against the enemy. You must actively assist them to fight better and see that they move under the unified command of your corps.

Now, you must look after the life of the soldiers properly. While fighting behind enemy lines, you may face many difficult problems, such as the supply of provisions, clothing and the treatment of the wounded. The harder the circumstances, the more responsibly the commanders should take care of the soldiers. Every soldier is our revolutionary comrade-in-arms and precious to the nation. It is quite praiseworthy that you took all the wounded with you, not leaving a single one of them behind enemy lines despite the difficult situation of the retreat. To treasure and love the soldiers is the duty of the commanders of a revolutionary army; it is our Party's requirement. The commanders must not forget this even for a moment. The soldiers fighting behind enemy lines are still in summer clothes. How cold they must be! We have the supplies but have not managed to send them because of the complicated situation at the front. You must take winter clothes for the comrades fighting there, when you go back. You must also take plenty of rice and meat so that they may not go hungry.

Last, you must skilfully organize the work of disintegrating the

enemy forces and work especially well with the prisoners of war. You cannot take them along with you because you are fighting behind enemy lines. You must send them to their homes. You must explain to them clearly our Party's policy with regard to war prisoners and educate them well, so that they never again become stooges or bullet shields for the US imperialists and the Syngman Rhee puppet clique.

I firmly believe that the officers and soldiers of your corps will launch vigorous activities behind enemy lines while upholding the Party's policy, and thus contribute greatly not only to carrying out the immediate operations with success, but also to hastening the final victory in the war.

ON THE OCCASION OF THE LIBERATION OF PYONGYANG

**Appeal of the Supreme Commander
of the Korean People's Army**

December 9, 1950

Dear citizens of Pyongyang,
Dear fellow countrymen, brothers and sisters,
Heroic People's Army and guerrillas,
Brotherly Chinese People's Volunteers,

Pyongyang, a celebrated ancient capital of our country with a five thousand year old brilliant history and which it now the powerful democratic base of the new people's Korea, was liberated on December 6 from the temporary occupation of the US imperialist aggressors and the traitorous Syngman Rhee clique. It is thanks to the heavy attack earned out by the units of the heroic People's Army, the brave guerrilla units who were active in the rear of the enemy and the brotherly Chinese People's Volunteers, under the command of the Supreme Headquarters of the Korean People's Army.

On the occasion of the liberation of Pyongyang, allow me, on behalf of the Government of the Democratic People's Republic of Korea and the Supreme Headquarters of the Korean People's Army, to express my deep thanks to the units of the Korean People's Army, the guerrillas and the Chinese People's Volunteers, and offer warm congratulations to the liberated Pyongyang citizens and all fellow countrymen, brothers and sisters of Korea.

The heroic People's Army and guerrillas, in close cooperation with the brotherly Chinese People's Volunteers, have already liberated almost all the areas north of the 38th Parallel, including Pyongyang, and some areas of the southern half, and are now continuing a large-scale annihilation programme in pursuit of the enemy who are fleeing southward in confusion. Large combined units of our brave people's guerrillas who penetrated deep behind enemy lines have begun to attack them in different parts south of the 38th Parallel.

The wild ambitions and plot of the American marauders to swallow up our country with one stroke and to conquer our people by "blitz warfare" are being shattered.

During the past two months of the sacred Fatherland Liberation War, our heroic People's Army, an army of our country and people, was compelled to make a temporary strategic retreat before the advancing preponderant armed forces of aggression from many imperialist countries headed by the US imperialist aggressors. Our retreat, however, was a temporary one aimed to administer a powerful attack upon the enemy and wipe out and drive them out of our soil and lead the great Fatherland Liberation War to victory.

Even in the most difficult period of the retreat, all the Korean people who rose in their just struggle to defend the independence, freedom and honour of the country, never surrendered to the enemy. They rallied firmly around the Government of the Republic and expressed through their actual struggle their firm determination to achieve the final victory at all costs.

This determination has been expressed in the all-people's guerrilla movement conducted in all the areas of north Korea which were temporarily occupied by the enemy; it has been expressed in the widespread underground activities of people's government and Workers' Party organizations and in the patriotic, selfless assistance of the population to the People's Army and the Chinese People's Volunteers.

The people's strength is inexhaustible. This strength is invincible.

The Korean people who have risen in the just struggle to defend the

independence, freedom and honour of their country, are enjoying great encouragement and support from the peoples of the Soviet Union, China and other People's Democracies as well as other freedom-loving people the world over. This constitutes another important source of our people's firm faith in victory and their unlimited strength.

Dear officers and men of the People's Army and brave fighters of the Chinese People's Volunteers,

Men and women guerrillas,

Dear fellow countrymen, brothers and sisters,

The path to the final victory is open to us. However, we must realize that manifold difficulties and obstacles still lie ahead of us. We can win the ultimate victory only by overcoming difficulties and through grim struggle and sacrifice.

The enemy is retreating in confusion, but they are not yet annihilated. They are making more frantic efforts to regroup their forces and achieve their sinister aims at any cost.

In order to wipe out the enemy and attain the final victory in the war, we must not give the fleeing enemy any breathing time to build new defence lines or to reorganize their forces.

The People's Army units should speed up their advance. The guerrilla units must further intensify their activities behind enemy lines, carry out incessant surprise attacks upon the enemy and block their routes of retreat and bridges, so that not a single enemy can escape.

The retreating enemy is destroying our towns, villages, factories, enterprises, railways and buildings. In the liberated areas, our people should maintain order, and quickly restore what has been damaged, and build dwelling houses to stabilize their lives as soon as possible. Along with this, they should ensure that there is a proper supply of provisions to the units of the People's Army and the Chinese People's Volunteers. They should repair railways, communications facilities, roads and bridges in good time and aid the front actively.

The people in those areas which are not yet liberated should employ all available means to wipe out the enemy mercilessly and protect their towns, villages, factories and mills. They must supply provisions to the

guerrilla units which are fighting heroically behind enemy lines and give them every possible assistance.

All the Korean people should rally more firmly around the Government of the DPRK and march forward to the victory of the Fatherland Liberation War.

Death to our sworn enemies, the US invaders and the traitorous Syngman Rhee clique, for the misfortune they brought to our country and people!

Glory to the heroic People's Army and the brotherly Chinese People's Volunteers who are marching forward, destroying the enemy!

Glory to the brave men and women guerrillas who are active behind enemy lines!

Long live the united Korean people!

Long live the Democratic People's Republic of Korea!

THE PRESENT SITUATION AND THE IMMEDIATE TASKS

**Report at the Third Plenary Meeting of the Central
Committee of the Workers' Party of Korea**

December 21, 1950

Dear comrades,

One year has already passed since the Joint Plenary Meeting of the Party Central Committees which decided to merge the Workers' Parties of North and South Korea. At this historic meeting we amalgamated the two parties in accordance with the will of the entire membership of the Workers' Parties of North and South Korea in order to further consolidate the Party forces, carry on democratic construction more dynamically with the concerted efforts of the whole Party under the leadership of a unified Central Committee and rally the broad working masses more closely around our Party to cope with the then complicated situation. As a result, the unified Central Committee came into being and under its leadership we, together with democratic political parties and social organizations, have continued the resolute struggle for the peaceful reunification of the country.

Our Party has always worked out a correct political line on the basis of the earnest desire and interests of the Korean people and made steady efforts for its implementation.

Our Party could not tolerate the fact that all the Korean people were suffering great misfortunes and hardships in all fields of the political, economic and cultural life due to the division of the country and the

nation. It has done its best to reunify the country peacefully.

But the US imperialists hampered in every possible way the peaceful reunification of our country. In order to realize their plan of aggression which they had prepared a long time ago to turn the whole of Korea into their colony, they instigated the traitorous Syngman Rhee clique to start a fratricidal war on June 25, this year, and immediately mobilized their ground, naval and air forces for an open invasion against our country.

From that time, peaceful construction in our country was interrupted and the whole land became a bloody battlefield.

(1)

Comrades,

It is now six months since the US imperialists and their henchmen, the traitorous Syngman Rhee clique, unleashed an aggressive war against our Republic.

During this period, all the Korean people, under the leadership of our Party, fought heroically, in spite of all sacrifices, for national reunification, independence, freedom and honour.

In the course of the war, a great change has taken place in the military and political situation at home.

I am going to divide into three stages and analyse the change of the military situation that took place during the war. Each stage has its own specific features.

The first stage of the war was a period when our valiant People's Army continued its victorious advance, crushing the invading US imperialist forces and Syngman Rhee puppet troops.

The second stage was a period when the People's Army made a temporary retreat with the balance of forces between the enemy and us turning to our disadvantage because the US imperialist invaders

increased their forces rapidly, and mobilized even the troops of Britain, Australia, Turkey, Canada and other satellite states for the Korean front.

The third stage is a period when our People's Army, together with the Chinese People's Volunteers, frustrate the enemy's attack, annihilate large numbers of enemy troops and drive them to the south of the 38th Parallel. This is the period when we reorganize and strengthen our forces on the one hand and, on the other, weaken the enemy forces through the incessant battles to annihilate them and thus prepare for the final victory in the war.

In making a surprise attack on the areas north of the 38th Parallel, the US imperialists and the traitorous Syngman Rhee clique calculated that they could smash our young People's Army at one stroke and achieve their aggressive aims. But they were mistaken.

Our valiant People's Army, following the order of the Government of the Republic, not only thwarted the sudden attack of the puppet Syngman Rhee army but also went over to the counteroffensive at once. The puppet army began to crumble along the whole front, and only three days after the war broke out, Seoul, the enemy's base, was liberated by the People's Army.

The People's Army repulsed and wiped out the puppet army in the just struggle for the country and the people, thereby foiling the aggressive scheme of the US imperialists to conquer our people through the medium of the traitorous Syngman Rhee clique.

The US imperialists were extremely dismayed. From the first day of the war, MacArthur, Commander-in-Chief of the US Armed Forces in the Far East, made frantic efforts to mobilize aircraft and warships to assist the fleeing puppet army. Truman ordered his ground, naval and air forces to start a barbarous attack on our country. In this way, the arrogant and vicious US imperialists fully revealed to the whole world their nature as an aggressor, attempting to turn our country into their colony at any cost.

When they started a direct invasion of our country such butchers as Truman, Acheson and MacArthur dreamed that they could frighten our

people by threatening statements or barbarous bombardment from the air and the sea, and conquer them with several US army divisions stationed in Japan.

The American invaders were superior to the People's Army in number and armaments, and their method of aggression was more savage than that of Hitler's. Clamouring for the interdiction of the communications zone of the People's Army, they resorted to barbarous indiscriminate bombing on military and non-military objects, in violation of international laws and regulations. They brutally bombed peaceful towns and villages and destroyed everything—factories, mills, railways, cultural institutions and dwelling houses. Especially heavy was their bombing on our front.

Nevertheless, men, noncommissioned officers and officers of our army continued to advance bravely, through the sea of enemy gunfire and bombing. Having liberated Seoul, the People's Army destroyed the enemy's powerful defence positions on the southern bank of the Han River and kept pursuing the fleeing enemy southward.

During the period of advance our army set an example of devotion and valour. The brave soldiers displayed to the full the heroic spirit of giving their lives without the slightest hesitation for national independence and freedom. Scores of young sons and daughters of our Party were awarded the honourable title of Hero of the Republic; and among many units in which our Party members played the central role, the 3rd, 4th, 6th Infantry Divisions and the 105th Tank Division won the title of Guards.

In the southern half our army enjoyed boundless respect and love from all the people. Everywhere the people and guerrillas gave a warm welcome to the People's Army, their army and liberator, and rendered wholehearted assistance to it in defiance of all difficulties and danger. They provided it with provisions, transported munitions and participated devotedly in defending and restoring roads, bridges and railways.

Amidst the infinite love and support of all the Korean people who have risen up for national independence and freedom, the heroic

People's Army succeeded in liberating nearly the whole of the southern half, crushing the US imperialist aggressor forces.

In the course of the war, the 24th US Infantry Division and the 1st Cavalry Division suffered heavy losses, and the front was moved to the shore of the Raktong River.

The US imperialists regarded the Korean people as colonial slaves without any power to resist. They thought that to bring our people to their knees, they had only to shout, threatening and blackmailing us with aircraft, tanks and atom bombs. However, this showed their foolishness.

Today in the van of the Korean people are the Workers' Party of Korea armed with Marxism-Leninism and the patriotic fighters who in the days of Japanese imperialist rule devoted their all to the anti-Japanese struggle for the independence and freedom of the country.

The US marauders failed to reckon with the fact that the Korean people of today are not the colonial slaves of yesterday, but a people who over the five years have turned the northern half of their country into a powerful democratic base and directly experienced freedom, rights and happiness under their own state power. Nor did they understand that such a people would never surrender to any imperialist aggressor but fight to the last to defend the freedom and honour of their country.

Through the war the US aggressors realized that they could not conquer the Korean people easily and, moreover, became extremely irritated and bewildered by the successive defeats their troops had sustained at the front. Thus they entered upon the road of escalating the war frantically. They mobilized all their ground, naval and air forces on the Pacific and hurled them onto the Korean front while making desperate efforts to check the advance of our army along the Raktong River. As a result, we had to fight against a far preponderant enemy.

We did not have enough ready reserve forces and were not fully prepared to overcome manifold difficulties in our way. And some commanding officers of the People's Army did not encircle and

annihilate the enemy troops and prevent them from recovering, but merely drove them back. This gave the enemy the chance of regrouping their ranks. Furthermore, defence was not organized properly in the liberated areas, so the enemy could launch flank attack.

Our army was unable to frustrate the overpowering enemy attack when the US imperialists started a large-scale surprise landing operation at Inchon by mobilizing some 1,000 aircraft, hundreds of warships and more than 50,000 troops. Though we had achieved brilliant successes during the period of advance, we had failed to completely drive the enemy out of our territory and given them a chance to mount a counteroffensive. So we were compelled to retreat temporarily.

Thus ended the first stage of the Fatherland Liberation War and began the second stage of strategic retreat.

The large enemy forces that landed at Inchon cut off our front from the rear, encircled the main force of the People's Army in the southern half and, taking advantage of the lack of our ready reserves, pushed into the northern half of Korea.

Without adequately organized reserves except a few inadequately trained forces, we had been encountered with the large attacking enemy forces. The untrained fresh units had to fight the large units of the enemy which landed at Inchon. They had rendered great services in defending Inchon and Seoul and, in particular, those with our Party members at the core fought with unparalleled heroism. Owing to a marked difference in the balance of forces, however, we could not completely check the advance of the preponderant enemy.

The Supreme Headquarters ordered the Front Command of the People's Army to swiftly transfer three to four divisions of its main force on the southern front towards Inchon and foil the enemy's scheme to isolate that front. But the Front Command did not carry out the order in good time.

As a result, the enemy occupied Seoul, cut off our forces on the southern front, and began to invade deep into the north across the 38th Parallel before the main force of the People's Army which had

advanced to south Korea completely broke out of enemy's encirclement.

In such a grave situation, our strategy was, on the one hand, to slow down the enemy's advance and thus gain time to rescue the main force of the People's Army from encirclement in the southern half and, on the other, to continue to muster reserve units and make an organized retreat.

The enemy strove to foil our strategic plan, and MacArthur kept urging his troops almost every day to step up their advance to the Amnok and Tuman Rivers by blitz warfare.

Our army could not but retreat to the north of the Chongchon River in the face of the attack of the superior enemy. At that grave moment for our country and people, the fraternal Chinese people sent their powerful volunteers to the Korean front to aid the fighting Korean people and defend their own interests.

Our People's Army, in cooperation with the Chinese People's Volunteers, frustrated the enemy's offensive completely. This marked the end of the second stage of the war.

We have now entered on the third stage of the war whose task is to push ahead with full preparations for the final victory—regroup the units that had fallen back and send them to the front again, launch an offensive with the units already-reorganized and on the line of defence side by side with the units of the Chinese People's Volunteers, recruit more fresh strength and form more new units, and wage an extensive guerrilla warfare behind enemy lines.

The above-mentioned is the course of the war which we have so far traversed.

This course of the war shows that it was perfectly correct that our Party created the People's Army in good time, developed it into a modern armed force and reared it as a genuine people's army fighting devotedly for national freedom and independence. Otherwise, our Republic would have been completely overrun by the US imperialists and the Syngman Rhee puppet clique.

During the war our young People's Army has gained rich

experience and become a tempered army that knows how to advance and retreat and can fight the enemy under all conditions.

Our people, united firmly around our Party, fought courageously side by side with its members in defiance of all difficulties and sacrifices. They continued to wage a stubborn struggle against the US imperialists in face of all blackmail and threats, dealing heavy blows and creating the basic condition for final victory.

The Korean people are not alone in their fight. They enjoy material and moral support from the Soviet Union and many People's Democracies and, in particular, direct assistance from the Chinese People's Volunteers. The heroic struggle of our people has won the admiration of the people the world over and has become a model and banner of the national-liberation movement in colonies.

On the contrary, US imperialist invasion and their atrocities against the Korean people are scathingly condemned by the people throughout the world.

As the enemy is suffering from growing difficulties and internal contradictions and their aggressive adventure is strongly criticized at home, the morale of their troops is getting low with each passing day.

All this shows that we are fully capable of repulsing the invasion and achieving victory.

We must realize, however, that there have been serious defects on our part over the six months of the war.

First, we did not prepare enough reserves for the fight against such a strong enemy as US imperialism, nor did we anticipate the many difficulties in our way, nor made good preparations for overcoming them.

Second, we did not foresee that since our army was inexperienced and its cadres were young, it would not have that much sense of organization to tide over difficulties once it encountered them. As a matter of fact, many commanders showed a lack of organization in leading their units and of perseverance in overcoming difficulties. They were poor at command and slow in sizing up the situation, and revealed many defects in leading their units.

Third, the discipline of the units was weak. Many unit commanders and officers neither endeavoured to carry out orders from their superiors nor carried them out promptly.

Fourth, we failed to wipe out the enemy's effectives and merely dispersed or repulsed them. As a result, the enemy could regroup their units to launch a counteroffensive.

Fifth, our army did not know how to wage battles skilfully against an enemy with superior air, naval and ground forces. It was not familiar with fighting, or changing tactics according to different conditions. In particular, since the enemy intensified air-raids, it should have skilfully waged mountain and night warfare, but it failed to do so.

Sixth, the guerrilla activities behind enemy lines were sluggish. We expected that when the People's Army advanced the underground Party organizations in the southern half would rise in revolt and carry on guerrilla struggles in different parts, and help in the advance. But virtually no such struggles were developed, because Party work was inadequate and many Party members were imprisoned or killed by the US imperialists and the traitorous Syngman Rhee clique.

The aim of our guerrilla warfare in the enemy rear was to create a second front since our air force was weak, and thus to paralyse the enemy troop movement, disperse and rout them, assault their headquarters and cut off their retreat, so as to throw them into panic and confusion. Having keenly realized the importance of guerrilla activities, the Political Committee of the Party Central Committee organized guerrilla detachments with members of the Party Central Committee as commandants and sent them to the enemy rear. But some of them failed to acquit themselves well in the struggle.

Seventh, supply service for the front was not satisfactory. Saboteurs crept into the supply service agencies to hamper this work. In many cases, therefore, the needs of our units at the front were not met in good time.

Eighth, political work in the army was not carried out at a high level and the education of soldiers in revolutionary patriotism was insufficient. We failed to bring home to them how much blood the anti-Japanese

guerrillas had shed to capture enemy weapons and arm themselves.

There appeared in the army the defeatist mentality that fight against the enemy was impossible without aircraft. Nevertheless, no powerful struggle against such a dangerous tendency was carried out in the army.

Although many defects were revealed in the military aspect during the war, our Party was fully able to correct them and further strengthen the People's Army. Our units suffered considerable losses during the retreat but we regrouped the units that had fallen back and sent them into action again. And we stepped up guerrilla activities.

At present, our army in cooperation with the Chinese People's Volunteers is winning victory after victory every day at the front, and many units continue to advance across the 38th Parallel, pursuing the enemy.

(2)

Comrades,

In the military and political situation obtaining in our country our Party has done a tremendous work to achieve the ultimate victory in the Fatherland Liberation War.

Our Party, leading all the people, overcame bravely all sorts of difficulties and ordeals in the struggle to build an independent democratic state. Likewise, shouldering all the heavy burdens of war at this grave moment deciding the very existence of our country and the destiny of our people, the Party has performed a great organizing work in order to win the war, at the head of all patriotic political parties, social organizations and all the people of our country, and roused the entire membership and people to wage the Fatherland Liberation War against the US imperialist invaders and their henchmen, the traitorous Syngman Rhee clique.

When this traitorous clique, at the instigation of US imperialists,

started a surprise invasion against the northern half of Korea, the Political Committee of the Party Central Committee decided to launch a counteroffensive. For this purpose it set up the Military Commission vested with all powers in the country, with a view to mobilizing all national efforts for the war, reorganizing all work on a war footing and achieving the final victory.

In order to ensure victory our Party further tightened its own discipline and military discipline and mercilessly combatted all cowards, pessimists, rumour-mongers and other kinds of saboteurs. This brought about the Party's unity of thought and action.

As the US imperialist robbers started an open invasion, the nature of the war changed, it grew in scope and became protracted. Therefore, the Party undertook and is undertaking the tremendous work of forming many divisions quickly, training tens of thousands of military cadres, arming all the people and recruiting reserves.

With the view of strengthening the growing People's Army, the Party sent large numbers of its finest members into the army. It also set about forming Party organizations in the army in order to establish iron military discipline, increase combat efficiency, further enhance its leading role and carry on more energetically the political work of educating all the army men in lofty patriotism and revolutionary spirit.

The Party not only fought hand in hand with all the patriotic political parties and social organizations at home in the period of peaceful construction but also conducted the work of strengthening the united front with every party and group during the war.

Comrades, the line and all the steps our Party worked out to cope with the war unleashed by the US imperialists and their henchmen, the traitorous Syngman Rhee clique, were correct.

During the six months of the war our Party brought its fighting efficiency and function into full play. Thanks to its leading role and its members' vanguard, selfless activities in the struggle against the enemy, our Party enjoys the respect and love of all the Korean people.

In this way, our Party, rallying all the people more closely around itself and surmounting all difficulties and obstacles, has done a great

work with success for the ultimate victory in the Fatherland Liberation War.

During the first stage of the war, an all-people movement was carried out in the northern half of Korea for strengthening the rear, assisting the front and providing it with munitions and other goods, in keeping with the advance of the People's Army.

Defying the barbarous air-raids and naval bombardment by the US imperialist invaders, the workers, by their heroic struggle, ensured success in wartime transport, restored the damaged factories and mills, and guaranteed wartime production. Many munition factories including arsenals increased their production many times over compared with peacetime and overfulfilled their production assignments by far. The peasants unleashed a movement to increase agricultural production and satisfied the needs of the front and the rear for provisions. All the working people came out to rebuild the destroyed roads and bridges quickly and carried ammunition and provisions to the front which extended as far as the Raktong River.

Men of science, culture and art, students of the tertiary schools explained and propagated the correct policies of the Republic among the people in all parts of the country, thereby inspiring them with confidence in victory.

During the first stage of the war, our Party and people's government bodies performed their role as organizers and mobilizers with credit.

During the counteroffensive by the People's Army, tremendous socio-economic transformations were carried out and an unprecedented patriotic movement of the people was launched in the southern half of Korea.

The people in the southern half who were freed from the barbarous police and terrorist rule of the US imperialists and the traitorous Syngman Rhee clique, enthusiastically supported the policy of the Government of the Republic and actively helped the advancing People's Army. They rebuilt roads and bridges between the Rimjin and the Raktong Rivers and transported munitions. Their mass-scale participation in the work of aiding the front like this clearly showed

what kind of system they wanted to live in.

Our Party and Government of the Republic enforced democratic reforms and got rid of the police ruling machine of the traitorous Syngman Rhee clique and restored the people's government bodies in order to guarantee the liberated people of the southern half democratic rights and freedom and improve their material and cultural life quickly. In different parts of the liberated south elections to county, sub-county and ri people's committees were held and 97 to 98 per cent of the entire electorate went to the polls. This proves how ardently the people there yearned for the people's committees, their own organs of power, and supported our Republic. Along with this, our Party conducted the work of rebuilding Party organizations and training cadres in the liberated areas of the south. And the democratic political parties and social organizations which had been suppressed under the rule of the traitorous Syngman Rhee clique revived and resumed their activities.

Through their own experience, the people of the southern half understood the correctness of our Party's line and realized that our Party was the sole political party thoroughly defending the interests of the country and the people. That was why they infinitely trusted and respected our Party and entrusted it with their destiny.

As you see, the work done by our Party during the first stage of the Fatherland Liberation War was tremendous, indeed.

In the course of the war there were serious defects in our work.

When the US imperialists started invasion, many of our leading cadres did not foresee that the war would be extended and, accordingly, our difficulties would increase, nor did they take measures to overcome them.

They failed to reckon that there might be advances or retreats in the course of the war. In particular, they did not realize the possibility of temporary retreat of the People's Army with the change in the balance of military power between the enemy and us, caused by the US imperialists' direct invasion. Hence the preparations for retreat were neglected in the rear. Our Party organs and cadres did not take measures in advance for an organized retreat, nor did they educate the

people and army men regularly so as to overcome possible difficulties in case of retreat. As a result, many Party organs and leading cadres were thrown into disorder and confusion during the second stage of the war when the People's Army was compelled to retreat with the reinforcements of the US imperialist aggressors landing at Inchon behind our lines.

Scared at the enemy's advance, certain Party organs and cadres lost their ability to direct their Party organizations and subordinate organs and did not organize the retreat carefully. Moreover, leading cadres of certain provincial Party and government bodies neither organized a systematic retreat of their Party organizations and state organs nor mobilized the people for the defence against the invasion of their provinces. They became frightened at the advance of the enemy, deserted their subordinate organs, Party members and other people, and fled. And some ministries did not retreat in an organized way nor did they check disorder, thus causing a tremendous loss to state property.

Some officials of the interior organs, instead of assisting the Party and government bodies in organizing an orderly retreat, and safeguarding the property of the people and Party and government organs to the last, deserted them and were the first to flee.

The Party Central Committee instructed that in the areas temporarily occupied by the enemy Party organs should go underground to guide guerrilla warfare and mobilize the people for the struggle against the invaders. Some Party workers, however, failed to implement these instructions.

During the retreat we lacked organization. This was notable particularly at a time when we were faced with the unfavourable situation at the front and encountered with difficulties. If there had been a strong sense of organization, the Party units and their members would have checked the disorderly retreat in good time and would have saved large quantities of war materials and state property even in the critical situation.

Discipline was loose within the Party. This was clearly manifested

in the fact that during the retreat some leading Party officials and Party members made a disorderly retreat. Lack of discipline in the Party led to the slackening of discipline in government organs and the army.

Government officials, many cadres of Transport, Culture and Information, Education and other ministries and local people's committees in particular, did not organize a systematic retreat of their subordinate organs but fled first to save their own skins.

Quite a few responsible cadres did not act on the instructions from the Government and aimlessly moved about, wasting precious time. Lack of discipline was also revealed by the fact that cadres were slack in following the instructions of their superiors and were irresponsible and irresolute in carrying them out. Some of our responsible cadres of local Party organizations and government officials did not carry out faithfully their superiors' instructions to defend their areas to the last and to organize underground Party activities in case these areas inevitably fell into the hands of the enemy.

Next, Party information and political education among the masses were insufficient. Many Party organizations did the work with the masses in a bureaucratic way and failed to educate them in a spirit of overcoming difficulties. Party information and political education were done in a formalistic way, instead of being spread deep among the masses. As a result, during the period of retreat large numbers of people were deceived by the enemy and some ignoramuses were used by the reactionary elements.

Last, criticism and self-criticism of shortcomings was very weak in the work of our Party organizations. Criticism and self-criticism constitutes the motive power for development. Where there is no criticism and self-criticism there can only be stagnation. Nevertheless, it is still lacking much in our Party life.

Though some Party organs and members revealed many shortcomings during the period of retreat, the Party and the people did not succumb but fought and are fighting stubbornly to win the war ultimately.

In the areas under the enemy's temporary occupation our Party

organizations and members carried on an underground movement and waged a fierce guerrilla struggle in spite of barbarous suppression. Tens of thousands of our Party members there fell in the heroic battles for the Party, the country and the people. Their exploits will go down for ever in the history of our Party and country.

Though the US imperialist invaders occupied temporarily large parts of our territory and forced the People's Army to retreat to the north of the Chongchon River, they could break neither the iron will and fighting efficiency of our Party nor the indomitable spirit of the Korean people who rose up for national independence and freedom.

Even at the most crucial moment our people did not lose their heart; instead, they trusted our Party and Government and put firm faith in the final victory.

(3)

Comrades,

Korea has been the focus of the attention of the world public since the first day the war started. The Soviet people have invariably respected the sovereignty of the Korean people and supported their struggle for freedom and independence. The Soviet Union has always opposed the US policy of aggression against Korea and insisted on the peaceful settlement of the Korean question. The peace-loving Soviet Union has made every effort to prevent the Korean war from spreading and to put an end to it.

The United States, however, has always pursued an aggressive policy against Korea in order to turn it into its colony and, further, to use it as a stepping-stone for its aggression of many Asian countries including China.

The US imperialists who had frustrated every effort of the Korean people to reunify the country peacefully and set out on an invasion,

usurped the signboard of the United Nations to cover up their aggressive acts and to bring the mercenaries of their dependent countries into the Korean war.

As soon as the Syngman Rhee clique started an invasion of the northern half of Korea, the US imperialists assisted its puppet army with their air force. Their armed intervention in our country had started already before the illegal resolution on the Korean question was adopted at the UN Security Council under their pressure. Nevertheless, they are brazen enough to try to camouflage their invasion of our country as an act according to the UN resolution.

Regarding this, the Deputy Foreign Minister of the Soviet Government said in his statement: "It is well-known that the US government had started an armed intervention in Korea before the Security Council met on June 27, 1950, without knowing what resolution would be adopted at the meeting. Thus, the US government had confronted the United Nations with a *fait accompli*, violating peace." This fully exposes the sinister scheme of the US imperialists to cover up their aggressive act in the name of the United Nations.

Moreover, the resolution of the Security Council of June 27, 1950 is illegal, passed without the participation of two of its permanent members, the Soviet Union and the People's Republic of China. Under the signboard of such a resolution, the US imperialists prattle that they are executing "police duties" in Korea.

This foolish act on the part of the US imperialist aggressors, however, cannot pull the wool over the eyes of even an innocent child. From the beginning of the war they not only used their superior air power to bomb indiscriminately the area north of the 38th Parallel, but also mobilized large forces to land at Inchon and invade the northern half across the parallel.

This eloquently shows that the aim and plan of US imperialism were not to carry out the so-called "police duties" to protect the rule of the Syngman Rhee puppet regime over the area south of the 38th Parallel, but, from the start, to invade the whole of Korea and, at the same time, to turn Korea into a springboard for aggression in China

and the rest of Asia.

That was why the Government of the People's Republic of China and the Chinese people carefully watched every move of the US imperialists from the first day of their invasion of our country. The Foreign Minister of the People's Republic of China warned the US imperialists: "The Chinese people are deeply concerned about the situation after Korea was invaded by the United States. They will never tolerate any foreign aggression nor will they sit with folded arms while their neighbours are invaded by the imperialists."

The US imperialists, however, continued to accelerate their invasion of Korea in order to attain their aim of making it a springboard to invade China and other Asian countries.

They did not confine themselves to occupying the area south of the 38th Parallel; they crossed this line to advance to the Amnok River, thereby threatening China directly. Moreover, they occupied Taiwan, part of Chinese territory, and began to intrude into the Chinese territorial waters and air space. Under this situation, the Chinese people could not overlook the American invasion of Korea.

So they took the positive measure of dispatching Volunteers to the Korean front not only to aid our people but to defend the People's Republic of China from the US imperialists' threat of aggression. As is pointed out in a statement of the Communist Party of China and the Chinese democratic political parties and social organizations, Korea and China are on a lip-to-teeth relation. It is absolutely just that the Chinese people have sent their Volunteers to Korea to halt the US aggression against her and also protect their homes and country.

No one can guarantee that, dreaming of world domination, the US imperialists will not seek to occupy Korea today, to invade China tomorrow and to conquer the whole of Asia the day after tomorrow. There are no limits to the wild ambitions of the US aggressors.

The Chinese and Korean peoples have formed the militant and brotherly ties of friendship through protracted revolutionary struggles against imperialism. In the course of our Fatherland Liberation War, their traditional relations of friendship have been further strengthened.

No force can break the friendly relations between the peoples of Korea and China, sealed with blood in the struggle against the common enemy, the US imperialist invaders.

During the war, the international prestige of our Republic rose and the friendly relations between the peoples of the Soviet Union and People's Democracies and the Korean people became closer.

Thanks to their heroic struggle against the armed interventionists of 16 countries headed by the US imperialists, the Korean people enjoy boundless respect, support and sympathy from the freedom-loving people the world over. This is because the struggle of the Korean people against the US imperialist armed interventionists is a link and banner of the struggle of the world people against a new war and for peace and national independence.

(4)

Comrades,

A great change has taken place in the war and the enemy has been completely driven out of the area north of the 38th Parallel and the international position and prestige of our Republic have risen high. It cannot be said, however, that the danger that has befallen our country has been dispelled.

The US imperialists had planned for a quick decision in their aggressive war in Korea, but they are getting deeper into a pit of prolonged war against their will. In order to recover from their defeat, they are plotting to unleash another world war. Now there is a possibility of a long-drawn-out war.

We are confronted with numerous obstacles. We should not be carried away by the victory we have already won, but should make further advances bravely, overcoming all difficulties.

Under the prevailing new situation, we should wage a more

stubborn struggle to successfully carry out the tasks facing the Party and to attain the final victory in the war.

First, now that the enemy is fleeing across the 38th Parallel, our People's Army units must further intensify their offensive. They must be active in pursuing the enemy, in order not to give him any respite to build defence lines and regroup his forces.

Our People's Army units must further strengthen the concerted operation with the Chinese People's Volunteers units. They should thus encircle and annihilate larger numbers of enemy troops and capture their arms.

Since we are still short of air power, we must learn how to combat the technically superior enemy. We must be skilled in night and mountain warfare, as well as in making use of mines in order to reduce the mobility of the enemy.

One of our army's serious weaknesses revealed in the last sixth months was that headquarters at all levels failed to bring their commanding ability into full play. Units can never be allowed to fight as they want. In raising the commanding ability of all the headquarters it is very important to ensure communications properly. Every unit must regularly inform the higher command of its whereabouts and the enemy's situation, so that the higher headquarters can form prompt and accurate estimate of the enemy's movements and the conditions of the units and make correct decisions and that the decisions can be put into effect promptly. This requires smooth communications.

Commanders must be well versed in various weapons, make full use of their fire power and, in particular, organize effective coordinated operation with artillery.

Reserve and technical units must be trained more speedily so that they can be mobilized for the front in case of need. In training reserve units we should not depend on the existing combat regulations alone, but on the life experience of this war. Various military academies must strengthen training and turn out within the set time excellent airmen, tankmen, artillerymen, and officers who are brave and skilled in command.

The People's Army units and guerrillas who are operating behind enemy lines must penetrate deep into the enemy-held areas and launch active guerrilla warfare from all directions. They must blow up railways, roads, bridges and communications networks to interdict the enemy's rear and paralyse his mobility, and raid his command posts and headquarters. They must bravely attack and liberate not only villages but towns as well.

Guerrillas have two important missions. Militarily, they must annihilate as many US imperialist invaders as possible. They must wipe out these aggressors, our sworn enemy, who are brutally bombing and killing our peaceful inhabitants. Politically, they must encourage the people to restore local government bodies and Party organizations and rouse everyone to the anti-US struggle.

In order to further tighten discipline in the People's Army, Party work should be strengthened in the army. The army should be made a revolutionary army with iron discipline. An army without discipline is doomed to perish. Even a small army with strict discipline can defeat a much larger enemy and smash the better armed enemy with inferior weapons. Discipline is the life and soul of an army and the source of its fighting power. Therefore, an energetic struggle should be waged to strengthen discipline in the People's Army.

It is of paramount importance to raise the political and ideological level of the People's Army. In all its units Party political education should be intensified at once. The People's Army is superior to a capitalist army in that it is imbued with lofty patriotism and internationalism and with a firm faith in victory. We must get every officer and man of the People's Army to understand profoundly whose army it is and for what it is fighting.

Second, we must expose to the whole world all the crimes committed by the US imperialists in their aggressive war in Korea. We must lay bare before mankind all their barbarities unprecedented in history, and thus isolate these beasts more thoroughly.

Failing to achieve their aggressive aim in Korea, the US marauders are threatening us that they will use atom bombs. Their threat is not

only adding fuel to the anger of the peace-loving people the world over but also touching off criticism of US imperialism even in the imperialist camp.

US imperialist aggressors, the ringleader of reaction, have suffered a severe setback politically and morally and are meeting one defeat after another militarily.

We must do our best to further strengthen the friendly relations with the Soviet Union, the People's Republic of China and other People's Democracies. This is an important guarantee for our ultimate victory.

Third, we must establish order, restore the economy and stabilize the people's livelihood in the liberated areas.

Our People's Army and guerrillas and the Chinese People's Volunteers have already liberated the whole area north of the 38th Parallel and part of the southern half. The most important tasks in the liberated areas are to restore the people's government bodies and Party organizations rapidly, ensure the normal activities of democratic political parties and social organizations and rehabilitate the shattered economy.

Every ministry and government organ should investigate the war damages and make preparations to work out a national economic plan. We should restore all the factories and enterprises which can be put into operation immediately and utilize all available goods and means of production. Thus we must ensure supplies to the front and make necessary preparations to start rebuilding the national economy as soon as the war is over. To this end we should mobilize scientists and technicians.

Every effort should be directed towards restoring transport facilities and preparing the next year's farming.

We should work out a balanced state budget, exploit mineral resources and place the production of war supplies on a normal basis.

We should establish a reasonable system of rationing food and essential goods and, in particular, we should take prompt measures for relieving war victims and getting them to provide against winter.

All the Party members in the people's committees must, in spite of

all difficulties, ensure provisions and transport for the People's Army and the Chinese People's Volunteers and must subordinate everything to the demand of the front.

Fourth, Party discipline should be further strengthened.

Intensifying Party discipline is one of the most important problems facing our Party work at present. One of the basic conditions for defeating the enemy and winning victory is to strengthen Party discipline more than ever and to firmly rally the entire membership around the Party Central Committee.

Rigid discipline should prevail throughout the Party so that its orders are carried out at any cost. A merciless struggle should be waged against all tendencies that weaken Party discipline, and whoever violates it must be severely punished. The war has clearly revealed who is a genuine Party member and who is not. It has mercilessly exposed the undesirable, cowardly and alien elements within the Party. We must purge the Party of these elements and thus strengthen it.

To continue. Party information and motivation should be stepped up.

During the period of retreat, the Party's information and education work became very much inefficient. In particular, the level of newspapers and publications fell both in content and form. We must quickly restore the press to its former place despite all difficulties and obstacles. Radio broadcasting, too, should be carried on regularly in the face of all hardships.

Our information and motivation should not be formalistic; it should be closely linked with the lives and interests of the masses.

The Party organizations at all levels must constantly guide their members to deeply study the great doctrine of Marxism-Leninism, creatively apply it to their work and try to solve problems arising in practice according to the theory and method of Marxism-Leninism. And they must bring Party policy home to their members, and teach and help them in practical activities.

Party organizations must systematically check up whether Party

and Government decisions and instructions are carried out promptly in different fields. Without checkup it is impossible to ensure the implementation of decisions and to improve work. Among other things, we must often scrutinize and guide the work of the General Political Bureau of the People's Army and further strengthen it.

Since large areas are still overrun by the US imperialist aggressors and the traitorous Syngman Rhee clique, it is of great importance to strengthen the Party work in those areas.

Party bodies in the occupied areas must continue to preserve themselves deep underground. At the same time, they must work energetically to rally the broad masses around the Party, linking the actual problems vital to their interests with the struggle for national liberation and independence. Their organizations should always be active among the masses and in cooperation with guerrilla units, lead the people to rise in revolt and seize power in their areas.

Party organizations should strengthen criticism and self-criticism, a mighty weapon of development. Everybody, from the highest to the lowest, from cadres to rank-and-file members, must regard it as the most important task to intensify it. Both the strengthening of Party ranks and the tightening of discipline are, in fact, closely linked with rigorous criticism and self-criticism.

We should pay steady attention to guiding the mass organizations including the Democratic Youth League and to strengthening cooperation with the patriotic political parties and social organizations which are affiliated with the Democratic Front for the Reunification of Korea. We should help members of our fraternal parties to follow the correct path and educate them in progressive ideas.

Some of our Party workers and members have a wrong idea about the Chongu and the Democratic Party. It is true that during the retreat many members of these parties insulted, persecuted or killed our Workers' Party members and activists in collaboration with the enemy as members of reactionary "peace maintenance corps" and "destroy-communism corps". But this is the work of the reactionaries who sneaked into these parties, and it is not their basic policy.

Our Party members should not weaken the united front with the friendly parties because of what these reactionaries did. We must further strengthen the united front with them, maintain close relations with their patriotic-minded activists, influence them and help them detect, expose and isolate the reactionary elements who hide in their parties.

Last, mention must be made of those who took part in the reactionary organizations in the areas under the enemy's temporary occupation. The enemy formed many such organizations by deceiving and threatening the people in the occupied areas. The evil elements in them committed all sorts of bestialities in collaboration with the enemy. It is natural that the people in the liberated areas want to take revenge on them.

However, we may make blunders unless we deal with this matter seriously.

We should not purge a person without due process of law or inquiry just because he participated in a reactionary organization. We must love and value the people. If a person had been forced by threat or blackmail to join a reactionary organization but did not commit heinous acts, we should pardon him generously and re-educate him. Even in the case of vile elements, we should subject them to due legal procedures and ensure that people themselves try them according to their opinions.

Comrades, among our Party members there are some idlers who are just waiting for victory to come of itself. There are many people who seek refuge in mountain valleys to spend their time in holiday mood without bothering to know what is happening under their noses. They differ but little from those who lie under a persimmon tree, waiting for a ripe fruit to fall. It is a very dangerous tendency to try to sit idle and want to live at the expenses of others, thinking that victory is surely on our side, for the Soviet people are assisting us and the Chinese People's Volunteers have come to help us. We must solve our own problems, no matter who helps us and how. We, the Korean people, are masters. The masters should strive harder. The members of the Workers' Party, the core and vanguard of our people, should take the lead in our work.

Whether our nation can stand on its own feet or not depends on how our Party, the organizer and inspirer of our people, works and how our People's Army fights. We must, therefore, thoroughly do away with all the bad habits and tendencies of the past and strive to carry out the honourable tasks that the country and the people have entrusted to our Party.

Our people and the People's Army will win ultimately without fail. This does not mean, however, that our victory will come of itself easily. Victory must be won by our own struggle. The path of overcoming hardships is the very path leading to victory.

All the Party organizations and members should set an example to the masses in the struggle to overcome difficulties.

Our people are fighting a sacred war for national independence and freedom. Victory in this great war entails sacrifice.

I am confident that at this grave moment our Party organizations and members will display their indomitable valour and self-sacrificing spirit, brave all difficulties and obstacles, in the van of all the people, and carry out with credit the immediate revolutionary tasks that confront the Party, and thus bring nearer the ultimate victory of the glorious Fatherland Liberation War.

**CONCLUDING SPEECH DELIVERED
AT THE THIRD PLENARY MEETING
OF THE CENTRAL COMMITTEE
OF THE WORKERS' PARTY OF KOREA**

December 23, 1950

Comrades,

Present at this plenary meeting of the Party Central Committee are many comrades who are performing important jobs both at the battle and home fronts.

The last six months of war was a time of hard trial for us, an important period for tempering us. The military and political situation at present demands that our Party take new steps to eliminate shortcomings, foster and develop merits revealed in the six months of war, and bring the hostilities to a victorious conclusion. Although every second counts, due to this demand, the Party Central Committee has convened the plenary meeting this time to review the six months of war and discuss future tasks. This will greatly help our Party lead us to victory in the war.

At the plenary meeting many comrades took the floor. The debates went on in keeping with Party line and policy, and all the speakers unanimously resolved to work more energetically to implement them. I think this is a very good thing.

As was criticized in the debates, in the course of the war, particularly during the period of temporary retreat, serious shortcomings were manifest among some of our cadres and Party

members. During the temporary retreat some Party officials and military commanders neglected their duties, wavering without confidence in victory. Thrown into disorder and confusion, they failed to ensure the retreat properly. Some Party members whiled their time away, waiting for a job to arise, instead of seeking it and working hard by showing creativity during this harsh time. This is an act unworthy of a Workers' Party member. When a Party member does not know Party policy and does not try to work, he cannot claim to be a member even though he has the membership card. Even some members of the Party Central Committee must feel their consciences pricking, for idling away their time, instead of trying to find something to do during the temporary retreat.

The reason why some cadres and Party members made these mistakes during this period is that Party organizations failed to work adequately. In the past they did not educate cadres and Party members satisfactorily and, in particular, did not imbue them with Party line and policy effectively. If they had equipped them thoroughly with Party policy at ordinary time, there would not have appeared such Party members and cadres who were idle, or organized the withdrawal in an irresponsible manner during the grim days of retreat, nor would so many Party members have been murdered brutally by the enemy.

Many defects were criticized in the debates, but this does not mean at all that we have only shortcomings and no success in our work. We have more successes than shortcomings, and we have more cadres and Party members who worked well, than those who failed.

During the war the overwhelming majority of cadres and Party members fulfilled their assignments with credit and fought the enemy heroically.

Workers of North and South Hamgyong provincial Party organizations, on the whole, correctly carried out the instructions and assignments given them by the Party and also ensured the retreat comparably well. Military commissars and many other political workers in the army admirably discharged their Party assignments of giving political backing to the combat action of the units, and most of

military cadres, too, fulfilled their tasks satisfactorily.

Among Party members, there are many exemplary cadres and heroes who fought bravely for the Party, the country and the people. Besides, many Party members died by flinging themselves at enemy tanks, grenades in arms, to destroy them. We can cite innumerable examples of Party members who fought the enemy gallantly. It is by no means accidental that our Party now has large numbers of excellent cadres and heroes. This is because our Party has energetically organized and carried out its work even under the difficult war conditions.

Our struggle has not ended yet, and at this very moment fierce battles against the enemy are going on at the front. We should not rest content with the results already achieved, nor be arrogant. Some of our people have a bad habit—they pretend to have what they have not and to know what they know not; and when they are promoted to high posts and praised, they become haughty and unfaithful to their work. Following this meeting, we should thoroughly rectify the shortcomings manifested in the war, properly mobilize all forces and win final victory.

If we do not destroy the enemy, they will not perish or quit. The US imperialist aggressors will never withdraw from our country unless they are hard hit and fall into a bottomless mire. By the recent counterattack we destroyed more than 80,000 enemy troops. The US imperialist aggressors may venture to extend the war by reinforcing their armed forces, in an attempt to retrieve their defeat. It is possible that the war will drag out and our struggle will become even more difficult.

If you comrades feel you can take things easy, now that our People's Army units have repelled the enemy from the areas north of the 38th Parallel, you are greatly mistaken. We should not get drunk with victory but resolve to fight more resolutely from now on and make preparations for a crushing blow at the enemy.

Victory in the Fatherland Liberation War depends entirely on how we prepare ourselves and fight. We should not underestimate the

enemy but make full preparations for a protracted war, and should struggle more stubbornly.

We should, first of all, consolidate our success in the counteroffensive and continue to intensify attack against the enemy.

The People's Army units should take the initiative in battle and chase the fleeing enemies until we annihilate them. For success in the counteroffensive, we should strengthen our units' attack from behind enemy lines, as well as attack at the main front. The People's Army units and guerrillas operating in enemy-held areas should conduct brisk activities deep behind the enemy. The enemy are much afraid of our actions behind their lines. It is said that they have now issued an order to their units not to march at night. The People's Army units and guerrillas behind enemy lines should wage an audacious and active struggle to keep on annihilating the enemy, harassing them from the back and foiling the advance of their reinforcements. At the same time, they should liberate the enemy-occupied areas, relieve the people from the yoke of enemy rule, educate the liberated people and bring them dose to our fold.

If they are to succeed in their military actions, the People's Army units should tighten military discipline still further. Discipline is a source of fighting efficiency. Everyone in the army, from commander to soldier, should thoroughly establish a habit of observing military discipline strictly and obeying orders and instructions unconditionally.

Next, we should strengthen the Party and enhance its role.

Our Party is the organizer and inspirer of all victories. Today our Party shoulders the heavy burden of war, and ail the people completely entrust their destiny to it. Only when we strengthen the Party and heighten its role can we achieve final victory in the war.

What, then, should we do to strengthen the Party?

First, we should further enhance the unity and cohesion of ideology and will of the Party through sharp criticism. Strengthening the unity and cohesion of Party ranks is a basic guarantee for elevating the Party's fighting efficiency. Party organizations at all levels should energetically encourage criticism and self-criticism among Party

members so that they overcome in time wrong practices, which are contrary to the Party's ideas and firmly ensure the ideological unity and cohesion of its ranks.

Second, we should further strengthen Party discipline. Party organizations at all levels should carry out Party line and policy, decisions and directives of higher bodies and uncompromisingly combat violations of the Party's organizational discipline.

Third, the method and style of Party leadership should be improved.

At present, some Party organizations substitute their guidance of the lower bodies by adopting a decision and sending it down to them. They ought not to do so. The officials of lower Party organizations still lack experience in Party work, nor are their qualifications so high. Therefore, if you guide the lower bodies in that way, they cannot implement Party line and policy properly. All Party organizations from the Party Central Committee to the county level should overcome the formalistic method of leadership. Their officials should regularly go to the lower echelons and teach their subordinates in detail how to conduct organizational and political work for putting Party line and policy into effect and how to work with Party members. The Party Central Committee should give substantial guidance and help to provincial Party organizations, and these organizations, in turn, to city and county Party organizations. The city and county Party organizations should guide sub-county organizations and Party cells in a responsible manner. The General Political Bureau of the People's Army should also guide and help political organs under its control in this way.

All Party organizations should lead every branch and unit to carry out Party line and policy. In particular, Party leadership should be strengthened in the People's Army and interior organs so that they implement Party policy thoroughly. Party organizations of the People's Army and interior organs should propagate Party policy among the soldiers and interior workers and ensure its implementation, and properly lead all the work of these bodies, so that it proceeds in compliance with the requirements of Party policy.

Some local Party organizations at present do not adequately aid the work of Party organizations of the army and interior organs. This is wrong. Local Party organizations should render active, day-to-day assistance to them in their work. At the same time, appropriate help should be given to the soldiers so that they do not breach discipline in relation to the people. Since the People's Army is the army of the Party, its mistake immediately means the Party's mistake. In case the soldiers violate public discipline, the local Party organizations should dispose of the case properly, so as not to weaken the ties between the army and the people.

Fourth, we should quickly restore Party organizations in the liberated areas.

Our Party is now confronted with the important task of achieving final victory in the war. So we should concentrate our Party work on this aim and subordinate everything else to this.

Party organizations at all levels should carry out effective ideological education among Party members and other working people. The latter should be so educated that all of them will devote everything to the struggle for victory in the war, having firm faith in it, and give active assistance to the People's Army.

All Party organizations should strive to satisfy the needs of the front

It is very important to ensure a smooth supply of food for the People's Army units. The demand of provisions at the front has now increased sharply, compared with the early days of the war. Under these circumstances, supply of food for the army units should be worked out meticulously, otherwise the fighters at the front can starve. No matter what happens, we should improve food supply for the People's Army units. Party organizations, and Party members in the people's government bodies, in North and South Phyongan Provinces and in South Hamgyong Province, in particular, should do this work properly, with a sense of responsibility.

Party organizations should also pay due attention to the production of weapons and other war supplies.

Steps should be taken to transport munitions, provisions, and other

necessary goods satisfactorily. Trucking alone cannot fully meet the requirements of the front. Therefore, Party organizations at all levels should take steps to rehabilitate the damaged rail tracks quickly so as to ensure railway transport.

Further, we should strengthen the work of the united front.

This is our Party's consistent political line. Only when this is done can we vigorously mobilize people from all walks of life for victory in the war. All our Party organizations should not try to wield the authority of the Party in power within the Democratic Front for the Reunification of Korea, but should assist its work in every way. It is not too much to say, indeed, that the united front work is part of our Party work.

In strengthening the united front work it is important to help it properly, by having close ties with friendly party organizations. At present, some of our Party organizations and members regard the Democratic and Chongu Parties as reactionary ones and are reluctant to form a united front with them because many of their members were engaged in reactionary activities in the days of our retreat. That is improper.

Naturally, we should form a united front with our friends, in other words, with the patriotic parties and social organizations, not with reactionary ones. This is a principle our Party invariably maintains in forming a united front.

Considering, however, the Democratic and Chongu Parties reactionary because many of their members committed reactionary acts and refusing to form a united front with them is mistaken. Judging from their composition or policies, they are political parties with which our Party can join hands. The Chongu Party, for instance, consists mostly of poor peasants and has the programme of building a prosperous, independent and sovereign state.

Why, then, did quite a few members of the Democratic and Chongu Parties commit reactionary acts during the last retreat? It is because they were taken in by the reactionaries who had sneaked into their parties, due to their lack of class awakening. It is also partly

because our Party organizations did not work skilfully with their counterparts on the united front and failed to educate their members properly.

Party organizations at all levels should strengthen the united front with friendly party organizations and educate their members well, so that they actively support and carry out the policies of the Government of the Republic and themselves expose and get rid of loafers and reactionary elements lurking within their ranks.

Further, we should do well the work of disintegrating the enemy camp and struggle correctly against those who were involved in reactionary organizations.

By properly disorganizing the enemy camp it is possible to throw the enemy into confusion and this greatly contributes to hastening victory in the war. We should actively undertake this work, using all possible ways and means.

In some districts, at present, those who were affiliated with reactionary organizations are got rid of at random, and this may turn many people into foes. If we dispose of them thoughtlessly because they were the former members of reactionary organizations, it will, in the long run, hamper the growth of our forces. We should, therefore, deal carefully with these people.

Party organizations at all levels should not paint them with the same brush, but handle them on the principle that the prime movers and the followers should be distinguished, the former isolated, and the latter won over. In other words, the prime movers, the wicked elements, should be severely punished, while those who have been deceived, the passive elements, be generously forgiven and won over. Even though a person committed atrocities, we should not dispose of him carelessly but make the masses aware of his crimes so that they themselves can judge and punish him.

Some time ago the Political Committee of the Party Central Committee adopted and sent down a resolution on getting rid of the reactionary elements and disposing of their property. All Party organizations should define and dispose of the reactionary elements

according to this resolution.

Next, we should stabilize the people's livelihood and rebuild the destroyed economy.

One of our important tasks today is to stabilize the people's lives which were deteriorated by the war. If we fail to stabilize their lives because of the difficult war conditions, it will place a big obstacle in the path of achieving victory in the war. At present, however, both the State Planning Commission and the Ministry of Finance and all the other ministries do not try to stabilize the people's lives in a responsible manner, complaining of one thing or another. If the state organs took any step for their stabilization, it was only to put down in each resolution that necessary commodities should be imported. Provincial people's committees, too, are not concerned about the people's livelihood. I heard the people in Kanggye, Jagang Province, were supplied with maize as it was, so I ordered the chairman of the provincial people's committee to provide corn meal for them, if it meant having to build water mills. But he took no measures to carry it out. It is seriously wrong that people's government officials are indifferent to the living conditions of the people.

We must not rely on other countries for solving the question of the people's livelihood, because it is wartime. However difficult this question is, we should tackle it, relying on ourselves. Instead of simply trying to build large light industry factories in safe areas and produce necessary commodities, we should restore and run all the available light industry factories, construct new medium and small-sized local factories and organize a large number of producers' cooperatives to ensure the production of daily necessities. If we form and run many producers' cooperatives everywhere, we shall be able to solve the problem of getting daily requirements to a great extent, even though they use manual methods. The State Planning Commission and the Ministry of Finance should work out a plan to produce them in this manner and make a budget accordingly.

At the same time, all ministries and people's committees should, from now on, make necessary preparations for commencing the

reconstruction of the national economy, as soon as the war is over. Scientists and technicians should be enlisted to investigate the damages to the economy and map out a plan for its rehabilitation. The plan for postwar reconstruction should envisage not only the restoration of the damaged economy but future prospects for our economic development also.

At this plenary meeting the comrades who made grave blunders before the Party criticized themselves, but they do not yet sincerely repent their errors. A certain official was given many occasions to examine himself and rectify his mistake, but even at this meeting he failed to do so openheartedly. This is entirely wrong, as it is an expression of a petty-bourgeois mentality. Some officials, who had suffered Party penalties, made no effort to seek the ideological cause of their mistakes and correct them. They did not criticize themselves plainly, but endeavoured, instead, to discover the cause of their mistakes in objective conditions. This is also a wrong attitude. The workers who made mistakes should feel deep remorse for the seriousness of their errors, on ideological grounds, and try hard to correct them.

Following this plenary meeting, Party organizations at all levels should bring home to every Party member what has been discussed here. In particular, Party organizations in the People's Army should hold meetings of Party activists and take action to carry through the decisions of this meeting.

I am convinced that all Party organizations and members will make a great contribution to achieving final victory in the war, by carrying out the decisions of this plenary meeting.

OUR ART SHOULD BE CONDUCTIVE TO EARLY VICTORY IN THE WAR

Talk with Writers, Artists and Scientists

December 24, 1950

I am satisfied very much with the fact that our writers, artists and scientists have climbed mountains and crossed rivers to come here in retreat, following the Party. I am very glad to meet you now. I have been anxious to see you all the time.

On this occasion I would like to talk to you briefly about the tasks before you.

At present the situation at the front is very encouraging. As I said here, at the Third Plenary Meeting of the Party Central Committee a few days ago, radical changes are taking place at the front and the situation is turning in our favour.

With the evil intention of turning Korea into a permanent colony, the US imperialist aggressors launched a general offensive, by mobilizing all their forces on the Pacific along with the Mediterranean Fleet. But they have been defeated again and again by the fresh advance of our People's Army.

The People's Army which had made a strategic retreat for some time took the counteroffensive after regrouping its forces and reinforcing itself. Now our heroic People's Army is advancing, with an irresistible force, to south of the 38th Parallel in hot pursuit of the fleeing enemy, destroying large numbers of them. Thunderstruck by the new advance of our army, the US imperialist aggressors are trying

desperately to make a last-ditch stand.

These aggressors had bragged that they would “conquer” our country before “Christmas”, but their wild dream was blown up and the myth of American “might” shattered by the valiant People’s Army. This enhanced the position and prestige of our Republic internationally, at the same time seriously shaking the prestige of US imperialism.

The Korean people are sure to win the Fatherland Liberation War. We can say this with confidence.

We are fighting a just war. Our People’s Army is defending its country and people, and our front and rear are closely linked with each other. Besides, our people are not alone in their struggle against the US imperialist aggressors. The peoples of fraternal countries are giving active material and moral support to the righteous struggle of our people.

However, we cannot depend only on aid from other countries to win the war. Victory depends wholly on the strength of our own people fighting the US imperialist aggressors. The reunification and independence of the country should be attained by the Korean people themselves as it is their cause. Nobody else can do this in our stead. No matter who may help and how, the question of our country must be settled by us Koreans themselves.

No frantic efforts with large armed forces on the part of the US imperialist aggressors can damp the indomitable spirit and heroic mettle of our people who have risen up for national reunification and independence. They will surely realize how great and inexhaustible the united strength of the Korean people is, and how indomitable the fighting spirit and aspiration of our people is, struggling for the freedom and independence of their country.

The Korean people, united rock-firm around the Workers’ Party of Korea, are defying death in the fight against the aggression of the US imperialists. Their heroic struggle to smash the aggression and reunify the country serves as the banner of the national-liberation movement of the oppressed people all over the world against imperialist aggression.

Our Party and people have the brilliant revolutionary traditions of a long-drawn-out victorious armed struggle against the Japanese imperialist aggressors. These traditions are the most precious roots of our revolution. Since we inherited these revolutionary traditions, our people could establish the people's state power and build the democratic base with their own hands, after liberation. Today they can visualize with confidence ultimate victory in the war, successfully repulsing the US imperialist aggression.

The most important task before our people at present is to render active assistance to the People's Army which continues to advance southward, annihilating the US imperialist aggressors.

The people at the home front should manufacture more weapons and ammunition to be used at the battle front. They should produce all they can so as to help in winning final victory.

Our writers and artists should also devote all their wisdom and ardour to this end.

Literature and art have a very great and important mission in the struggle to win the war. Writers and artists should more vigorously inspire our army and people towards victory in the war through their literary and art activities.

The pen is the weapon of writers. Writers should create many excellent works in order to inspire the people with confidence in victory, arouse them to a burning hatred for the US imperialist invaders and stir them up to fight the enemy heroically.

Writers should produce many works exposing the atrocities of the US imperialists in particular.

These imperialists are the most cunning, ferocious and foul savages of modern times. They are wolves who have massacred innumerable Koreans brutally. Writers and artists should give a vivid description of the slyness, cruelty, ferocity and savagery of the US imperialist wolves so that their misdeeds are laid bare to the world.

What they should keep in mind while bringing to light the crimes of the US imperialist aggressors is to go beyond the facts revealed in the Korean war. They should thoroughly expose before the Korean people

and the rest of the world their aggressive and predatory nature and the long history of their bestiality. Only then can we rouse a strong feeling of hatred for the aggressors among our people and disillusion them about the United States.

Never before in their long history have the Korean people invaded even an inch of the US land or infringed on its sovereignty.

However, the US imperialists have long harboured plans of aggression against our country. They sent the pirate ship *General Sherman* to plunder our country. Since then they have carried out constant acts of aggression and plunder against the Korean people.

Not only have they tried through every vicious way and means to invade Korea but have also perpetrated bestial atrocities upon the Koreans. A wolfish American who had crept into Korea in the guise of a missionary, committed the thrice-cursed crime of burning the word “thief” onto the forehead of a Korean boy with hydrochloric acid just because he picked up an apple which had fallen from a tree in his orchard. This is widely known. Does it not make one’s blood boil? This is precisely the wolfish nature of the US imperialist aggressors.

Writers and artists should thoroughly expose the aggressive and brutal nature of the US imperialists and lay bare their true colours as wolves in sheep’s clothing, before our people and the rest of the world.

Even after liberation, they made every effort to enslave our people.

The US imperialist aggressors who occupied south Korea after liberation forcibly broke down the people’s committees formed on the initiative of the people, suppressed the patriotic, democratic forces and arrested, imprisoned and slaughtered large numbers of patriots and people at random. Besides, they set up a puppet regime by force of arms, rejected the repeated proposals of the Government of the Republic for reunifying the country peacefully, and instigated the Syngman Rhee puppet clique to start a war of aggression against the northern half of Korea.

As they suffered an ignominious defeat at the beginning of the war, they reinforced themselves on a large scale to recover their losses and, at the same time, embarked on furthering their intervention by

mobilizing the troops of 15 satellite countries under the signboard of “UN forces”. The US imperialist air pirates bombed towns, villages, schools and hospitals indiscriminately and killed peaceful inhabitants mercilessly. In particular, during their temporary occupation of the northern half of Korea, they brutally massacred our people—young and old, men and women. The horrors of the en masse killings by the enemy in every nook and corner of our country including Pyongyang and Sinchon are beyond description.

With no amount of deception can the US imperialist aggressors conceal or justify the outrages perpetrated by them, in gross violation of international law. Their savagery in Korea is the most disgraceful crime ever committed in the history of mankind. Our people will never forgive them for these crimes, but take revenge on them a thousand fold.

Fair-minded people all over the world are extremely indignant at the armed intervention of the US imperialist aggressors and the outrages committed by them in our country. They express their condemnation and hatred for them. On the other hand, they offer unconditional support and encouragement to the Korean people who are fighting heroically against the enemy.

We should lay bare a long history of their crimes, by citing concrete facts.

Writers and artists should bring to light through novel, drama, film, essay, caricature and other media that the US imperialists are wolves in the skin of a human being and that they are the sworn enemy of the Korean people.

A few days ago, an article written by one of our artists, appeared in the foreign press; it is a bitter and infuriating story, relating how ruthlessly the American imperialists killed the young daughter of a Korean artist. It evoked a great response all over the world. What does this mean? This means that the people of the world sympathize with us and hate the US imperialists.

At present the Japanese reactionaries, too, are looking for an opportunity to reinvade our country. They are heading for militarism

and rearming themselves. We should not underestimate this danger but sharpen our vigilance. Through their creations, writers and artists should expose the atrocities of the Japanese militarists as well as the US imperialists.

At the same time, they should vigorously conduct the mission of widely publicizing the heroic struggle of our people.

They should also clearly convince the people that US imperialism is doomed to failure and we are sure to win. Only then can the people have a firm faith in victory and fight on bravely for final victory in the war, overcoming all difficulties and obstacles.

The US imperialist aggressors bragged that they would “conquer” Korea at a stroke, but are being steadily pushed back, while disclosing their vulnerability as the days go by. But they are getting more frantic in an attempt to recover their defeat. In the future, too, we may encounter great difficulties and obstacles. But we should be bold enough to overcome them, no matter what they are, and fight on more courageously for victory in the sacred, just cause.

Artists should be active in giving performances to inspire the People’s Army and the people fighting valiantly at the front and in the rear.

Yesterday I saw a performance given by the artists. Its content is satisfactory, and they are good at playing and singing. If the soldiers and the people working in the background see such performances, they will feel more confident of victory. Your performance provides us with a fresh source of energy. Therefore, you should visit the front frequently with even better programmes so as to boost the morale of the soldiers.

Writers and artists should contribute to the struggle along with the valiant soldiers of the People’s Army, who are fighting with arms in hand against the US imperialist aggressors at the front. Our art should be an art fighting together with the people, serving the country and helping towards accelerating victory in the war.

College teachers, scientists and technicians are also present here. So I would briefly enumerate their duties.

After winning the war our tasks ahead are innumerable. We will have to rehabilitate the damaged factories and enterprises and, at the same time, build many new ones and carry out our plan of socialist industrialization.

Needless to say, our situation today is very difficult and arduous. But, however unfavourable the conditions or numerous the hardships, it is out of the question to compare it with the past when we were engaged in the anti-Japanese armed struggle.

Although countless difficulties and obstacles stood in our way at that time, the anti-Japanese revolutionary fighters hated the enemy intensely and were firmly resolved to liberate the country. Due to this they manufactured on their own various weapons including “Yongil” bombs even in the mountains where there was nothing available, and won the victory against the Japanese imperialist aggressors after fighting them for fifteen long years.

Today we have the Party, the people’s government and the heroic people. If we all fight with firm faith in victory we shall be able to tide over all difficulties in our way and carry out any arduous jobs. It is most important for you to have an unshakable faith in victory.

Scientists and technicians should not just sit back and mourn the severe damages caused by the US imperialist aggressors to many factories and enterprises—fruits of our people’s sweat and blood. They should devote all their wisdom and talents and all their efforts to winning the war. They should make the best use of existing conditions and explore every possible resource to produce ammunition, thus contributing their bit towards winning the war. At a time when the country passes through harsh trials, true patriots are those who are totally devoted to the heroic struggle to save the country.

College teachers, too, should not sit idle just because there are no students. They also have a great deal of work to do.

We need many technical personnel in order to undertake the large-scale reconstruction work after the war. Without solving the problem of technical personnel we can neither ensure rehabilitation nor socialist construction. As a result of colonial slave education forced by the

Japanese imperialists, we had very few technicians and, still worse, many of them were killed in the war. Training technical personnel, therefore, is a very urgent task before us today. To solve this problem we will have to send more students abroad to study and at the same time, open our own colleges quickly to train many technicians for ourselves. College teachers should settle down at an early date, arrange college buildings, prepare their courses of study along with other requisites like furniture and get hold of potential students.

In particular, great efforts should be made to solve the scarcity of teachers. This can be done by arranging for teachers training courses on a large scale.

Economists should contribute to drafting plans for the State Planning Commission and architects draw up blueprints for postwar rehabilitation. A plan should first be chalked out to reconstruct Pyongyang, the democratic capital, magnificently. The city should not be restored to its prewar state but rebuilt as a beautiful, magnificent, modern city. All this should be kept in mind while drawing up a blueprint for the city and starting preparations for this work.

Sound preparations should be made well in advance to restore the damaged factories and enterprises including the Hungnam Fertilizer Factory. It is necessary to conduct a detailed survey regarding the damages and then work out scrupulous plans to rebuild them in phases. Surveys should be made elaborately. Questions like finding out damages to specific parts of machines and necessary repairs and the degree of damages to buildings and method of reconstruction should be tackled. At the same time, technical drawings for rebuilding factories and enterprises should be prepared beforehand. Factories, too, should not be restored to their original state but reconstructed and expanded on the basis of the latest advances in science and technology.

In carrying out postwar reconstruction we might accept aid from the peoples of fraternal countries. But we must not just sit and hope for outside help without any preparations of our own. The masters of the Korean revolution are the Korean people themselves. So we should display a high revolutionary spirit of self-reliance with which to solve

by our own efforts all problems arising in the revolution and construction of our country.

On your return, you should clearly inform others of the Party's purpose and policies, so that they all turn out vigorously to aid the front to win the war and start preparatory work for reconstruction.

Writers, artists and scientists should live in a revolutionary way to serve the Party and the revolution in better faith, work enthusiastically and set an example in all aspects, always taking high pride in being revolutionaries. The more difficult and complicated the war becomes, the harder you should study to fortify yourselves with our Party policy.

At present, you have a hard time in remote mountain villages where conditions are poor. There may be more hardships than at present in the course of our revolutionary struggle. If we are to emerge victorious in the revolution we should break through difficulties. In this course, people are tempered and emerge as revolutionaries.

I firmly believe that our writers, artists and scientists will devote themselves to the struggle in order to carry out their noble mission creditably.

ON ORGANIZING AIRCRAFT-HUNTING TEAMS

**Order No. 238 of the Supreme Commander
of the Korean People's Army**

December 29, 1950

To ensure that the ground forces combat the enemy aircraft more effectively, I issue the following order:

1. Every corps commander, military commissar, division commander, regimental commander, political worker; and every deputy corps commander, deputy division commander and deputy regimental commander, for artillery, shall take air defence measures as required by military regulations, and at the same time organize two to three aircraft-hunting teams in each infantry regiment by January 5, 1951.

The aircraft-hunting teams shall be armed with large-calibre machine guns, anti-tank guns with special devices, Goryunov heavy machine guns, rifles, captured weapons and other types of weapons.

The aircraft-hunting teams shall have mobile firing positions near villages, in military posts, by the roadside and in places where military movement is under way and where the enemy air action is frequent.

2. An aircraft-hunting team shall have a force of one platoon selected from among volunteers.

Special training shall be given to the team members and demonstration lessons started on the day of their arrival at the firing position. They should be taught how to build firing positions (primary

and alternate), how to signal, how to give the words of command, how to identify friend and foe, how to aim and shoot at different types of aircraft.

Lessons for the team shall be given right at its firing position.

3. The members of aircraft-hunting teams shall be accorded an additional pay which will be half as much as their basic pay and shall be provided with cotton-wadded clothes and shoes and better meals.

4. A rifleman (or a gunner) or an individual soldier who shoots down one enemy plane shall be awarded the National Flag Order Second Class of the Democratic People's Republic of Korea and the rest of the crew the National Flag Order Third Class; a rifleman (or a gunner) or an individual soldier who brings down two enemy planes shall be awarded the National Flag Order First Class and the rest of the crew the National Flag Order Second Class; and a rifleman (or a gunner) or an individual soldier who brings down three enemy planes shall be awarded the Title of Hero of the DPRK and the rest of the crew the National Flag Order First Class.

A rifleman (or a gunner) or an individual soldier who shoots one enemy plane and damages it shall be awarded the Order of Soldiers Honour and the rest of the crew the Distinguished Service Medal.

The privates, noncommissioned officers and officers of an aircraft-hunting team who shoot down more than three enemy planes in three months shall be permitted to visit their homes (their families and relatives) on a 15-day leave.

5. This order shall be made known to all servicemen and the need to combat enemy aircraft intensively shall be explained to them.

6. The implementation of this order shall be reported to me in writing by liaison officers by January 8, 1951, and the division commanders shall report the result of the work of the aircraft-hunting teams to me directly every month.

ADDRESS TO THE PEOPLE THROUGHOUT THE COUNTRY ON THE OCCASION OF THE NEW YEAR 1951

January 1, 1951

Dear fellow countrymen, brothers and sisters,

Valiant officers and men of the People's Army and men and women guerrillas,

Greeting the new year 1951, on behalf of the Government of the Democratic People's Republic of Korea, I extend my fervent greetings and honour to the officers and men of the People's Army and all the Korean people who are fighting heroically to win a brilliant victory in the great Fatherland Liberation War.

The year 1950 was an epochal year unprecedented in the history of our country. It was not only a year of struggle to build a new, democratic country in peaceful conditions but also a historic year when the great Fatherland Liberation War was fought against the invasion of the US imperialists and their stooges. During the first half of the previous year we made peaceful efforts to build a new, democratic country and during the latter half we fought a fierce war to liberate the country against the invasion of the US imperialists and their stooges, the traitorous Syngman Rhee clique.

Dear compatriots, brothers and sisters,

At the instigation of the US imperialists, the inveterate enemy of the Korean people, the traitorous Syngman Rhee clique launched an invasion on the northern half of Korea on June 25 last year in

opposition to the peaceful reunification of the country desired by all the Korean people.

Our People's Army, burning with boundless love for the country and the people and with ardent loyalty to them, frustrated the invasion of the Syngman Rhee puppet army against the northern half of Korea and switched over to the counteroffensive. The valiant officers and men of our People's Army advanced down and liberated many towns and villages in the southern half, destroying the enemy and winning enthusiastic support and greetings from all the Korean people.

Scared by the powerful counterattack of the heroic People's Army and the ignominious defeat of the Syngman Rhee puppet army, the US imperialists resorted to a massive direct armed intervention against our country. The US imperialist marauders bombed our towns and villages barbarously and massacred peaceful people. By their indiscriminate bombing, the American imperialist aggressors drenched with people's blood our homeland cherished down through generations and burnt down all our property—towns, villages, factories, enterprises, houses, etc., built at the cost of the sweat and blood of our people.

The brutal armed intervention of the US imperialists, however, was not able to break the fighting spirit of the Korean people who rose up in a holy war to safeguard the freedom, independence and honour of the country. In fact, the massive armed intervention and bestial air attacks caused all our people to rise up in the great Fatherland Liberation War with burning hostility and hatred for the enemy in order to wipe out the American imperialist aggressors in our country.

In one month and more since the outbreak of the war, the heroic Korean People's Army advanced down to the south coast of our country and right up to the Raktong River and liberated over 90 per cent of the area of the south and 92 per cent of its population. In the liberated area the people's committees, the organs of genuine people's government, were set up and the agrarian and other democratic reforms carried out.

The US imperialists sustained enormous military losses and a shameful defeat in the war, but did not give up their aggressive design

to make the whole of Korea their colony. They mobilized all their army, navy and air force on the Pacific Ocean and expanded the aggressive war against the Korean people.

Our People's Army had to make a temporary strategic retreat because of the counterattack by incomparably superior enemy strength.

In this period the American imperialist aggressors and their lackeys occupied most of the northern half of Korea and committed all sorts of brutalities, slaughtering and raping millions of our fine sons and daughters. The Korean people will never forget the fiendish barbarities perpetrated by the US imperialists and the traitorous Syngman Rhee clique and will take revenge a thousand times over.

In the grim days when the destiny of the country was at stake, all the Korean people fought heroically without yielding in the slightest degree, rallied closer around the Workers' Party of Korea and the Government of the Republic. The Party members and patriotic people who remained behind enemy lines organized guerrilla units and dealt sledge-hammer blows at the American imperialist invaders everywhere. In the most difficult days of the temporary retreat the Korean people, indeed, fought to the last drop of their blood, fearing no hardships and sacrifices, and were firmly determined to wipe out the US imperialist aggressors and win the ultimate victory in the Fatherland Liberation War.

Our People's Army retreated temporarily in order to preserve its main force from enemy encirclement and gain a breathing space to organize reserve forces and prepare for a counteroffensive. The Korean People's Army made a successful strategical retreat, while dealing telling blows at the enemy and thus fully demonstrated its indestructible fighting power. Through the arduous retreat it gained a wealth of combat experience and grew to be a stronger, invincible army.

In less than two months since the commencement of the retreat the heroic People's Army regrouped its forces in order to be able to launch a powerful counteroffensive. At this time the Chinese people sent the

Volunteers of their own sons and daughters to the Korean front. Our valiant army launched the counteroffensive in cooperation with the Chinese People's Volunteers, and the great Fatherland Liberation War entered a new stage.

Soon after the start of the counterattack the heroic People's Army, the guerrillas active in the enemy rear and the units of the Chinese People's Volunteers in close cooperation encircled and annihilated the enemy who had invaded the area north of the Chongchon River and on December 6 liberated Pyongyang, the democratic capital. At present they have not only driven out the enemy from the whole area north of the 38th Parallel, but are advancing further south in pursuit of the enemy fleeing in disorder, liberating Kaesong, Yonbaek and many other places south of the 38th Parallel.

It is now clearer that the Korean people will ultimately win the great Fatherland Liberation War for defending the freedom, independence and honour of the country. Today the progressive people the world over have no doubt that the US imperialists and the traitorous Syngman Rhee clique are doomed to failure in their war of aggression against our country and people. Even the imperialist camp, including US imperialism, admits that its war in Korea is in a hopeless crisis.

What, then, are the reasons to believe that US imperialism will be defeated and that the Korean people will emerge victorious in the Korean war?

The struggle of the Korean people against the US imperialist invaders is a just war to defend the freedom, independence and honour of their country. Human history shows that a righteous war will be successful and that an unjust war will fail.

US imperialism was blind to the inexhaustible strength of the Korean people who hold state power firmly in their hands and to the solidity of the people's government set up in the northern half of Korea. It underestimated the indestructible might of our army and the stability of our home front. That was why the US imperialists bragged, when they started direct invasion on our country by mobilizing huge army, navy and air forces, that they could conquer our Republic and

reach the Amnok River before “Christmas”, December 25. But the ensuing developments of the situation clearly showed that the enemy’s calculation was very indiscreet and empty. The piratic plan of aggression worked out by the American imperialists, who attempted to crush the fledgling People’s Army at one stroke and swallow up Korea, was completely frustrated by the heroic struggle of the People’s Army and all the Korean people.

The US imperialists had a pipe dream of defeating our army by an initial surprise attack because it was young. The enemy miscalculated grossly in that they overrated their own military power and underestimated the capability of the People’s Army. True, our People’s Army is still young. Nevertheless, its spiritual and moral qualities are incomparably superior to those of the US imperialist army of aggression.

The American imperialist aggressor troops are marauders by profession who are politically and morally corrupt and undisciplined.

In contrast, the soldiers of the Korean People’s Army are a genuine army of the people who, deeply convinced of the justness of their cause, are fighting at the cost of their lives in defence of the freedom, independence and honour of their homeland. Its noble ideological and moral qualities are the source of our army’s invincibility and one of the essential guarantees for the ultimate victory of the war. By virtue of its incomparable political and moral superiority over the imperialist aggressor army, the People’s Army could administer heavy blows at the US imperialist aggressors who are numerically and technically superior and the most brutal in the world, successfully ensure the organized withdrawal of its main force without the slightest vacillation even in the hardest days of the temporary retreat and go over to the counteroffensive by forming more powerful forces in a matter of two months. The previous course of the war testified to the indestructible strength of the Korean People’s Army.

Estimating that our people’s government and the home front would be unstable, the US imperialists had an illusion that the home front would soon crumble if they should surprise the People’s Army. But it

was a sheer delusion. Ours is a solid home front which provides the battle front with the all-out support of the people. All the people in the rear turned out as one to support the front, in hearty response to the call of the Government of the Republic: "Everything for the front!" and "Everything for victory in the war!" The superiority of the genuine people's government which was established by our people themselves after liberation and whose masters are the people themselves, was proved more clearly in the war against the US imperialist invaders. The superiority of the people's government and the stability of the rear, fully confirmed in the foregoing process of the war, are one of the important factors in winning the ultimate victory.

Another factor for the inevitable and ultimate triumph in the great Fatherland Liberation War is that the Korean people are not isolated in their struggle against the American imperialist invaders.

The aim of the US imperialists was not limited to seizing Korea and turning the Korean people into their colonial slaves when they instigated the traitorous Syngman Rhee clique to provoke a fratricidal war and resorted to a direct invasion on the northern half of Korea. Their sinister plot was not only to occupy our country but also to use it as their strategic base to invade the whole of Asia and conquer the whole world. Accordingly, the righteous Fatherland Liberation War of the Korean people against the invasion of the American imperialists and in defence of the freedom, independence and honour of the country is not only a historic event which marks a new page in the history of our country, but serves as the banner of the national-liberation struggle of all the oppressed people throughout the world against imperialist aggression. That is why hundreds of millions of freedom-loving people all over the world are giving active support and encouragement to and showing their sympathy for the Korean people in their just war, and today their voice is reverberating round the world, as they shout, "US imperialists, hands off Korea!"

The Soviet people are invariably giving immense aid to the Korean people in the great Fatherland Liberation War. The Chinese people in particular have dispatched the Chinese People's Volunteers consisting

of their sons and daughters to join the war for destroying the US imperialist aggressors, the common enemy. Besides, the peoples of Hungary, Mongolia, Czechoslovakia, Poland, Bulgaria, Romania and other People's Democracies are giving much aid to our fighting people.

All this is a major guarantee for the ultimate and inevitable victory of the Korean people over the US imperialist invaders in the great Fatherland Liberation War.

Dear fellow countrymen, brothers and sisters,

Men and officers of the heroic Korean People's Army and men and women guerrillas,

Hard hit by the powerful counteroffensive of the heroic Korean People's Army and Chinese People's Volunteers, the enemy is retreating on in disorder. The initiative in the war is now completely in our hands, but we cannot be self-complacent nor can we relax in the least. Though badly hit, the enemy has not yet been annihilated but is making more frantic efforts to attain its sinister aim. Hence, we are still faced with the unaccomplished sacred task of destroying the American imperialist aggressors, the enemy, and completely freeing our dear homeland from the enemy's blood-stained claw.

Although the road to the ultimate victory is wide open before us, we have yet to overcome many hardships and difficulties to attain the goal. Crossing all these barriers bravely, unafraid of sacrifices, is the only way to the ultimate victory.

To make the new year 1951 a year of decisive triumph in the Fatherland Liberation War, I put forward the following tasks before all the Korean people.

Everyone should subordinate all his work to the interests of the front, for victory in the war. As the People's Army advances, the frontline stretches and the distance between the front and the rear grows longer. So the work of supporting the front should be organized more swiftly to satisfy its demands.

Workers and technicians should further improve their level of technique and skill, ensure munition production by turning all possible

conditions to good account and prepare for the rapid rehabilitation of the damaged factories, mines, and other enterprises. In addition, light industry factories, enterprises and producers' cooperatives should be quickly rehabilitated and expanded so as to provide clothing and other daily necessities for those who have lost their homes and household goods in the war.

Transport workers should rebuild on an extensive scale the railways, roads and bridges destroyed by the fleeing enemy to ensure all military movements and the transport of war supplies satisfactorily.

Peasants should do this year's spring ploughing in time and concentrate all efforts on farming in order to provide the People's Army, the workers and office employees with provisions. All the peasants should strive to economize in food and increase production under the slogan, "The struggle for food is a struggle for the country."

Scientists and artists should help all the people to increase their ideological awareness so that they can fight for the country and the people at the risk of their lives. They should actively contribute to the victory of the war and the rehabilitation of the national economy by dedicating all their knowledge and talents. At the same time, they should get down to the work of rehabilitating the damaged educational and cultural establishments.

In the newly liberated areas, order should be quickly restored, the ravaged towns, villages and industrial, transport and cultural facilities rehabilitated and the people freed from the colonial fascist rule of the US imperialists provided with stabilized life as soon as possible.

The officers and men of the People's Army should strive to improve their skill still further and tighten military discipline and organization. Commanding officers at all echelons should improve the quality of their leadership, ensure better coordination among units and greater mobility in action, and adopt the excellent combat experience of the Guards units widely in their battles. It is also necessary to improve and develop the reconnaissance activities of the People's Army in various ways. In this way the momentum of attack will increase further and deny the retreating enemy a breathing space to

build new defences and regroup their forces.

Men and women guerrillas should surprise the enemy ceaselessly from behind, cut off their traffic routes and destroy their means of transport and communications. Thus they will help the attacking People's Army in every way and allow not an invader to return home alive.

Dear compatriots, brothers and sisters,

Greeting the new year 1951, let us fight on more dynamically towards victory in the great Fatherland Liberation War.

Glory to the Korean people forging ahead vigorously towards victory!

Glory to the heroic Korean People's Army, the men and women guerrillas and the Chinese People's Volunteers!

Long live our glorious motherland!

Annihilate the US imperialist marauders and the traitorous Syngman Rhee clique in a thousandfold revenge!

ON THE OCCASION OF THE LIBERATION OF SEOUL

**Order No. 7 of the Supreme Commander
of the Korean People's Army**

January 5, 1951

By launching determined offensive operations all along the front line, together with the units of the Chinese People's Volunteers, the Korean People's Army forces again liberated Seoul, the capital of our country, at 16:00 on January 4, 1951.

Our army's liberation of Seoul is a victory of great political significance. The attempt of the US imperialists to retain Seoul was foiled.

While fleeing from Seoul, the American imperialist aggressor army devastated the city and slaughtered a large number of patriots who had fought heroically against the invaders.

Sacrifices in the fight against the US imperialist barbarians, burnt down towns and villages and the debris of Seoul which was a national and cultural centre of our country—all this is calling every patriot of our nation, men, noncommissioned officers, officers and generals of the People's Army and men and women guerrillas to an even more devoted and heroic struggle.

Our valiant men and officers of the People's Army,
Men and women guerrillas,
Officers and men of the fraternal Chinese People's Volunteers,
Go forth untiringly with your pursuit of the enemy and destroy

them by surrounding their units and combined units! Encircle and assault them day and night, giving them no breathing space, strike at their vital communications, and destroy their troops and combat equipment! Liberate the people from under the occupation of the US imperialist aggressors as soon as possible!

Hasten the ultimate victory of the Korean people over the foreign invaders! Let the US imperialist invaders know that they should have left Korea long ago.

On the occasion of the liberation of Seoul, I felicitate you on our victory and express my thanks to all the servicemen, who served with distinction in the fight to liberate Seoul.

We express heartfelt thanks for and great satisfaction with the heroic struggle of the Chinese People's Volunteers, who are supporting our people in their struggle against the US imperialist invaders.

In celebration of the triumphant battle to liberate Seoul, a salute of 24 shells shall be fired respectively by 240 guns in Pyongyang and Seoul at 20:00 Pyongyang time today, January 5.

An immortal honour to the men and officers of the People's Army and the men and women guerrillas who laid down their lives in the battles for the freedom and independence of the country!

ON THE PRESENT SITUATION AND THE IMMEDIATE TASKS OF THE DEMOCRATIC YOUTH LEAGUE ORGANIZATIONS

**Speech at the Joint Conference of the Central
Committees of the Democratic Youth
Leagues of North and South Korea**

January 18, 1951

On behalf of the Central Committee of the Workers' Party of Korea and the Government of the Democratic People's Republic of Korea, I would like to extend warm congratulations to the Joint Conference of the Central Committees of the Democratic Youth Leagues of North and South Korea, and through this conference, express my gratitude to all the young people who have displayed heroism and devotion in the great Fatherland Liberation War.

The DYL members who have been trained and brought up by our Party in the past five years, are now giving full play to their heroism in the struggle against the US imperialists and setting an example of loyalty to the country and the people. As you all know, most of the men in the People's Army are young people and activists of our Workers' Party. They are fighting valiantly for the country and the people in defiance of all difficulties and sacrifices.

As has already been reported in many newspapers and magazines, the young people are now playing the vanguard role at the front and in the rear, without the least fear of sacrificing their lives for the country

and the people. This heroic struggle of the Korean people and youth in the Fatherland Liberation War amazes the world public.

Numerous examples of such a heroic struggle are being set especially by the young people serving in the People's Army. On the Raktong River front many young soldiers of the People's Army hurled themselves at enemy tanks with hand grenades and destroyed them by sacrificing their lives.

In the navy the young men manning a small torpedo boat dashed into the midst of the enemy fleet and attacked and sank a heavy cruiser. A torpedo boat sending a heavy cruiser to the bottom is a rare instance in the world history of naval battles.

Young people are also displaying outstanding bravery in air battles. In the past, under Japanese imperialist rule, our Korean youth had no opportunity of learning to fly an aircraft nor could they hope for such an opportunity. However, despite their insufficient training and experience, our Workers' Party members and young people are showing courage and self-sacrifice in shooting down or damaging enemy planes in air battles.

When we asked US army prisoners what they feared most in a battle with our People's Army, they said they were most afraid of the bayonet charges. As a matter of fact, a revolutionary army employs hand-to-hand fighting more than any other army. This clearly shows our People's Army to be a brave revolutionary army.

Tens of thousands of young Workers' Party members and Democratic Youth League members in our People's Army fought to the last drop of blood for the country and the people and the Workers' Party of Korea. More than 50 youths from among them have been awarded the title of Hero, the highest honour to be bestowed on a citizen of the Republic.

Not only in the People's Army but also on our railways and at our factories, the young people have demonstrated patriotic devotion and loyalty to the motherland.

One of our greatest difficulties in waging the Fatherland Liberation War was the bombing and destruction of our railways by the US

imperialists. However, from the very first days of the war our young people working in railway transport restored the railways and bridges promptly despite the enemy's ceaseless bombing raids and destruction, thus making it possible for trains to run to the front line.

In particular, the young engine drivers drove their trains to the front without tearing air raids, and saved their locomotives and freight cars from the bombings of enemy planes at the cost of their lives. This is because the locomotive drivers, though young, did their duty faithfully in the realization that the railways were the artery linking the front with the rear in the Fatherland Liberation War being waged to defend the independence, freedom and honour of the motherland, and that smooth wartime transport was one of the major factors ensuring victory at the battle front.

Since the outbreak of the war the young workers of Factory No. 65 have more than tripled the production of weapons compared with the prewar period. Here many young Workers' Party members and fine DYL members played an exemplary role.

Moreover, in all the other factories, coal and ore mines, farming and fishing villages in the rear, too, the young people have bravely fought for the country and the people.

Furthermore, in the enemy rear and in the areas temporarily occupied by the enemy, the young people, nothing daunted, formed guerrilla detachments under the leadership of the Workers' Party and fought and dealt heavy blows to the enemy. In the areas temporarily occupied by the enemy, they killed, wounded or captured enemy men, destroyed the enemy's transport, attacked and set fire to his food and ordnance depots, wiped out vicious reactionary elements and conducted explanatory and information work to inspire the people with greater confidence in victory and expose the atrocities of the enemy. Thus they harassed the enemy in the rear and greatly hampered his advance.

This conference is attended also by the boys who formed Children's Guards and fought courageously. In many areas children organized Children's Guards and young people Youth Guards and fought bravely against the enemy.

This is the outcome of the fact that since the day when it formed the Democratic Youth League, our Workers' Party has given proper education to the young people and reared them in a spirit of patriotism and self-sacrifice.

We pay tribute to the brilliant exploits of the young people who displayed gallantry in the great Fatherland Liberation War and highly appreciate the work of the DYL that helped the Party in educating the youth properly and mobilizing them for victory in the war.

Dear young comrades,

I would like to refer briefly to the changes that have taken place in the military and political situation since the war started.

It is common knowledge that our heroic People's Army counterattacked the enemy who had invaded the area north of the 38th Parallel, and pushed ahead as far as the Raktong River sector, inflicting a crushing blow on him. However, the US imperialists mobilized all their forces stationed in the Pacific area, landed a huge armed force at Inchon and cut off our army troops on the southern front. So, our People's Army made a temporary strategic retreat in order to regroup and reorganize its forces and deal a new, decisive blow to the enemy.

Our situation was very difficult during the temporary retreat, the second stage of the war. Our main units were encircled in the southern half and our newly formed units were not yet prepared enough to counterattack the enemy who had invaded the northern half of Korea with a superior force. Therefore, the enemy continued to advance and marched into the area north of the Chongchon River. A grave situation was created in our country. But we are not alone in our struggle. The Chinese people immediately took up arms and entered the Korean war.

With a view to tiding over the grave crisis created in our country, the Korean People's Army built up its strength and then encircled and wiped out the enemy en masse north of the Chongchon River, thus frustrating his offensive. Further, the People's Army finally went over to a counterattack, has crossed the 38th Parallel and is now driving the enemy forces into the Suwon and Wonju sectors.

The military and political situation has now changed decisively in

our favour and the aggressive ambition of the enemy is doomed to total failure.

The US imperialist aggressors are now trying to recover from their ignominious defeat. However, the main force of the US imperialists and the traitorous Syngman Rhee clique has already suffered a heavy blow. Both militarily and politically the tide has turned against the US imperialist aggressors.

Even the reactionary ruling circles in the United States are now raising a cry of distress. They are noisily calling for moving the “MacArthur Defence Line” from Korea to the Japan and Taiwan area. In the United States they blame one another for the war. Truman is shifting the responsibility on to others, saying, “The war was started because the UN asked for it.” This shows that the Korean war is not popular even among the US ruling circles and that opinion is split about it. Over 50 UN member states, allies and sycophants of the US imperialists, are also wavering.

Comrades, for all that, if you think that the US imperialist aggressors will withdraw meekly without putting up any resistance, you are grossly mistaken. You must know that although they have difficulties and contradictions as mentioned above, they will never quit Korea readily, and will not withdraw their blood-stained hands of aggression from Korea until we deal them a decisive blow.

The enemy’s internal contradictions and disunion are now getting worse and worse, his morale is sagging and his fighting capacity is also dwindling. We won battles even when the enemy was strong, so it is quite obvious that we can defeat him and win now that he has become weaker.

Now, how is it the US imperialists have been so rash as to stretch out their aggressive hands to Korea?

The US imperialists thought that once they growled and threatened, the Koreans would readily submit. They calculated that savage bombings and naval bombardments could easily bring the Korean people to their knees.

The US imperialist aggressors nursed delusions that because

American missionaries had administered religious opium to the Koreans for 40-50 long years in Korea preaching a sermon from the Bible that "Whosoever shall smite thee on thy right cheek, turn to him the other also. Then thou shall go to Heaven," and thus making the Korean people incapable of putting up resistance, they could easily conquer and make them colonial slaves. They regarded the Koreans in the same light as their stooge Syngman Rhee.

As a matter of fact, in the past there were many servile people like Syngman Rhee. As we all know, the corrupt nobility, the ruling class, yielded to the threat of the Japanese imperialists and sold out Korea to them.

But what is it that the Yanks do not know today? The US imperialists either do not know or, if they do know, underestimate the fact that in the past five years full democratic freedom has been ensured in the northern half of Korea, and that in the forefront of the Korean people stands the Workers' Party of Korea which consists of progressive elements of the working class, the most patriotic and most advanced class, and the peasantry and the working intelligentsia, and is firmly equipped with Marxism-Leninism. They are unaware that the Workers' Party of Korea always leads the youth and all the people to well-being, progress and victory and not to stagnation, degeneration and ruin as did the feudal reactionary ruling class. They are ignorant of the fact that the Workers' Party of Korea is a powerful political party which fights its way through any difficulties in order to defend the interests of the country and the people and that it closely rallies around itself all patriotic people and the youth.

The Workers' Party of Korea mobilized the people and set up a genuine people's government and introduced historic democratic reforms such as the agrarian reform, the nationalization of industries, the Labour Law, and the Law on Sex Equality. As a result, the people have come to enjoy freedom and a happy life, something they did not know before, and become genuine masters of the country holding the destiny of their country in their hands, and masters of the factories and lands. The Korean people and youth of today are not by any means the

same as those who lived under feudal rule in the past, but are militant and awakened people and youth educated in a revolutionary spirit; they are ready to fight the enemy bravely in defending the country's freedom, independence and honour and their own rights and happy life, and what is more can defeat him.

In the past under the protracted colonial rule of Japanese imperialism, we led a miserable life as a stateless people, the mere thought of which shocks us now. When we were faced with the alternative: to repeat the bitter life of a ruined people or to take the road of democratic development leading to happiness as eternal masters of the factories and lands with power in our own hands, we, the Korean people, knew for sure which road we should take and unhesitatingly rose as one man and chose the second alternative.

The Korean people and youth were properly educated by our Party in the five years following liberation. As a result, they bravely rose in arms against the enemy without the least hesitation despite the fact that the US imperialists had launched a barbarous invasion with the powerful armed forces and superior techniques, conducted bestial blanket bombings and naval bombardments, massacred people and, in particular, despite the fact that the US imperialists were joined by their 15 satellites in this invasion.

It is precisely the Workers' Party of Korea that founded and reared the heroic People's Army, the revolutionary armed force of the Korean people. Had our Party not organized the People's Army in time, it would have been impossible to check the US imperialists' aggression. It was because our Party organized the People's Army in good time, provided arms to the young people, true sons and daughters of the Korean people, and educated them in patriotism, that the People's Army was able to repulse the enemy's invasion and deal crushing blows to the aggressors and was able to defend the country and people.

According to the latest news from the front, the Second Corps did not retreat but remained in the Cholwon sector. There they are regrouping the People's Army units returning from the south and on instructions from above, are bravely fighting in coordination with the

main units advancing from the north. They have fought selflessly on to carry out the tasks assigned them by the Party and the Government of the Republic, most of the officers and soldiers of the corps still in summer uniforms in this cold winter, putting on self-made straw sandals when their army boots were worn out and raiding the enemy to seize ammunition when they had run out of it. They have now crossed the 38th Parallel, and are leading the van of the People's Army, pounding away at the fleeing enemy. Their eyes are blazing with revenge.

When they returned across the 38th Parallel during the temporary retreat, the officers and soldiers of the Second Corps and other retreating units saw how everything they had built by their creative labour and by their sweat and blood during the past five years, including factories, towns, villages and schools, had been ruthlessly destroyed and reduced to ashes. The sight inflamed their enmity and revengeful thoughts more fiercely. The fighting spirit of our People's Army men is now at its zenith.

The longer our People's Army fight on, the firmer becomes their unity; they are seething with a resolve to destroy to the last man the enemy forces who burn our people's property and murder our beloved parents, brothers and sisters. Herein lies the main factor enabling our People's Army to drive the enemy farther south from Suwon and win the final victory.

The mercenaries of the US imperialists on the other hand do not know why or for whom they are fighting; their fighting spirit is declining with each passing day, and they are becoming morally degenerated.

The enemy is in no position now to bring more forces to Korea. It is difficult for the enemy to bring more troops across the Pacific, and if he does, he will have a very hard time of it because it is a very long distance.

The peoples of the fraternal countries and the freedom-loving people throughout the world are standing behind us. Their material and moral aid is increasing every day. The Chinese people even sent their

Volunteers units when we found ourselves in a most difficult situation. They are now fighting against the common enemy, the US imperialist aggressors, shoulder to shoulder with our People's Army.

As for the imperialist camp, its most powerful force, the US imperialists, has pounced upon us only to find itself in a great fix, but our camp of peace and democracy still has considerable reserves.

With regard to manpower resources, technology and morale, today the camp of peace and democracy is stronger than the imperialist camp. The imperialist camp has already revealed its incompetence and vulnerability in the Korean war, but our strength remains inexhaustible and will further grow and expand in the future.

We have nothing to fear with regard to manpower, technology and morale. Our Party and the Korean people are certain to win. Leading all the people and youth our Party and the Government of the Republic will surely win a glorious victory in the end.

Such is the military and political situation in our country at the present moment.

Dear young comrades,

The US imperialists are crafty and insidious. The enemy is making a desperate effort and will do, to muster his forces again and doggedly continue his aggressive war and expand it by clinging to even one corner of Korea for a long time.

In order to secure profits in the aggressive war, the US robbers unhesitatingly commit any barbarities and evil acts. The enemy will not withdraw meekly.

We must completely destroy the enemy with our own forces. The farther the enemy is driven into a narrow strip of land, the harder our struggle will become. As the Korean saying goes, the last pass is the hardest to cross. You must understand clearly that it is the last stage of a war when a glorious victory is in sight that is the hardest of all.

You must proceed to faithfully carry out the new tasks confronting the Democratic Youth League if you are to add lustre to the exploits performed by the youth for the country and the people in the past period of the war.

The DYL, a reliable reserve of our Workers' Party, should mobilize to the full all its forces in the decisive struggle for the final victory of the great Fatherland Liberation War.

For this purpose, first, the youth in the People's Army should faithfully carry out the orders of their commanders and superiors, strengthen military discipline and order in their units, and carry out their combat duties no matter what the difficulties. In this struggle young Party members and DYL members should play an exemplary role. When you encounter difficulties and the battle becomes arduous, you must establish more rigid iron military discipline.

The DYL members in the army should prize and take a loving care of the weapons and ammunition they have received from the people like the apple of their eye, be more proficient in handling various weapons, steadily improve their marksmanship and combat capabilities, toughen their bodies and set an example to all young people in maintaining combat readiness to wipe out the enemy no matter when and where.

The youth in our People's Army should also further strengthen their ties with the people, combat more thoroughly and more relentlessly the tendency to harm or go back on their interests, love and help them. In particular, they should intensify information and motivation work in the liberated areas, so that the people have a firmer confidence in the enemy's inevitable defeat and our sure victory and a deeper love for and trust in the People's Army.

Second, the DYL organizations and youth behind the enemy lines must assist the advancing People's Army units and actively help the guerrillas to widen their sphere of activity.

A DYL organization should be formed in every village and DYL members should be induced to correctly combine guerrilla warfare with legal struggle.

Moreover, DYL members should go behind the enemy lines to form armed information squads and conduct explanatory and information work among the people, thereby firmly rallying the people and youth in the enemy rear around the Party and the Government. In

particular, the DYL should educate its fine members properly, then send them into the enemy rear to disintegrate the enemy forces, conduct information work in the villages by various means and arouse the people to rebel against the occupation forces.

Third, all the youth in the factories and villages of the liberated areas should be mobilized to rebuild the ravaged factories, enterprises, and cultural establishments as well as towns and villages.

The rural youth should participate enthusiastically in building new houses, stabilizing the people's livelihood and relieving war victims. Especially our youth should give active assistance to orphans, shelterless old people and families of servicemen, and take an active part in building schools for the bereaved children of People's Army officers and soldiers, guerrillas and patriotic martyrs who have been killed in the Fatherland Liberation War. DYL organizations must explain and propagate on a wide scale the importance of opening schools for bereaved children, ensuring that all these children go to school, and competent teachers are assigned to these schools to give them a good education.

Another important task is to mobilize the rural youth to prepare for this year's spring ploughing and sowing. This spring we shall have to plough the fields and sow seed under difficult conditions where manpower and draught animals are short. Failure on the spring ploughing and sowing front would mean failure at the battle front, while victory on the sowing front would signify victory at the battle front. The struggle for food is a struggle for the country and for victory at the front. Therefore, the rural youth should select good seed, obtain farm implements, organize work rationally, take further steps to prevent the slaughtering of draught cattle and actively participate in preparations for the spring ploughing and sowing so as to increase food production.

Young women in the rural areas should perform labour exploits on the front for augmenting the output of farm produce in place of their husbands and brothers who are at the battle front, and fulfil their honourable duty with credit as befits those in charge of the rear.

Along with this, young people should sharpen vigilance against the enemy and actively participate in the work of detecting and exposing spies, subversive elements and saboteurs who have sneaked into factories and villages as well as those rascals who joined reactionary organizations during the enemy's temporary occupation and committed evil reactionary acts. They should detect reactionary elements and bring the waverers over to our side, thereby checking the vicious manoeuvres of the enemy to harass our rear in advance and consolidating it as firm as rock.

Fourth, the youth should turn out to strengthen wartime transport including railway transport and ensure a smooth flow of goods to the front. Railway transport plays a key role in the war and the duty of the youth working in this branch is indeed important. Smooth wartime transport is one of the chief factors guaranteeing victory on the fighting front. We have large quantities of war supplies such as arms, ammunition, clothes, food and gasoline, but their unsatisfactory transport causes a considerable hindrance in achieving victory at the front. For instance, because of poor transport we had difficulties during our operations to cross the Raktong River.

Therefore, the work of the DYL should be further stepped up in the field of railway transport. Damaged railways, bridges and roads should be restored and repaired without delay, larger quantities of munitions transported more quickly to meet the demands of the front, and trains should be dispatched to the front despite all difficulties and obstacles.

Fifth, DYL organizations should take the responsibility for the hygienic and anti-epidemic work in towns and the countryside. It is now feared that due to the war, various epidemics and other diseases may break out and become widespread.

Therefore, hygienic squads and epidemic prevention teams should be formed to fortify hygienic and anti-epidemic work and thus prevent various infectious diseases and protect the people's health.

Sixth, the DYL should further intensify information and motivation work among the people and the masses of youth. In the present situation when fierce battles are in progress, information and

motivation is one of our most important tasks. Nevertheless, this work is so far poorly carried out.

In many areas liberated from the enemy's temporary occupation people are not yet fully convinced of victory, they doubt our ultimate victory in the war, and fail to settle down. This is to be attributed to inadequate information and motivation work.

The DYL should mobilize young people, particularly young women, teachers, students and children, to conduct extensive explanatory and information work among the youth and people from all walks of life.

At present radio broadcasting is also unsatisfactory, the number of publications including newspapers is small and their distribution is delayed. In order to explain all the Party and Government decisions and policies to the people and inform them in good time of the situation at the front, we should dispatch the largest possible number of newspapers more quickly to the countryside. While more sessions for reading newspapers and other publications are held, information and motivation work should be conducted by various methods such as report meetings, lectures, explanatory talks, round-table talks, house-to-house visits and individual talks.

In so doing, we should give detailed instances exposing the crimes and brutalities committed by the US imperialists and traitorous Syngman Rhee clique internally and externally, fanning greater hostility and hatred for the enemy in the people's hearts and implanting a firm faith in victory. A resolute struggle should be waged to stamp out the legacy of reactionary ideas spread by the enemy during his temporary occupation, and in particular, the tendency should be stamped out of making compromise with the enemy.

At the same time, the patriots, People's Army men and guerrillas who fought for the country and the people to the last drop of blood displaying heroism and devotion in the great Fatherland Liberation War should be explained and held up as an example to the people and youth to rouse their patriotism.

We should also widely explain and propagate the fact that the

peoples of the fraternal countries and the freedom-loving people throughout the world are constantly giving us support and assistance. We should let the people and youth know that the camp of peace and democracy is much stronger than the imperialist camp, thus further strengthening their confidence in our final victory in the war. All the explanatory and information work should be conducted in an intelligible way through a comparison of facts and concrete examples.

Seventh, the DYL should pay attention to the work of rearing hardcore elements among the youth. In particular, it is important to bring them up in all rural villages. The youth have been fully tried and tested in the course of the war. You should give proper education to the activists among them to prepare five to ten hard-core elements in each village.

To this end, the provinces should call meetings of activists attended by the most active DYL members selected from all villages, and short courses should be given for two or three days on the subject of the present military and political situation and important new Party and Government decisions, as well as on concrete methods of work with the masses. Cadres from the centre should directly take up the guidance of this work.

Eighth, external information work should be further intensified. We are waging a heroic struggle and doing a great deal of work, but fail to give due and timely publicity to it externally. The peoples and youths of all countries who are helping us regard the Korean people's affairs as their own and are keen to know about our struggle and successes, yet we fail to give other countries detailed information about them.

In the future we should publicize the heroic struggle of the Korean people and, in particular, expose to the people of the whole world all the brutalities committed in our country by the US imperialists. Only then will it be possible to rouse the freedom-loving people of the whole world and the peoples of the colonial and dependent countries fighting for national independence and world peace and security, to a more vigorous struggle against the imperialist war incendiaries, and inspire them with a firmer confidence in victory. Only when we further

strengthen internationalist friendship and solidarity with them, can we have a more solid guarantee of victory.

We should seriously set about collecting information regarding the heroic struggle of the people and youth who organized guerrilla detachments and fought unyieldingly during the enemy's temporary occupation and investigating the war damage. Along with this, the youth and children who have rendered distinguished service by waging a heroic struggle against the enemy should be commended officially either by the league or by the state, and all the youth and children should be brought up to follow their example of heroism and patriotism.

Dear young comrades,

In conformity with the decision of the Third Plenary Meeting of our Party Central Committee, you have summed up at today's conference the work conducted by the DYL in the course of the war and discussed and decided on the immediate tasks.

Besides, the DYLs of north and south Korea which existed separately in view of tactical and political necessity, have been merged at this conference and become the DYL of Korea guided by one central leading organ.

The inauguration of the DYL of Korea is not only a momentous event in the history of the Korean youth movement but also of great significance in achieving final victory in the great Fatherland Liberation War. The DYL, a reliable reserve of our Party, has become a militant organization rallying in its ranks two million progressive, democratic young people of north and south Korea.

I am firmly convinced that the DYL as a reliable reserve of our Party will achieve further brilliant successes in the struggle for final victory in the Fatherland Liberation War by carrying out its duty with flying colours.

Let us all advance bravely, giving everything for the front, everything for victory in the war.

SOME TASKS OF STABILIZING THE PEOPLE'S LIVELIHOOD IN WARTIME

**Concluding Speech at a Meeting of the Political Committee
of the Central Committee of the Workers' Party of Korea**

January 21, 1951

Comrades,

It is the supreme principle of our Party's activities to steadily promote the people's material and cultural well-being. Ever since its foundation our Party has striven to stabilize and improve the people's livelihood. In order to rapidly increase the production of daily necessities after liberation, we built small and medium-sized state-run local industry factories in a big way, while reconstructing light industries under central authority, encouraged private entrepreneurs to business activity and widely organized producers' cooperatives. For a better supply of commodities for the working people we secured the dominant position of the state sector in trade, steadily reduced prices and raised their incomes constantly. As a result, the people's living conditions have changed beyond recognition in only a few years after liberation.

When our people restored the economy ruined by the Japanese imperialists and started to lead a happy life under the leadership of the Party, the US imperialists and their stooges, the Syngman Rhee puppet clique, kindled the war. The last seven months of war have brought our people great calamities.

The savage bombing and bombardment by the US imperialist

aggressors played havoc with factories and enterprises, and reduced towns and villages to ashes. The people lost their homes and household goods. In the period of temporary retreat of our People's Army, the US imperialist army of aggression and the Syngman Rhee puppet troops intruded into the northern half of Korea and committed barbarities. They not only killed innocent people at random but plundered their property or damaged it without mercy. They ruined or burnt down hundreds of thousands of houses and a large number of schools, hospitals, factories and enterprises, set fire to the storehouses of agricultural tax in kind and grain stacks, and looted large quantities of provisions and hundreds of thousands of domestic animals. The enemy went so far as to break bean- paste jars of the inhabitants.

The people's life was seriously affected and many of them became war victims owing to the bestialities of the US imperialist aggressor troops and the Syngman Rhee puppet army.

At present, our people are short of clothes, footwear, bean paste, soy sauce, salt and other daily essentials, and those who lost their houses and property and the war orphans need immediate help. To stabilize the people's livelihood so severely ruined by the war is a vital problem that brooks not even a moment's delay.

Nevertheless, there are some officials of the Party, state and economic organs who make no effort to stabilize the shattered life of the people saying: how can we take care of it when it is hard even to satisfy the material needs of the front? This is a gross mistake.

Our people, together with the Party and the state, are braving the grim trials of the war and they entrust their destiny entirely to our Party and state. Our officials should not be indifferent to the people's life under the pretext of wartime conditions. Only when there are people can we win the war and then build a rich and powerful state. Officials should be responsible for the people's livelihood even in the wartime situation. Their life should thus be made stable as soon as possible, so that they can show a lofty patriotic devotion in their struggle to consolidate the rear and ensure wartime production.

What is most important in stabilizing their livelihood is to produce

clothing, footwear and other daily necessities.

Of course, it is not an easy job to provide daily necessities on our own at a time when the national economy is devastated. But we must overcome all hardships and obstacles and make the fullest use of the existing conditions and possibilities to produce different kinds of daily needs. Party and state officials and economic executives should take steps to turn them out by reconstructing the damaged centrally-run light industries and local factories and, at the same time, build a large number of new local factories.

In the conditions of war, the building of many local factories producing light industry goods is more advantageous in every way than building large ones. Now it is difficult to build big light industry factories because it entails a long time and large state investments. Even if we build, we will be unable to run them properly since transport in wartime is too strained to guarantee enough raw and other materials for them. On the contrary, if we build local factories we can quickly increase the output of daily necessities with less state investments. Every province should, therefore, actively tap and utilize its own reserves to set up many local factories. We should also widely organize and run producers' cooperatives, and encourage private business and sidelines at homes. Then we will be able to meet the wartime requirements of the people for clothing, footwear and other necessities of life.

Another important thing in stabilizing the people's livelihood is to solve the food problem.

To this end, we should lose no time in collecting agricultural tax in kind. Freed from the temporary occupation of the enemy, the peasants are now showing a patriotic zeal in making the grain deliveries to the state with great joy and those in many localities are completing their obligations one after another.

The peasants in South Phyongan Province have set an example to all. In Tokchon and Nyongwon Counties they worked hard to thresh their harvest day and night and paid one hundred per cent of agricultural tax in kind by the end of last year. And the peasants in

Kaechon, Maengsan and Yangdok Counties, too, are paying it off one after another. Those in other counties of this province are striving to put into practice their resolve to pay up fully by the end of January.

Officials of the people's committees at all levels should undertake proper explanation and information among the peasants so that they may quickly deliver agricultural tax in kind. Since most of big rice mills are damaged by enemy bombing, they should be encouraged to meet the tax demand with rice polished as much as possible by using water mill, beast-worked mill, stone mill and mortar.

Grain output should be increased.

Without increasing grain production we cannot meet the demands of the front for provisions or stabilize the people's livelihood. We must concentrate our efforts on the countryside to boost grain output decisively. For the present we must ensure success in this year's spring sowing.

The rural situation at present is difficult. Draught animals and seeds as well as adult labour are in short supply. We must ensure spring sowing in time come what may.

For this purpose, we should arouse the peasants to this struggle under the militant slogans: "Don't leave even an inch of land idle!" and "Sowing is also a battle front!", and intensify assistance to the countryside on the part of the whole Party, the whole state and the whole society. The peasants should form oxen-sharing teams to make up the shortage of draught animals and turn out large quantities of compost to supplement fertilizer. The state should loan food and seeds to the peasants who are in need of them. It should also give them labour assistance by mobilizing workers, office employees, students, interior service personnel and soldiers in the rear. The Peasant Bank should advance them funds for farming.

The people's committees at all levels should distribute the land of absconding reactionaries and ownerless land primarily to the peasants with little land and war victims, and give the rest, if any, to state organs, factories, enterprises and army units to be used for their subsidiary production.

The officials of all the people's committees and the workers in the

field of food administration should thoroughly investigate and find out who are qualified for food ration and, on this basis, supply them with food, so that irregularities can be prevented.

Improving and strengthening commodity distribution in keeping with the wartime conditions is of great importance in stabilizing the people's living. The Ministry of Commerce and the people's committees at all levels should take measures to restore both state and consumers' cooperative trade networks and put them in order quickly, thus making commodities available to the people satisfactorily. The consumers' cooperative shops should purchase the surplus agricultural produce and mountain herbs from the peasants on a wide scale and provide them for the townsfolk and workers.

Medical service for the people should be improved. They do not get proper medical treatment because the hospitals and clinics have not yet been completely rehabilitated or furnished. These should be restored and run quickly, while mobile medical corps be sent to the rural areas where there are no clinics, so that everyone can be under medical care even in wartime conditions. Medical service establishments should give active medical aid to the people and take thoroughgoing measures to prevent epidemics.

As their livelihood is devastated by the war many people find it hard to pay even light taxes. So we should exempt them from house and land taxes and reduce other taxes for the time being. We should also wholly or partly write off tax arrears in accordance with the circumstances. It is advisable to exempt the peasants from some of agricultural tax in kind and water-rates due to the state and also from their liability to return grain loans.

As for the workers and office employees, it is good to raise their wages, and better still, to improve the supply standards of daily necessities. Raising only wages now is useless when these goods are in short supply. We should, therefore, raise the norms of supply of food and other daily essentials for the factory and office workers and provide each of them free with summer and cotton-wadded clothes this year.

Factories and enterprises should run their subsidiary economy

properly to produce vegetables, meat and other supplementary food for the workers and office employees and build houses for those who have lost them.

War victims should be given ample relief. They should be provided with clothes and food, other relief goods, and housing materials for construction. Free medical aid should be introduced and stale loans be given to them. It is a good idea to organize a war victims relief committee to take good care of them.

We should widely organize the work of giving state and public aid to the bereaved families of patriotic martyrs, the dependents of People's Army servicemen and the disabled soldiers, thus relieving them from all inconveniences.

The war has produced many orphans who have lost their homes and parents as well as old people living singly. We cannot be indifferent towards them. The state should set up in different places primary schools, orphanages and asylums for war orphans and helpless old persons. The cadres should adopt one or two orphans in order to lessen the burden on the state.

We should pay special attention to the upbringing of the bereaved children of patriotic martyrs and rear them into fine workers who can carry forward the revolution. We should build nurseries and schools in provincial capitals and major cities to rear and educate the bereaved children of the officers and men of the People's Army, Party and government officials, public figures and the patriotic people who sacrificed themselves in the fight against the enemy.

We should step up the struggle for economization. We should properly educate the people to oppose all sorts of useless ceremonies and displays, and live economically. In particular, cadres should lead a frugal life and take the lead in the struggle for economization. At the same time, we should intensify the struggle against profiteering harmful to the people's living.

Last, I will touch briefly on some other questions discussed at the meeting today.

We should further strengthen mass political and ideological education.

This is of great importance in hastening the ultimate victory of the war. The outcome of a war depends on the spiritual and moral preparedness of the army and the people who participate in it. Victory in a war always goes to the army and the people who have a lofty political and moral character and are firmly united politically and ideologically.

In the past seven months of the war we could achieve great successes in the fight against the US imperialist aggressors who boasted of being the “most powerful” in the world. This is not because we have a large army or better weapons. The enemy’s force is larger than ours, and their military and technical equipment is superior to ours. The reason why we could defeat the enemy is that the politically awakened and tempered army and people fought courageously under the leadership of the Party. We must continue to strengthen mass political and ideological education to rouse the people and the soldiers so that we crush the military and technical superiority of the enemy with our political and ideological superiority.

What, then, are the main points in mass political and ideological education at present? They are: first, to arm all the people and soldiers with the policy of our Party and the Government of the Republic; second, to inspire them with confidence in victory; third, to intensify their hatred for the enemy by exposing the brutalities of the US imperialist aggressors and the Syngman Rhee puppet clique; fourth, to raise them to the height of patriotism by widely propagating how officers and men of the People’s Army, patriots and guerrillas fought, displaying heroism and self-sacrificing spirit during the war. The Party Central Committee, local and People’s Army Party organizations must conduct extensive mass political and ideological education, with the main stress on these points.

We should efficiently combat those who took part in reactionary organizations.

At present, there are some deviations in tackling those elements who were involved in reactionary organizations during the temporary retreat.

First, some interior organs are passive in the struggle against those

who committed hostilities in reactionary organizations during the retreat and are now hiding themselves, only waiting for them to surrender themselves to justice. Of course, it is necessary to conduct a campaign for voluntary confession and disintegrate the enemy from within and reeducate even one more of those who participated in reactionary organizations.

But, it is quite wrong to expect the perpetrators of hostile acts to give themselves up, instead of taking the offensive against them. This is, in the long run, tantamount to affording them ample time to hide deeper and move more stealthily. Only when the interior organs strengthen the struggle to detect those who have hidden themselves after committing hostilities, will they come out to confess.

Second, they are not vigilant enough against those who have confessed. Most of them sincerely repent for their crimes and want to follow our Party and people. Some of them, however, made a false confession to continue their reactionary acts. The interior organs ought to have heightened vigilance and taken legal sanctions against these fellows, but they leave them alone.

If we do not correct these shortcomings, it will hinder the task of strengthening our revolutionary ranks and ensuring their purity.

As we said already, in this struggle we should give priority to the detection of those who have deliberately committed hostile acts and gone into hiding, and step up the confession campaign.

In some localities there are still in hiding quite a few people who participated in reactionary organizations and committed hostilities in the period of temporary retreat. The interior organs should mobilize the masses to search thoroughly for those who are hiding without surrendering themselves to justice.

You should not deal with them haphazardly, without going through legal formalities even if they did vicious outrages as members of a reactionary organization. Whoever they may be, all reactionaries must undergo due processes of law.

Those who have confessed should be dealt with according to how honest they prove themselves to be. If they truly repent and honestly

confess to their crimes against our Party and people, they should be forgiven. But if they make a false confession and conceal their crimes, they should be sent to mass trial or justice according to the graveness of their crimes. If you hear the masses you can find out whether a confession is true or false. The Ministry of Justice and the Ministry of the Interior should work out regulations for the treatment of those who confessed and, on this basis, deal with them.

A joint meeting of heads of interior stations, prosecutor's offices and courts should be held in provinces, cities and counties under the guidance of the Party organizations to criticize severely the shortcomings in the struggle against those who joined reactionary organizations and discuss measures to carry out the decision of this meeting.

According to a decision of the Military Commission, we should dissolve the regional military commission for provincial defence and organize the regional self-defence commission in each province.

The formation of regional self-defence commission is aimed at consolidating the home front and ensuring its security.

The main tasks of this commission are, first, to organize the struggle against the hiding reactionaries and remnants of defeated troops who engage in insidious manoeuvrings in the area under its jurisdiction; second, to organize the fight against the airborne and seaborne invaders; and third, to organize and guide the defence of railways, bridges, factories, enterprises, power stations, communications establishments, airfields and state institutions. The commission should organize self-defence corps with the select people throughout the cities and counties and carry out its duties through these corps and the provincial security forces. It should conduct all its work and activities in close cooperation with the People's Army units stationed in its province.

The regional self-defence commission of the province comes directly under the Military Commission of the Democratic People's Republic of Korea and the provincial Party committee chairman concurrently holds the chairmanship of the commission.

ON MAPPING OUT THE MASTER PLAN FOR THE POSTWAR RECONSTRUCTION OF PYONGYANG

Talk with City Planners

January 21, 1951

Today I am going to discuss with you how to prepare for the reconstruction of our ravaged cities after the war.

The situation at the front is now turning favourable for us. Our heroic People's Army soldiers are destroying the US imperialist invaders and their stooges everywhere. Grasping the upper hand of the war, they are launching a powerful counteroffensive on all fronts, dealing a heavy blow to the enemy. The US imperialists and their lackeys will be brought to their knees before us in the near future, and the war will end in victory for our people.

You say you want to fight at the front. It is a matter of course for the Korean youth to do so. I can understand your desire to fight at the front. But, if everyone goes to the front, who will defend the home front and prepare for postwar reconstruction? These home-front activities are no less important than fighting on the battlefield.

If we prepare ourselves well from now, we shall be able to set about the work of reconstruction as soon as the war is over. If we plan postwar reconstruction when the war is raging, it will further encourage our people and the soldiers of the People's Army and boost their confidence in victory while striking the enemy with horror and blasting them like a terrible bomb. So those engaging the enemy at the

front must fight them and those arranging postwar reconstruction on the home front must do it. You should make good preparations for postwar reconstruction without worrying about the front.

As you know, the American imperialist aggressors have not only massacred our people but reduced our towns and villages to ashes in the most brutal way the like of which has never been employed against this land in history. In a little more than six months since the outbreak of the Fatherland Liberation War, our towns and villages have been devastated and our factories and enterprises severely destroyed.

In spite of his brutalities, the enemy has not been able to conquer our people. If the US imperialist aggressors destroy one thing, we must build ten, a hundred or a thousand, and rebuild the ravaged towns and villages, factories and other enterprises more beautifully, more magnificently and in the latest styles. We should thus display the stamina of the Korean people in postwar reconstruction, too.

What is important in reconstructing the cities which have been brutally bombed down by the American imperialist aggressors is to rebuild them in such a way as to provide the working people with conveniences and modern amenities to suit Korean tastes.

If these requirements are to be met, we must not blindly copy the methods of town building in other countries.

Customs and tastes of our people are different from those of the foreigners and there are a number of characteristics in our geographical and other natural conditions. So we must never imitate foreign styles in building our towns.

True, we should adopt the fine foreign experience in construction. But in that case, too, we must be critical from the viewpoint of our specific conditions.

We must build our towns keeping in view our realities and national character in all cases. In building cities, we must develop the unique national forms of Korea, while at the same time our buildings must conform with the spiritual and moral aspects and tastes of our people and be serviceable, beautiful and durable.

One of the fundamentals of urban construction is that cities should

be built in such a way as to offer the greatest convenience to the people, and protect and promote their health.

In the past, towns in our country were built not in a cultured way but in the interests of the small privileged class, following the colonial policy of the Japanese imperialists. In our urban rehabilitation and construction we must eradicate the degenerate and outdated way of building towns applied by Japanese imperialists.

Urban dwelling houses, service establishments, cultural facilities, public buildings and roads should be well laid out for the convenience of the people, and many green belts formed around them. In particular, every building where the working people are to live or work should admit sufficient light and have adequate ventilation and heating.

Facilities harmful to the health of the people should be avoided as far as possible in laying out a city, and, if unavoidable, adequate measures should be taken to protect the citizen's health.

In urban reconstruction we should pay close attention to the problem of building more, better and faster with less outlay of funds. In working out a master plan for urban construction, therefore, you must draw even a line and a dot, calculating first how to build more and better with less expenditure of funds, materials and labour.

The reconstruction of towns also needs a detailed estimate of all other conditions—the freezing depth of the building ground, possible damages from flood, typhoon, earthquake, war and the like. This will firmly ensure safety against all contingencies.

With these problems in mind, you should work out the master plan for the reconstruction of Pyongyang.

After the war we should reconstruct Pyongyang first. Pyongyang is the democratic capital—the political, economic and cultural centre of our country. In Pyongyang are the Central Committee of the Party and the Government of our Republic, and it is here that all policies and lines for building a prosperous, independent and sovereign state are worked out and our people's struggle for nation-building is organized and led. Pyongyang is a city with a time-honoured history, a brilliant culture and very beautiful scenery.

We should rebuild Pyongyang, the democratic capital, into a more splendid, beautiful, magnificent and modern city than it was before the war. Under Japanese rule Pyongyang had many shortcomings because it was built in an uncultured and unshapely way. It had few cultural facilities or parks and plazas worth mentioning. Shops and other service establishments were concentrated in some parts of the city and this caused great inconvenience to the people.

We should not just restore Pyongyang to its original state but rebuild it into a modern city by eliminating its underdevelopment and shapelessness, the consequence of the colonial rule of Japanese imperialism, and by providing it fully with cultural and service establishments for the broad strata of working people.

In order to rebuild Pyongyang into a magnificent and modern city, its central part should be laid out properly.

Proper location of the heart of the city will afford full convenience to the people and ensure the balanced layout of the city as a whole and its development on a long-term basis. In my opinion, it will be proper to fix the central part at front of the Pyongyang City People's Committee or at the eastern foot of Nam Hill. This will be an ideal location both for providing conveniences of life to the working people and for the maintenance of the town's balance in general.

A good layout of a road network is very important in city construction. We can say that a road is an index of the civilization of a country. A town with well laid-out roads looks bright, clean and tidy.

The existing Stalin Street is so narrow that it looks oppressive and is inconvenient to pedestrian and vehicular traffic. But this street need not be widened. Leave the street as it is and plan a new broad thoroughfare starting from Moran Hill and running parallel with the Taedong River. And it would be a good idea to have the central square in front of the Pyongyang City People's Committee. A modern street should be planned at the site of the airport now in East Pyongyang. This airport should be removed elsewhere outside the town at some time in the future. A few new bridges should be built across the Taedong River.

Residential houses should be built in great numbers. They should be modern, high-rise buildings laid out along main streets and on the Taedong River and the Pothong River. In this way fine modern houses and a happy life will be provided for the working people who under the colonial rule of Japanese imperialism wandered about without even a thatched hut and had to settle down on the earthen embankment in the Pothong Plain.

Many cultural and service establishments should be built to meet the material and cultural requirements of the people. They should not be concentrated in one place but evenly distributed in all residential quarters for the convenience of the working people.

Factories and enterprises should also be located properly, avoiding residential areas as far as possible. Otherwise the air pollution caused by these factories will harm the health of the working people. They should be located on the lower reaches of the Taedong and Pothong Rivers.

It would also be a good idea to move the railway between Pyongyang Station and West Pyongyang Station to another place at some later date.

Pleasure grounds and parks should be laid out in a planned way.

Although our working people have no time to rest now because they are fighting the American imperialist aggressors, they will need some place where they can take a walk and relax when the war is over. So pleasure grounds and parks should be well laid out to enable the working people to have such recreations.

Pyongyang has many beautiful places suitable for this purpose.

The Taedong River winds southward, unfolding an exquisite scenery, its crystal waters washing the foot of the hills—high and low—Juam Hill, Moran Hill, Mansu Hill, Nam Hill and Mangyong Hill. Of course, the riversides are not quite wholesome at present because they are being used as wharves. But if they are arranged well, they will serve the working people as fine recreation grounds. Promenades and green belts should be laid out and various kinds of trees planted on both sides of the river.

The areas around the Pothong River should also be put in order. The earthen embankment in the Pothong Plain should be cleaned so as to build recreation parks thereabouts. Boating areas should be arranged on this river and its banks covered with green foliage. Then, the squalid earthen embankment in the Pothong Plain will be an ideal place for recreation.

Parks should be built. If they are laid out on the Taedong and Pothong Rivers alone, they will be insufficient to provide the working people with satisfactory cultural recreation. So parks should be planned in the beautiful mountains and hills like Mt. Taesong, Moran Hill, Mansu Hill, Nam Hill, Haebang Hill and Changgwang Hill. Many small parks, too, should be built in the residential quarters and other parts of the city. We should thus see to it that pleasure grounds and parks can be found in all parts of Pyongyang.

While preparing for the reconstruction of Pyongyang, we should also make arrangements for the rehabilitation and construction of provincial capitals and other towns throughout the country.

I hope you will map out a splendid master plan for the reconstruction of Pyongyang with joint efforts and talents.

ON THE POLICY OF THE WORKERS' PARTY OF KOREA FOR ITS FUTURE ACTIVITIES

**Speech Delivered at a Joint Meeting of the Commanders
and Political Workers of the Combined Units
of the Korean People's Army and the Units
of the Chinese People's Volunteers**

January 28, 1951

Comrades,

The present political and military situation is in our favour. The Korean People's Army and Chinese People's Volunteers units already scored substantial results between the first and third operation in the third stage of the Fatherland Liberation War, and created essential conditions for the Korean people to win a definite victory in the war.

We have now driven the enemy to the south of Suwon and Wonju, liberated vast areas and more than half the population.

In three successive operations we wiped out over 100,000 men of the US imperialist army and Syngman Rhee puppet army. Contradictions and discord have arisen within the enemy forces; they are at loggerheads with one another and their morale is falling. On the contrary, our army has been united ever more firmly, and is overcoming difficulties in an indomitable fighting spirit.

The more barbarities the enemy commits, the more hatred our people feel for him. All the Korean people are now gnashing their teeth and are afire with the revengeful thought to wipe out the US imperialist bandits at all costs. Our soldiers' morale is now very high, and

international aid to our people is ever increasing.

Under these circumstances, our Party's immediate task, in short, is to consolidate the present victory and create all conditions for final victory in the war. This, precisely, is the central task facing our Party.

What has to be done to fulfil this central task?

First, the Workers' Party organizations should be strengthened and the demolished Party organizations be restored promptly in the liberated areas. The Party ranks should be extended through the enrolment of fine and staunch patriots who have been tested in the Fatherland Liberation War. Hard cores of the Party cells should be reared continuously to extend Party political work and work with the masses. Our Party members should be sent among the masses, so that they blend with the masses and strike still deeper roots in them. Through a stubborn struggle against the bureaucratic style of work, ties between the Party and the masses should be strengthened and the Workers' Party of Korea developed into a powerful party. The Party's prestige should thus be further enhanced in the eyes of the masses, and the masses should be correctly guided to win an ever greater victory in the struggle against the US imperialists and the traitorous Syngman Rhee clique.

Mass organizations—the General Federation of Trade Unions, the Peasants' Union, Women's Union, Democratic Youth League—should be promptly rehabilitated and re-structured, their functions and role raised, and the Party's guidance of these organizations consolidated. Through mass organizations the Party organizations should conduct an extensive information and education work among the people from all walks of life so that they have firm confidence in victory and a high degree of national pride as well as burning hatred for the enemy. Then they will devote all their energies to smashing the enemy and fight out to the end to defend their country.

The Party should train more hard cores of the mass organizations. It should train those who are proficient in mass work, in other words, those who know how to rally the masses, how to educate them, mobilize them and organize them.

Second, people's government organs should be restored and

consolidated quickly in the liberated areas. In the areas temporarily occupied by the enemy, most of the people's government organs were demolished, and numerous cadres were killed or enlisted in the army or guerrilla units. Therefore, we should boldly appoint young cadres and women to the leading posts in restoring government organs. Until the war ends the cadres of government organs and people's committee members will be appointed temporarily according to the principle of appointment and commission. However, it will be advisable to elect the ri people's committees.

In order to acquaint the newly elected or newly appointed cadres with their work, they should be given short courses everywhere and helped in their day-to-day work.

The style of work of government officials should be improved. An end should be put to the practice of dictating and coercing the masses reminiscent of the bureaucratic style prevalent in the Japanese imperialist days. State laws and government decisions should be explained to the masses so that they understand government policies clearly and rally around the Party and the Government.

The broad masses should be actively mobilized to restore roads and railways, to ensure the transport of munitions for the advancing units, supply provisions to the People's Army and Volunteers units and give aid to the front. The masses should be convinced that military victory now is the only way to liberate the people.

Third, Party and government bodies should make every effort to stabilize the people's life.

Whether in enemy-held areas or not, large numbers of people had their homes and property burnt down or damaged by the enemy. They have no clothes and provisions now. The Party and the Government should mobilize the Party, public organizations and government organs to carry out extensive relief work.

The Government should allocate large sums of money to supply war victims with building materials, clothes and provisions. These victims should also be helped socially, by mutual cooperation and mutual aid.

Party and government organs should launch an all-state, all-people movement to nurse and educate the bereaved children of Workers' Party members, Party and government officials, public figures, officers and men of the People's Army and guerrillas who were killed in the war. Nurseries and primary schools for the bereaved children should be set up in every provincial centre and other big cities to bring them together, give them an education and provide a secure life for them.

Stabilization of the people's life is the most important job for the entire state and the whole Party.

However madly the US imperialists may devastate our country, reducing it to ashes, we will be able to rebuild it into a new powerful country after the war if only we have people. The care and relief of people is our primary task.

Fourth, the peasants' spring sowing should be guaranteed.

We should mobilize all forces for success in this work. If we fail in the spring sowing we will be unable to solve the food problem.

In all local areas correct statistics should be compiled of the rural manpower and draught animals, and soldiers, workers, government officials and students in areas short of manpower should be mobilized to help the peasants. "Don't leave even an inch of land idle!" is our major slogan.

The war-victimized peasants should be exempted from taxes in kind, irrigation fees and part of certain other taxes; and seed grain and funds should be loaned to those peasants who have no seed grain for their spring sowing.

Land survey should be carried out in the countryside. If peasants who have no work force return their lands to the government organs voluntarily, the factories, enterprises, institutions, or workers and soldiers in the given localities should till them.

After the People's Army retreated from areas in the southern half where the agrarian reform had been carried out, the landlords again robbed the peasants of their lands. How should we deal with the land problem in such areas which have been liberated once again? We should approve of the former agrarian reform and allow the peasants to

take back the lands they lost. The government organs should register the lands shared out to the peasants as their property.

Fifth, the work of the united front should be strengthened.

Some comrades think it unnecessary to cement our united front with friendly parties because some members of the Democratic Party and the Chongu Party in the Democratic Front for the Reunification of Korea joined reactionary organizations and committed barbarities against the country and the people in the course of the Fatherland Liberation War. They are mistaken. This is a tendency inimical to the conduct of the Fatherland Liberation War. These comrades are unaware that we are now carrying out a nationwide struggle against the US imperialist aggressors for the country's reunification, freedom and honour.

We should strengthen the united front more than ever before. There must be a principle to observe in consolidating the united front. We can form a united front with people who oppose the US imperialists and traitorous Syngman Rhee clique and call for national reunification and independence. Irrespective of their political views, religious beliefs, property status, social standing and party affiliation, those who are opposed to the US imperialists and traitorous Syngman Rheeites should all be brought over to join the united front to wage a joint struggle for democracy and independence.

The point is, our Party plays the leading role in the united front. Our Party has played and will play the leading role.

The Democratic Front for the Reunification of Korea should not be weakened because of the actions of certain reactionaries lurking in the friendly parties. Maintaining close relations with progressive members of the friendly parties, we should draw them over to the side of the country and the people and increase our Party's influence on them so that they rely on and follow our Party; and through them, we should expose and isolate the reactionary elements in these parties.

The US imperialist armed invaders and Syngman Rhee traitors, their lackeys, want our united front to be weakened, and are hell-bent on undermining it. Therefore, the tendency to underestimate the role of

the united front and weaken it benefits the enemy. The Party should launch a stubborn struggle against this tendency.

Sixth, the struggle against the participants in the reactionary organizations should be conducted on correct lines.

The enemy formed reactionary organizations in collusion with the landlords, pro-Japanese elements, traitors to the nation and profiteers in the temporarily occupied areas. Threatened, blackmailed and tricked by the enemy, some waverers, cowards and backward people joined the reactionary organizations.

These reactionary organizations, manipulated by the US imperialist armed invaders and traitorous Syngman Rhee clique, committed atrocities in the enemy-held areas. The majority of the people in the areas freed from enemy occupation demand that those who joined the reactionary organizations and committed atrocities be tried in revenge and punished. Theirs is a just demand.

In handling these people, however, we must distinguish between the deceived and the malignant elements, the passive elements and the active ones; we must refrain from acting arbitrarily but liquidate the reactionaries through discreet legal procedures and trials.

The out-and-out reactionaries who betrayed the country and the people and committed heinous atrocities should be duly punished, whereas the deceived waverers who, repenting their faults, now want to start afresh with a clean slate should be generously forgiven and won over.

Some time ago the Political Committee of the Party Central Committee and the Government of the Republic adopted a decision concerning the liquidation of the reactionaries and the disposal of their property. On the basis of this decision, all Party organizations, government bodies and interior service and judicial organs must cope judiciously with the problem of the participants in reactionary organizations.

Seventh, the work of disintegrating the enemy forces should be carried on with daring and on a wide scale.

Every way and means should be employed to propagate to the

enemy soldiers our lenient policy for prisoners of war. Prisoners of war should be released there and then on the spot so that upon returning to their units they propagate our generous POW policy.

We should call on enemy soldiers who are nation-conscious and patriotic not to kill their fellow countrymen on behalf of the enemies of the nation but to train their guns on the enemies and rescue their own people and country. We should thus induce all conscientious enemy soldiers to respond to this appeal and come over to our side.

The Party should step up the activities of the underground organizations in enemy-occupied zones. The underground organizations should be encouraged to conduct information activities on a large scale behind enemy lines, so that the broad masses of the people are rallied around the Party and rise up in harmony with the offensive of our army. When our army advances, the guerrillas should also act in cooperation with it.

Eighth, education in internationalism should be carried on extensively among Party members and the masses of the people.

Only when the Korean people and the peoples of the Soviet Union and the People's Democracies achieve fraternal unity can our nation's complete independence and liberation, as well as world peace, be guaranteed. The Korean and the Chinese people have traditional friendship and solidarity forged already in their long-drawn-out revolutionary struggle. This is a revolutionary solidarity, a solidarity based on the interests and demands of all the people. Now the people and Communist Party of China have sent Volunteers to help the Korean people. This great internationalist aid further strengthens the internationalist solidarity of the Korean and Chinese peoples. The Soviet people helped the Korean people in their anti-Japanese liberation war, and the Chinese people are giving aid with blood to the Korean people's struggle against the US imperialists. Even after defeating US imperialism we should continue to preserve unity with the Chinese people for peace in Asia. These two peoples are our eternal friends. We should promote friendship among the peoples and concerted actions between the armies, thus further strengthening our

unbreakable internationalist solidarity.

Ninth, I will remark on military tasks.

We should make ample preparations for the final victory. Army units should be reinforced and marshalled and provided with weapons, ammunition, provisions and clothes. All should work actively to carry out this task, and complete it while the main units are being prepared. Recruits should be educated and trained in such a way that they can fight as well as veteran soldiers. The commands at all echelons of the People's Army should enhance their ability to command; the artillerymen, engineers and signalmen should become versed in their own specialities.

Further, all units should intensify training for night and mountain warfare. In this warfare coordinated action with the technical service should be well organized and reconnoitring and scouting should be improved.

The main units should send storming parties into the enemy rear to raid his command posts, headquarters, airfields and depots, and prevent him from undertaking well-conducted defence operations.

Military discipline and order should be strengthened in the People's Army.

Guerrillas behind enemy lines should intensify their activities while the main units are being prepared so that the enemy feels uneasy, and should hinder him from concentrating his forces and surrounding the guerrilla units.

We have many other tasks. But if we fulfil mainly the tasks I have mentioned, we are sure to win.

We still have great difficulties and hard battles before us. I am convinced, however, that our heroic People's Army and Chinese People's Volunteers units will cope well with these ordeals.

The basis for victory has already been laid. We will soon annihilate the US imperialists and the traitorous Syngman Rheeites and win the war without fail.

Comrades,

Let us march forward towards victory!

Long live everlasting friendship and solidarity between the Korean people and the Soviet and Chinese peoples!

Glory to the heroic Korean People's Army and Chinese People's Volunteers units and to the men and women guerrillas!

Let us destroy the US imperialists, the new warmonger, the robber of the Asian nations and the common enemy of the Korean and Chinese peoples!

Final victory is ours!

FIGHT MORE BRAVELY FOR FINAL VICTORY IN THE FATHERLAND LIBERATION WAR

**Order No. 0097 of the Supreme Commander
of the Korean People's Army**

February 8, 1951

Our valiant men and noncommissioned officers of the three services,

Commanders and political workers,

Dear men and women guerrillas,

Today we celebrate the third anniversary of the founding of the heroic Korean People's Army, under solemn circumstances where the Fatherland Liberation War for the reunification and independence of the country and the freedom of the people has entered a decisive stage.

The heroic Korean People's Army, in close cooperation with the fraternal Chinese People's Volunteers, has liberated the whole area of the northern half including Pyongyang, a time-honoured, ancient city of our country and the democratic capital of the Republic, which was temporarily occupied by the enemy, by totally expelling them to south of the 38th Parallel.

The units of the People's Army and the Chinese People's Volunteers, encircling and annihilating the fleeing enemy, have already liberated Seoul, Inchon, Suwon, Wonju, Hoengsong and many other towns and villages of the southern half by advancing with an accelerated speed. They are now continuing fierce battles with the

enemy while furthering their achievements in the war.

The combined units of our courageous guerrillas active deep behind enemy lines are fighting more fiercely. They are surprising enemy headquarters, blowing up their transport routes and communications organs, raiding their depots, and thus throwing the retreating enemy into greater confusion.

We have won tremendous successes during the seven months of the Fatherland Liberation War. These successes constitute a solid basis for liberating the whole of Korea in the future. They have fully exposed the weakness of the US imperialists, have struck a fatal blow to their plan of aggression in Asia and created greater confusion and division among the aggressor forces of US-led imperialism. Our successes have also powerfully inspired the peoples of many Asian countries in their anti-imperialist, national-liberation struggles.

In the just Fatherland Liberation War for defending the country and the people from the US imperialist aggression, our young People's Army has displayed to the full its gallantry, boldness and patriotic devotion, and demonstrated its might to the whole world.

Our soldiers and noncommissioned officers are conscious of the sacred and weighty mission which the country and the people have given them. They have displayed their combat capabilities and knowledge of advanced military techniques and shown a high sense of discipline and organization in the fierce battles. The officers have encouraged their men by setting examples in person.

In the fierce battles fought to expel and annihilate the US imperialist aggressors, large numbers of heroes and model combatants have emerged from among the officers and men of the People's Army. For their distinguished services to the country and the people, so many have been awarded the title of Hero of the Republic and decorated with orders and medals.

Our People's Army, having gone through the hard days of retreat, has grown in skill as well as in numerical strength and become a powerful armed force with high revolutionary consciousness.

The participation of the fraternal Chinese People's Volunteers in

the Fatherland Liberation War has turned the war more in our favour. The three joint operations of the Korean People's Army and the Chinese People's Volunteers have annihilated over 100,000 enemy troops and dealt them a severe blow.

The US imperialist aggressors, who refuse to withdraw from Korea, are fated to be exterminated to the last man on our soil.

The fiendish US imperialist marauders have perpetrated brutalities everywhere in the areas of the northern half, which were temporarily occupied by them. They butchered, raped and tortured our beloved parents, brothers and sisters. Their hands are stained with the blood of the Korean people. We cannot forget the resentment of the people who were massacred by the US imperialist gangsters; we will be revenged upon the enemy by a hundred fold of what our people have suffered.

All conditions favour us for victory in war.

The People's Army enjoys the deep love and support of the people, and its ties of kinship with them are becoming ever stronger. Out of their desire for our early victory, all the people are out as one in giving assistance to ensure the triumphant advance of the People's Army.

The mental and moral condition of the People's Army is incomparably superior to that of the enemy. Our officers and men are confident of the lofty aim of the war and the justness of their cause. In contrast, the US imperialist aggression troops are extremely corrupt and demoralized because they are engaged in an unjust war to invade another nation and because they are aware of the crimes they have committed in Korea. They are trembling with the fear of impending revenge. They have suffered not only military defeats but also political and moral setbacks in the Korean war.

The noble political and moral traits of our People's Army have developed to a higher level in the process of fighting and defeating the enemy.

We are not alone in our just struggle. The peoples of the Soviet Union, China and other People's Democracies are giving us active support and assistance, and the progressive people of the whole world sympathize with our struggle.

All this constitutes a guarantee for our final victory.

Men and noncommissioned officers of the People's Army,

Commanders and political workers,

Men and women guerrillas,

The day is drawing near when we shall completely crush and drive out the enemy and achieve victory in the great Fatherland Liberation War. But victory does not come of its own accord, and it cannot be achieved without arduous struggle. Confronted with ultimate defeat, the enemy forces are all the more desperate to avoid our people's stern revenge. They will frantically resist, by resorting to all kinds of sly and underhand methods.

We should not rest content with our victory. We must sharpen our revolutionary vigilance further and strike and wipe out the US imperialist invaders even more mercilessly and resolutely.

On the occasion of the third anniversary of the founding of the heroic Korean People's Army, I warmly congratulate you, and order the following, so that you will achieve ultimate victory in the great Fatherland Liberation War:

First, all men and noncommissioned officers of the People's Army should master their weapons, steadily improve their knowledge of military techniques, accurately carry out what is required by military regulations and manuals, execute the orders of their superiors promptly and exactly, voluntarily observe military discipline and order, further enhance their sense of organization and display a noble fighting morality.

Second, commanders and political workers at all levels must constantly improve their military leadership, properly organize coordination among different units, develop reconnaissance which is the eyes and ears of the army, in every way. They must elevate the function of the staff to a higher level, make extensive use of the experience of the leading Guards units and further raise the revolutionary spirit of the units.

Third, all the People's Army units should more closely cooperate with the fraternal Chinese People's Volunteers units. They must

exchange information with each other and display still greater valour and stubbornness in battles.

Fourth, supply service workers must provide the front with all kinds of weapons, ammunition and other war equipment in time. They should adequately protect war materials from the raids of enemy planes, properly sort out and use trophies, and promptly repair damaged military equipment for the front.

Fifth, men and women guerrillas must successfully assist the People's Army and Chinese People's Volunteers units in their advance. They should raid enemy headquarters, demolish traffic routes and means of communications of the enemy and further harass them from the rear.

Sixth, in celebration of the great victory achieved by our heroic People's Army, a 20 gun-salute shall be salvoed respectively by 120 guns in Seoul and Pyongyang at 20:00, on this eighth day of February, the third anniversary of the founding of the Korean People's Army.

**ANSWERS TO THE QUESTIONS RAISED
BY THE ACTING HEAD OF THE CHINESE
XINHUA NEWS AGENCY BRANCH IN KOREA**

February 11, 1951

Question: On the occasion of the third anniversary of the founding of the heroic Korean People's Army, would you Comrade Premier, the organizer and leader of the People's Army, mind telling me about the major success and experience gained during the seven months of the great Fatherland Liberation War?

Answer: Three years have already elapsed since the founding of the Korean People's Army. Though this is a short period, our People's Army has grown into a powerful armed force and gained great successes in defending its country and people.

Today our People's Army is heroically wiping out the aggressive forces of US imperialism and the mercenary troops of its satellites—Britain, Turkey, Canada, Australia and so on—that are several times superior to it in number and technique.

In the course of the harsh and arduous Fatherland Liberation War our People's Army has been seasoned further.

In the hard-fought battles our officers and men have been tempered and have become seasoned soldiers who are skilled not only in the offensive of breaking through the enemy's fortified positions and attacking them but also in stubborn defence against the enemy's offensive and in making an organized retreat slipping through the enemy's

encirclement when the situation is unfavourable; skilled in detouring, encircling and destroying the enemy equipped with superior weapons and technique and in penetrating into the enemy's rear and conducting guerrilla warfare, cutting off the route of their retreat and assaulting their headquarters and transport. Our People's Army has gained rich experience in battles and its fighting capacity has increased greatly.

The commanders of the People's Army are now able to control, unite and educate their units under any complicated situation. The men are now excellent fighters who observe military discipline, take good care of their weapons and display unbounded loyalty and stubbornness in discharging their combat mission.

The People's Army has grown greatly not only in quality but also in quantity.

In this way, during the seven months of the Fatherland Liberation War the People's Army has been steeled and has accumulated rich experience in the course of actual battles and has made much progress qualitatively and numerically. All these successes are attributable to the fact that the People's Army enjoys unanimous support of the entire nation because it was formed with the fine sons and daughters of the Korean people and because the war it carries on is a righteous war of liberation to defend the interests of the country and the people.

Question: What do you think is the military, political and international significance of the great victory won in the New Year offensive taken by the People's Army in cooperation with the Chinese People's Volunteers?

Answer: The great victory scored in the third stage of the war—from the 1st to the 3rd operation—by the People's Army fighting shoulder to shoulder with the Chinese People's Volunteers is of great military and political significance.

The enemy who invaded the area north of the Chongchon River attempted to drive our People's Army to the Amnok River at one stroke. The most arrogant butcher MacArthur prattled that he would occupy the whole of Korea before "Christmas" and get his men back home.

Extolling MacArthur's wild plan, the US imperialists and their satellite states jumped at our country licking their lips to have a share in the division of Korean territory. However, the aggressor army of the US imperialists and its mercenary troops lost as many as over 100,000 men in the counterattack by our courageous People's Army and Chinese People's Volunteers and fled in panic to the south of the Han River.

As a result of our victories the morale of the enemy has declined and their internal contradictions further deepened. They are at odds with each other, shifting the blame to one another, and they are splitting. On the contrary, our army's morale is higher, the unity of democratic camp solidier, the international support to the Korean people stronger, and our people's faith in victory greater than ever. Hatred for the enemy is stronger among our people who witnessed with their own eyes the brutalities of the enemy during the temporary retreat.

So, all conditions are now fully ripe that we can win victory in the great Fatherland Liberation War without fail.

Question: How is reconstruction work carried on in the areas liberated from the temporary occupation by the enemy? And, how are the people mobilized for the victorious end of the Fatherland Liberation War?

Answer: In many liberated areas the organs of people's government, political parties and social organizations destroyed by the enemy's atrocities have been almost all restored and the people are out as one in their effort to rebuild the destroyed railways and roads and provide provisions so as to ensure wartime transport and supply of more food to the People's Army. At the same time, they are working energetically to increase the production of war supplies and vigorously making the preparations for spring sowing, with a resolve to ensure grain production at the prewar level.

Upholding the policy of the Government of the Republic on stabilizing the people's life, all the people are taking an active part in rehabilitating and rearranging the destroyed houses, factories, and

cultural institutions and relieving refugees and looking after orphans.

In a word, all the Korean people are all out to completely liberate the whole of Korea and achieve final victory in the war.

Question: How are the activities of the people's guerrillas carried on in the areas under enemy control at present?

Answer: In the areas which are not yet liberated from enemy occupation, the people's guerrilla actions are widespread. In the course of battles every guerrilla group has grown into a large unit.

The guerrillas operating in North and South Kyongsang Provinces have grown from a force of a few hundred troops into a large unit with several thousand and are now active around Taegu; those in North and South Jolla Provinces centring on Mt. Jiri have become a large combined unit. In North and South Chungchong Provinces guerrilla units are fighting fiercely around Taejon.

Though the enemy is making an attempt to "mop up" guerrillas by mobilizing several divisions, they will never be able to check their vigorous activities.

At present guerrillas are widening the area of their activities daily under the active support and assistance from the people in these areas, and in some districts they have established liberated areas covering several sub-counties or several counties.

Question: What do you think of the movement to resist US aggression and aid Korea, protect our homes and defend our motherland now widespread in China?

Answer: This movement waged by the Chinese people on a nationwide scale is further inspiring the Korean people with confidence in victory. As long as nearly 500 million fraternal Chinese people support the Korean people, we have no doubt that we will drive out any force of aggression.

The Chinese people's movement to resist US aggression and aid

Korea, protect their homes and defend their motherland is of great significance not only in the liberation struggle of the Korean people but also in winning peace in Asia and the rest of the world.

That is why the Korean people are greatly encouraged by this movement. They are convinced that if they fight in firm unity with the fraternal peoples of the Soviet Union and China and the peace-loving people the world over they will attain the freedom and independence of the country and defend world peace.

LET US PRODUCE MORE WEAPONS FOR THE FRONT

Talk with the Workers of Factory No. 65

February 17, 1951

The workers of Factory No. 65 have done a great deal of work. They not only preserved their machines, equipment and skilled workers well even during the difficult period of retreat, but have rehabilitated and reorganized most of the factory during the short period following their return from the retreat. Now they are manufacturing arms and ammunition. When I see you, the workers of this factory, striving to send more arms and ammunition to the front, I am more convinced than ever of the victory of our cause.

I am greatly satisfied with the fact that all workers, technicians and office employees of this factory are carrying on with their task successfully with boundless loyalty to the Party, the country and the people.

The situation at the front is turning in our favour now. Officers and men of our heroic People's Army have driven away the enemy to the south of the 38th Parallel from the northern half of Korea which they had invaded. They are now following up this success brilliantly.

Our people, however, must prepare for a prolonged and arduous war, if they are to win ultimately by wiping out the US imperialists and their henchmen.

In an attempt to recover from their defeat and attain their aim of aggression at any cost, the US imperialists and their lackeys are

sending large reinforcements to the front to escalate the war. So our Party has called on all its members and the working people to be fully prepared for a long-drawn-out war.

It is important in this context to accelerate the production of arms and ammunition. The soldiers of the People's Army at the front are now crying for more weapons and ammunition.

In meeting this demand, the workers of this factory have a very important role to play. Whether a large amount of arms and ammunition is sent to the front or not depends on the efforts of the workers of this factory. The struggle for arms and ammunition is the struggle for an earlier ultimate victory of the Fatherland Liberation War. Keeping in mind the weighty and honourable task you should strive to raise the quality as well as the quantity of arms and ammunition.

The immediate task for Factory No. 65 is to increase the production of mortars and sub-machine guns.

Mortars are powerful weapons suitable to the mountainous terrains in our country. Also it is easy to manufacture them because they are simple in structure.

This factory should concentrate on the manufacture of mortars. Even if you have to reassign the factory's machine operators you must do it in such a way that all the machines in the mortar shop are operated to increase the production of mortars. At the same time, malfunctioning guns and those captured should be repaired and sent to the front.

A sub-machine gun suits the physique of Koreans, and is almost as powerful as a machine gun in short-range firing. The soldiers of the People's Army fighting at the front say that they find it the best.

The factory should launch a vigorous campaign for technical innovations, increase the rate of equipment operation and thus produce more sub-machine guns and double the output of their barrels in particular. We must have these barrels in reserve to replace worn-out ones promptly.

In order to increase the production of arms and ammunition you must maintain the equipment with greater care.

This is the way to increase the rate of operation of equipment and normalize production. The factory should have a preventive maintenance programme and implement it strictly. You should thus prevent accidents and maximize the utilization of machines. In particular, you must take stringent measures to keep precision machines such as those in the screwgrinder compartment of the tools shop away from moisture and take good care of them.

It is important for workers to handle their equipment responsibly with the attitude of masters. Workers are the owners of machines and equipment, and it is they and none other that operate them and turn out products. So these can be maintained properly only when the workers are aroused to voluntary enthusiasm. The factory should intensify political and ideological education among the workers so that they value their machines and equipment like the apple of their eye, and observe technical regulations voluntarily and become fully versed in handling their equipment.

Also, machines and equipment should be arranged rationally and utilized better.

The drive for technical innovation should be spread widely.

The reserve for increased production lies mainly in technical innovation. Technical innovation can make the work easier and increase labour productivity. Technical innovation is absolutely necessary in coping with current manpower shortage as well as raising the rate of utilization of equipment in the factory. Every worker and technician in the factory must strive to adopt advanced techniques and help to develop the movement for invention and rationalization on a large scale.

Since the technical innovation movement is meant to replace outdated techniques with advanced ones, it is necessary to combat passivism and mysticism about technique, if the movement is to be successful. Officials of the factory must wage a relentless ideological struggle against all evil practices which hamper technical innovations by clinging to outdated techniques and experience. They must actively encourage and promote technical innovation schemes of the workers.

Workers and technicians should also help and learn from each other and continue to renovate production equipment and processes by stepping up creative cooperation between them.

The factory should set their targets for technological development properly and set about introducing technical innovation first in jobs that are backbreaking and labour-consuming. In view of the acute manpower shortage in the factory, it would be a good idea to begin with a technical innovation movement, say, to let a man handle many machines.

Materials and tools should be provided properly.

Supplying materials in time is no easy job under the difficult wartime conditions. Of course, the state will provide the factory with materials needed for arms production on a preferential basis. But the factory leadership should organize the supply of materials meticulously so that there is no stoppage of arms production on account of material shortage. Besides, materials should be stored and handled in a responsible way lest the workers waste the valuable assets of the state.

You should meet your own demand for tools by organizing their production properly. If you are to do this you must lay solid foundations for their production. The factory should utilize the existing facilities for manufacturing tools to the maximum and at the same time increase tools production capacity by reinforcing the facilities for the purpose. Fine workers should be assigned to this job and skilled workers encouraged to settle down to this work.

The problem of acute manpower shortage should be tackled.

The factory is said to be short of manpower because many of its young workers are away fighting. Unless this shortage is overcome soon, production will suffer in these times of war.

The key to the solution of this acute problem lies in tapping manpower reserves within the factory itself by improving labour management. The factory should examine the distribution of its work force, concentrate it in the productive areas, organize work rationally and encourage the workers to voluntary enthusiasm. In particular, a

campaign should be launched among the workers to do in addition the share of work left behind by their comrades now fighting at the front, to work in the right spirit of destroying the enemy—US imperialism. This will solve the acute problem of manpower shortage to a considerable degree.

The state will provide this factory with some of the necessary manpower. A step has been taken to recall the technicians and skilled workers who went to the front from this factory. They will be back soon. Some additional labourers can be recruited. So you must be prepared to receive the new additions.

One of the important tasks before this factory is to train technical personnel well.

If we are to manufacture high-quality weapons and develop the ordnance industry on the lines of new technology, we must have many technicians and specialists equipped with the progressive ideology and modern technology.

Factory No. 65 should be developed into a base for training technicians and specialists needed for the progress of our ordnance industry. For the present an evening college should be set up as a branch school of the Kim Chaek Polytechnical Institute. The students enrolled should be selected from among those people who have been tempered in the flames of war and should be trained to become excellent technical cadres of the nation. Factory officials should guide and help the evening college responsibly, taking particular care to provide students with every necessary condition for studying so that they have no inconvenience. The factory should appoint technicians trained by it to the posts of chief engineers and deputy managers of its workshops.

These large-scale training programmes should be accompanied by a radical improvement in the skill and technical know-how of the workers. At present the low level of their efficiency keeps them from attaining greater success in arms production. Technological study and skill imparting should be encouraged among the workers so that everyone can master his job and raise his technical level to the next

higher grade as quickly as possible. Great efforts should be directed to training a large number of workers skilled in tools production in particular.

The factory should be guarded well with heightened revolutionary vigilance.

While attempting an adventurous offensive at the front, the enemy is now sending spies, saboteurs and other subversive elements into the northern half of Korea to harass our rear and undermine our ranks from within. Reactionary elements already lurking in the northern half of Korea are also working to frustrate wartime production and make the people uneasy. So, if we do not intensify revolutionary vigilance, there will be irretrievable consequences.

Party organizations within the factory should intensify ideological education among the employees to enable them to detect and quash promptly any subversive and sabotaging activity on the part of the enemy.

The factory should tighten its security. It should organize its own troop of armed guards to defend itself firmly from hostile encroachment.

It must take stringent measures to protect itself from attacks by rampant US imperialist air pirates. You should plant many trees around the factory so as to camouflage it well. Shelters should be provided for employees and an air defence force posted near the factory. Any other step necessary to protect it from the enemy's bombing should be taken thoroughly.

Supply service for the workers should be improved.

It is the main duty of factory officials to do supply service well and enable the workers to apply themselves to production without the least inconvenience.

Officials of the factory should pay a deep attention to improving the dietary standard of the workers.

The dining hall should be well equipped, and the quality of food raised. If only they make efforts, the leadership personnel can raise the dietary standard as much as they want to. You can sprout the beans

supplied by the state, cook and spice them or curdle them for the workers. The workers of this ordnance factory should also be supplied daily with twenty grammes of cooking oil.

In order to feed the workers better, the factory should make sideline efforts properly on its own. I will see to it that the state provides it with land and a state-owned stock farm needed for its sideline economy. You should manage them well and supply workers adequately with vegetables, meat and various other non-staple food.

Factory officials should also strive to satisfy the need of the workers for houses, dormitories, bathrooms and other service facilities.

The existing dormitory is not too good. It must be replaced with new buildings which should be scattered at the sunny foot of the mountain. The bathrooms, barber's shops and other service facilities should be well arranged lest the workers should have any inconvenience in their day-to-day lives, getting their hair cut and having a bath regularly. Special attention should be paid to looking after the women workers who constitute a large section of the factory's work force.

Efforts should be made to promote the health of the workers.

A night rest home should be set up at the factory to let the workers rest there at night after the day's work. Many workers should be sent to the state rest homes and holiday homes.

The clinic at the factory should be enlarged into a hospital to improve medical aid for the workers. The state will have to send more doctors and supply plenty of medicine and instruments to the hospital.

The workers are not only the most revolutionary but also the most cultured class. Conditions for a cultural life should be provided well for the workers to be always cheerful in and out of work, reading, singing and dancing even in the raging flames of war. It will be a good idea to develop amateur art activity widely among the workers from now on. Writers and artists shall be sent to the factory, if necessary, to help in this activity.

If the accounts of heroic struggles of workers of this factory are strung together, it will be a fine collection of great educative value. A

film should be made about their heroic struggles to be shown, after we have won the war, to the people and the rising generation. Also, after the Fatherland Liberation War, the machines which helped so much in arms production should be exhibited in a museum to propagate widely the achievements of our working class during the war.

I firmly believe that in the future, too, as in the past, all the employees of Factory No. 65 will raise the quality and quantity of weapons for the front, by fully displaying patriotic devotion and mass heroism. Thus they will contribute greatly to the ultimate victory in the Fatherland Liberation War.

PROCLAMATION

February 24, 1951

The US imperialist aggressor army and the traitor Syngman Rhee and his clique are now on the brink of collapse and are growing more brutal and rampant as they are hit harder by the People's Army and driven closer to their doom.

The enemy is resorting to every means of infiltrating spies and secret agents into our ranks. In an attempt to damage the prestige of the People's Army and to break the close ties between the army and the people, the puppet army soldiers disguised as men of the People's Army have been infiltrating into the liberated areas and raping women, killing people and plundering their property.

In order to encourage all citizens to expose and crush these moves of the enemy with the highest degree of vigilance, I issue the following proclamation:

1. All citizens, without exception, shall be strictly forbidden to hide or offer lodgings to strangers without permission of local government organs.

2. Citizens shall be forbidden to deliver means of transport and foodstuffs without permission of local government organs or an application in writing.

3. Soldiers travelling about without bearing identification cards or passes shall be reported immediately to the patrol headquarters or the interior services, which in turn shall investigate them and escort them to the authorities concerned.

4. Persons who violate this Proclamation shall be dealt with according to the wartime law.

CENTRAL TASKS OF PARTY POLITICAL WORK IN THE PEOPLE'S ARMY

**Speech Delivered at the Meeting of the Chiefs of the Political
Departments of Korean People's Army Corps and Divisions**

March 6, 1951

Comrades,

The Korean people's great Fatherland Liberation War against the US imperialist invaders and their stooges, the traitorous Syngman Rhee clique, has been going on for nine months now.

At the first stage of this war the heroic People's Army frustrated their surprise invasion, switched over to the counteroffensive, and pressed the enemy into a narrow sector in North and South Kyongsang Provinces; the second stage was marked by the temporary strategic retreat which was forced on us by the massive landing in the Inchon area made by the US imperialists who brought in even their satellite troops under the signboard of the UN, to say nothing of all their own aggressive forces in the Pacific area; now we find ourselves at the third stage, having repelled by another counteroffensive the enemy who invaded the northern half to the south of the 38th Parallel, and making solid preparations for the ultimate triumph in the war.

The situation at the front is now turning in our favour. Having liberated the area of the north completely from the enemy's temporary occupation, the People's Army seized the initiative in battles in close cooperation with the Chinese People's Volunteers, and is dealing a crushing blow at the US imperialist invaders.

Today our people and the officers and men of the People's Army who have risen up in the righteous Fatherland Liberation War are performing their noble historic mission in good faith, convinced of victory, and in an indomitable fighting spirit. The officers and men of the People's Army are fully displaying lofty patriotism and unparalleled mass heroism in fierce battles against the enemy and firmly defending the people's democratic system.

In the course of the war the People's Army has grown stronger. Many new People's Army units have been formed and sent to the front, and the Workers' Party of Korea has formed its organizations in all army units. This has increased the combat efficiency of the People's Army tremendously.

Now even the US imperialist aggressors cannot but admit that the People's Army is formidable and that they will be unable to win the war on the strength of "technical superiority" alone.

Nevertheless, the brutal invaders are still persisting in their attempt to realize their aggressive design on Korea. The enemy is regrouping and reinforcing in an effort to launch a massive offensive.

In this situation we must anticipate a large campaign to counter the enemy and must be fully prepared to cope with a long-drawn-out war. We must never rest content with our success and fight stubbornly for the ultimate victory with a firm determination to wipe out the US imperialist aggressors.

If we are to win the Fatherland Liberation War ultimately, we must improve Party political work in the People's Army. This is very important.

Now I am going to talk to you on a few problems in improving Party political work in the People's Army.

First, you must bring home to every soldier the righteous character of the Fatherland Liberation War and the justness of our cause.

Only when they understand them clearly, can they display matchless heroism in battles and defend the country at the cost of their blood.

The Korean people's Fatherland Liberation War is a just war to defend the independence and freedom of the country from US

imperialist invasion and a sacred war to safeguard the peace and security of the world. That is why the Korean people and the People's Army have stood up as one in the sacred fight for the independence and freedom of the country with a burning hatred and hostility against the aggressors.

Because of the righteousness of the war waged by our people and the justness of our cause, the socialist countries and the world's peace-loving people are giving active support and moral and material aid to the Korean people, protesting and denouncing the US imperialists for their aggression on Korea and launching a vigorous movement against their aggressive war.

The war waged by the US imperialists is an unjust, aggressive war in every respect. Dreaming of world domination, they have provoked this piratic aggression on our country to turn the whole of Korea into their colony. For this reason, ever since the provocation of the war they have met with the heroic resistance of the Korean people and a concerted opposition from the peace-loving people all over the world. So they are doomed to failure. This is a law of historical development. History shows that even most brutal and powerful aggressors have never been able to conquer a people who, with a clear understanding of the justness of their cause, stood up as one against the enemy.

In the past the anti-Japanese guerrillas fought an arduous and bloody war for 15 long years against the most brutal and reactionary Japanese imperialist aggressors. In an attempt to wipe out the anti-Japanese guerrillas, the Japanese imperialists launched large-scale "mopping-up" operations by mobilizing their Kwantung Army one million strong, while at the same time resorting to all sorts of political stratagems. But they could never stamp out the anti-Japanese guerrillas. The genuine Korean communists fought the Japanese imperialists to the last with a single desire to win the country's independence, determined to lay down their lives in battle rather than live in slavery under Japanese imperialism. They destroyed the Japanese imperialists and at last achieved national liberation.

The decisive factor in the outcome of a war lies not in the weapons or numerical strength of an army but in the spiritual and moral calibre of the soldiers and people participating in the war. In other words, the fate of a war is decided by the soldiers' and people's awareness of the validity of their cause and by the enthusiasm with which they fight.

Political workers must give the officers and men of the People's Army a clear understanding of the righteous character and purpose of our war so that they devote their all to the struggle for the ultimate victory in the war.

Second, you should consolidate the Party organizations newly formed in the units and raise the vanguard role of the Party members.

In October last year, the Political Committee of the Party Central Committee decided on forming Party organizations in all units in order to strengthen Party guidance of the People's Army and improve its political work in the army. Consolidating these Party organizations and enhancing the role of its membership in every way is of great significance in increasing the combat efficiency of the People's Army and guaranteeing victory in battles.

In order to strengthen Party organizations in the army and raise their function and role, it is necessary, above all, to have fine people in the Party leadership bodies at all levels.

Only when Party leadership bodies are built up with hard-core members, can Party organizations play their part to the full. In the People's Army there are many fine Party members who have experienced at first hand oppression and exploitation by capitalists and landlords in the years of Japanese imperialism, and since liberation actively participated in the fierce class struggle to carry out the agrarian and other democratic reforms and in the work for the rehabilitation and development of the devastated economy and have been tempered in battles against the US imperialist aggressors. They are excellent Party members who have a strong hatred for the class enemies and are ready to lay down their lives for the Party and the people's state power. Party leadership bodies at all levels in the People's Army should consist of such excellent members.

In the People's Army, regimental and battalion Party committees should be well composed and, in particular, the cell, the Party's basic unit, strengthened.

If the Party cell is to be strengthened, it must have a competent chairman and his role must increase. Only then will the men truly respect him and report everything, both the problems related to their military duties and personal affairs, to the Party organization and fight more courageously, with faith in the Party organization. And only then can the company unite firmly with a single idea and will and become a revolutionary unit permeated with comradeship. So great attention should be paid to selecting qualified chairmen of Party cells and enhancing their role.

In order to strengthen Party organizations at all levels, the higher bodies should strengthen their guidance to the lower units.

Building up solidly Party leadership bodies at all levels is only the first step towards strengthening Party organizations. The next step to be taken following the formation of the leadership bodies with fine people is to help them regularly in their work and lead them forward. This is the way to raise their political and practical levels and enhance the function and role of the Party organizations.

Even in difficult battle situations chiefs of political departments should often go down to the units and elements to acquaint themselves fully with the work of their subordinates and help them properly.

Since Party organizations are new to the People's Army, quite a few of its political workers are little experienced in Party work and are at a low level. Chiefs of political departments, therefore, should teach their subordinates in various forms and methods—short courses, exchange of experience and the like. You should teach them first how to plan the cell work, and then how to prepare for Party meetings and conduct them, how to give the members assignments and review their implementation, and how to work among people. In this way they will be trained to do Party work on their own in any battle situation.

Close attention should also be paid to training hard-core elements of the Party cell.

Training the nucleus of the Party is of tremendous significance in strengthening our Party. If they train their hard-core elements and raise their role, Party cells will grow stronger; and when all the Party cells are stronger, the whole Party will be more powerful. If a large number of hard-core elements are trained at the cells, the combat efficiency of the unit will increase, and the unit will always win the battle.

Party cells should steadily expand the ranks of the hard-core elements the existing ones training new ones, and the new ones still others.

Party organization should strengthen the Party life of its members and raise their vanguard role.

The Party cell should educate, guide and control all its members to help them to participate in its meetings zealously, make creative suggestions actively and thoroughly implement the decisions adopted there. And the cell should give assignments to all its members, help them to fulfil them thoroughly and sum up their results in time. Every Party member should thus be always on the move.

When the organizational life of Party members is strengthened in this way, they will play the vanguard role in performing the combat mission of their units, and then the soldiers outside the Party, too, will follow their example and carry out whatever difficult combat missions with credit. Political department chiefs, therefore, should strive to consolidate Party organizations, strengthen the membership's Party life and enhance their vanguard role in carrying out their combat missions.

Third, the sense of responsibility and role of the political workers in the People's Army should be enhanced.

They are entrusted with the very heavy responsibility of increasing the combat efficiency of their units and guaranteeing the implementation of their combat missions politically. In other words, the main duty of the army political workers is to work among the soldiers properly and help them to acquit themselves well of the honourable duties given by the Party, the country and the people.

Commander's order alone is not at all enough to win a battle. If a combat is to be successful, the commander must organize the battle

well, and at the same time the men should be imbued with the aim of fighting and the importance of their mission by means of efficient political work among them. Only when the soldiers fully realize the justness of their cause and clearly understand how important their combat missions are in fulfilling the fighting task of the unit, will they fight courageously against the enemy and perform their missions in good faith. Accordingly, we can say that the political workers in the army hold as important a place as military commanders do.

In those years of anti-Japanese armed struggle, the political commissars in the guerrilla army played a tremendous role. When attacking the enemy, they always stood at the head of the unit and inspired the men to victory; when retreating or on the march, they protected and took care of their men at the rear of the column. When they saw their political commissar at the head of the attacking force, the men assaulted the enemy with redoubled courage; when they found him at the rear in retreat or on a difficult march, they felt reassured and overcame difficulties and hardships with fortitude.

Political department chiefs should enhance political workers' sense of responsibility and role in every way, bearing in mind that that is a basic guarantee for greater combat efficiency of their units and for victory.

What, then, are the tasks of political workers in the People's Army?

The first and foremost task is to conduct properly the political and ideological education of the soldiers.

This is the most important duty of the political workers.

In political and ideological education, primary attention should be paid to equipping the soldiers firmly with our Party's line and policy.

Party line and policy are the only guide to all our activities and lives. Only when they are equipped with them, can the soldiers think and act according to the Party's idea and intention and carry out its strategic and tactical policy. Army political workers should induce the soldiers to study harder the Party line and policy and, in particular, imbue every soldier with them correctly as soon as they are adopted from time to time.

Political workers should teach the soldiers clearly the character and mission of the People's Army and inspire them with a firm conviction of victory.

The People's Army, made up of the fine sons and daughters of the workers, peasants and other working people, is the genuine army of the people and our Party's revolutionary armed force which has inherited the brilliant revolutionary traditions of the anti-Japanese armed struggle.

It is the historic mission of the People's Army to defend the country and the democratic system from the enemy's encroachment, liberate the suffering people in the south from the yoke of US imperialism and reunify the country. In contrast, the army of an imperialist country is a reactionary army to protect the interests of a handful of the exploiting classes—the landlords and capitalists, oppress and exploit the workers, peasants and other working people, the overwhelming majority of the population, invade and oppress other countries and peoples.

Political workers should clearly explain to the soldiers what the People's Army is and who they are fighting for, by comparing it with the imperialist aggressive army. They should thus convince all officers and men of the People's Army that it is a new type of revolutionary army fundamentally different from imperialist armies, so that they defend at the cost of their lives the Party, country and people from enemy aggression.

You should also instil in the minds of the servicemen a firm belief that the enemy will be inevitably defeated and that we will triumph without fail, and encourage them to strive for the sacred cause of destroying the enemy.

And the political workers should educate the officers and men of the People's Army to hate the enemy.

Only when they have a bitter hatred for the enemy, can the soldiers fight heroically against the US imperialists and their stooges.

What is important in inculcating hatred for the enemy on the soldiers is to give them a clear idea of the aggressive nature of US imperialism and its atrocities.

The US imperialists are the sworn enemy of our people. They

started invading our country a long time ago and also plundered its wealth a great deal. When our country won freedom, the US imperialists sneaked into south Korea under the cloak of “liberator”, enforced fascist military government and dissolved all the people’s committees set up on the initiative of all the people, arresting, imprisoning, or killing a large number of the south Korean people.

The US imperialists provoked the criminal war of aggression against the northern half of Korea in order to make our country their colony. And ever since they have been employing all sorts of brutal methods unprecedented in the history of war. They have devastated our country by bombing peaceful towns, villages, schools, hospitals and cultural establishments without discrimination. They are strafing and slaughtering even children playing in the field and old men on the road.

In the areas they occupied temporarily during our retreat in particular, the enemy massacred innocent people in a brutal manner unparalleled in history. As you know well, the mass slaughter in Sinchon committed by the US imperialists is a glaring evidence of the brutal nature of these cannibals. In Sinchon County alone they massacred tens of thousands of people. They burnt or buried innocent people alive, even ripped the abdomens of pregnant women and mutilated the embryos, allegedly to exterminate the “Reds”. These atrocities are beyond all description. The US imperialist beasts snatched children from their mothers, locked them up in a storehouse and gave them gasoline when the thirsty children were crying for water. They thrilled with delight at the sight of the children doubled up and writhing in anguish from drinking gasoline. On top of it, the fiends showered gasoline over the victims and burnt them up. How appalling!

The US imperialist aggressors perpetrated such atrocities in the whole area of their temporary occupation in the north. It would be impossible to enumerate them all. We cannot simply keep their brutalities in record as a historical document or hear of them. We must take a thousandfold revenge upon the US imperialist aggressors and avenge the massacred.

Political workers should explain to the soldiers with vivid facts the

nefarious atrocities committed by the US imperialists so that they will wipe out these fiends.

The army men should be educated better to have a clear understanding of the reactionary nature of the puppet regime of Syngman Rhee, the faithful lackey of the US imperialists, and the exploitative character of the landlord and capitalist classes.

The next task for the political workers is to educate the soldiers properly to establish iron discipline.

Discipline is the life and soul of an army and the source of its combat efficiency. A well-disciplined army will always triumph; an ill-disciplined army will never avoid defeat.

The military and political situation now in our country requires the People's Army to strengthen its discipline. We are fighting the US imperialist aggressors, the boss of world reaction, and the troops from their fifteen satellite states. But there are many recruits in the People's Army at present. So, if we are to defeat the enemy, we must have rigorous discipline in the army. Discipline should be all the more rigid in a difficult combat situation.

In order to establish iron discipline and order in the People's Army, the barrack service regulations, disciplinary regulations, garrison regulations and other regulations and manuals should be brought home to the officers and men so that they obey them thoroughly in their daily routine.

The discipline of the People's Army is a revolutionary discipline based on the soldiers' awareness in all respects, unlike the coercive discipline of the capitalist armies maintained by means of the club. Political workers should fully explain to the soldiers the purpose and importance of establishing discipline and encourage them to observe it voluntarily. In particular, soldiers should be taught to obey and implement the orders and instructions of their superiors to the letter.

Further, the political workers should work in unity with military commanders and help them well in their job.

Some political workers seem to neglect consultation with military commanders on their work at present. This is not proper. Political workers should always discuss everything with the commanding

officers—problems ranging from the combat readiness of their units to the soldiers' daily routine—and solve them by mutual cooperation.

Political workers should give prominence to military commanders, ensure their work politically and help them to promptly rectify their mistakes, if any. Political workers should help commanding officers to take correct decisions and see that the Party ensures that the soldiers carry out the combat orders of their commanding officers. Then, the commanders will be encouraged to rely on the political organs and Party organizations in their work, and their comradesly unity will be promoted.

Political workers should take loving care of the soldiers as their own flesh and blood and look after them with all sincerity.

The servicemen are precious revolutionary comrades whose bloom of youth and lives are dedicated without hesitation to the defence of the country from the invasion by the US imperialists and their lackeys. So treasuring and taking loving care of them with all one's heart is the noble duty and revolutionary ethics of the political workers.

The better the political workers look after the soldiers, the harder will the men strive to apply themselves to their military service without minding the least inconvenience and the more bravely will they fight the enemy in towering spirits. The political workers should bear in mind that their concern for the men's daily lives is not something of a mere supply service but an important political work to unite them closely around the Party with one thought and will.

During the anti-Japanese armed struggle the political workers of the guerrilla army always loved the men and took care of them like their own brothers. When they found exhausted men on a difficult march, they would help them by carrying their packs and weapons for them: when they came to bivouac, they made arrangements for the men to sleep and even took care of the men's footwear meticulously. The political workers in the Anti-Japanese Guerrilla Army regarded it as their natural duty and revolutionary ethics to do all this. The guerrilla army was able to emerge victorious in the long-drawn-out, arduous revolutionary struggle because its ranks were solidly united and permeated with such revolutionary comradeship and ethics.

Political workers in the People's Army should pay close attention to the life of the soldiers just as their forerunners did in the Anti-Japanese Guerrilla Army. They should see to it that the men eat well, sleep comfortably, wear well-fitting uniforms and change their underwear frequently. And they should always go among the men and see carefully if there is not any sick comrade or if there is not anything inconvenient to them. And they should promptly help them to solve their problems, if any. In battles they must take prompt measures to give first aid to the wounded. If the political workers treasure and love the men like their own brothers and look after them kindly, the men will respect and follow them all the more and perform their combat missions without fail however difficult the situation.

Deeply aware of their heavy but honourable duty, the political workers of the People's Army should do their best to raise their sense of responsibility and role.

Fourth, the People's Army units should strengthen the ties with the local Party and government bodies and help them actively in their work.

Officials of Party and government bodies and public organizations have been dispatched to the areas liberated from the temporary occupation of the US imperialist aggressors. They are now very busy with a great deal of work, rehabilitating and rearranging the Party and government organs, exposing and purging hostile elements, stabilizing the people's livelihood, rushing the preparations for farming. These colossal tasks cannot be done properly only by the efforts of the officials from above. The People's Army units, therefore, should give active assistance to the Party and government bodies in the area where they are stationed.

The political workers should intensify the education of soldiers and teach them to love and respect the people, guard their interests thoroughly and strive to stabilize the people's livelihood.

I was told that a certain unit during military training trampled upon growing wheat and barley. This is very bad. Back at your units, you should take prompt measures to prevent the recurrence of such phenomena and help peasants in their farming as much as possible.

People's Army units must also assist the people in their struggle to crush the moves of hostile elements.

During our temporary retreat the US imperialist aggressors brought back the landlords, capitalists and other class enemies who had fled to the south after liberation and slaughtered innocent people at random. When they took to flight they left behind many spies, subversive elements and saboteurs in the north. The class enemies who had no time to escape, encountering the sweeping re-advance of the People's Army, hid themselves in mountains or villages. These lurking hostile elements are now engaged in subversion and sabotage in a frantic attempt to overthrow the democratic system in the northern half. So the People's Army units should attack the hostile elements harder, mop them up and boost the morale of the people.

Fifth, energetic efforts should be made to develop the political work and military affairs of the People's Army in conformity with the reality in our country.

This is very urgent today. We are fighting in Korea, not in any other country, and involved in this war are the very Koreans. Therefore, conducting and developing political and military activities to suit our specific conditions is an important guarantee for victory in the Fatherland Liberation War.

At present, some workers try to copy foreign ways of political work rather than do it in conformity with the preparedness and characteristics of our soldiers. You must not imitate any foreign style of political work. They are not suitable to us.

The political workers should do their work in various forms and ways to suit our specific scene, the ideas, emotions and psychological makeup of our servicemen. We have the rich experience gained in political work during the anti-Japanese armed struggle and peaceful construction after liberation. And we have the excellent experience acquired in political work at the time of the first counteroffensive, experience of the motivation workers who, shouting encouraging slogans on the firing line, inspired the soldiers to victory. The political workers should study and develop our good experience of political

work to get the soldiers fully prepared politically and ideologically.

In military affairs, too, we should study and develop our nation's war experience properly and adopt tactics suitable to our country's specific conditions. Our soldiers differ from foreign soldiers in physique. And there are a number of special features in our terrain and climatic conditions. That is why we must not follow foreign combat regulations and tactics dogmatically; we must work out even a combat plan in keeping with our specific conditions. The political workers should educate the soldiers energetically in such a way that they will value our own things and study them deeply and strive to develop them further.

In conclusion, the People's Army units should strengthen friendship and solidarity with the Chinese People's Volunteers.

The Communist Party and people of China have sent the Volunteers composed of their fine sons and daughters to help the Korean people in their just Fatherland Liberation War against the US imperialist aggressors, under the banner of "Resist US aggression and aid Korea, protect our homes and defend our motherland!" At present, the Chinese People's Volunteers are fighting well at the front assisting the People's Army and in the rear helping the people actively in their work. We are very much grateful to them.

In the past, too, the Korean and Chinese peoples fought shoulder to shoulder against the Japanese imperialists and their stooges. During the anti-Japanese armed struggle the genuine Korean communists helped the Chinese people in their anti-Japanese struggle at the cost of their blood, and a large number of Korea's sons and daughters shed blood in the Chinese people's civil war against the Jiang Jieshi clique. The Chinese soil is dyed red with the blood of the Korean revolutionaries.

As in the past, so also in the future, the People's Army units should strengthen internationalist friendship and solidarity with the Chinese People's Volunteers and in close cooperation with them wipe out the US imperialist aggressors everywhere.

I am convinced that you will improve Party political work, increase the combat efficiency of your units and win greater victories in battles against the enemy.

THE STRUGGLE FOR FOOD IS A STRUGGLE FOR THE COUNTRY AND FOR VICTORY AT THE FRONT

Talk with Peasants in South Phyongan Province

March 15, 1951

The situation at the front is now turning in our favour. This brightens the prospect of ultimate victory for the Korean people in their righteous war.

When the US imperialists invaded our country, they thought they could intimidate the Korean people by brutal bombing and naval gunfire, and subjugate our country and nation by blitz warfare. But the last nine months of war has shown that not only they failed to conquer our country and people, but are facing an ignominious defeat due to the counterattacks of the heroic People's Army and the Chinese People's Volunteers.

Why are the US imperialist aggressive forces, the so-called "most powerful" in the world with formidable naval and air fleets and superior technical equipment who were desperate to dominate the whole world, now suffering a shameful defeat at the hands of our People's Army which is not even half as well equipped, and is only three years old? It is because the Korean people, now masters of their own destiny, are fighting a just liberation war, defending the independence and honour of their country from the encroachment of the foreign imperialist plunderers, under the support and encouragement of the world's freedom-loving people; because all our People's Army soldiers are displaying unparalleled courage and heroism in the life-and-death

struggle against the enemy, clearly aware of the purpose and character of the war, and bearing in mind that the destinies of the country, the people and the coming generations are to be decided in this war. Our forefathers left their posterity in a sorry plight as colonial slaves of imperialism but we will never become colonial slaves again; we will hand down a bright future and freedom to our coming generations.

For the US imperialist aggressor troops, it is a different question altogether. They are engaged in a predatory war and so do not know why they are shedding blood at the Korean front, and whom they are fighting for. They are hired soldiers of imperialism. They are not fighting for the liberty and independence of their country, but are merely being used as an instrument by US monopolists to invade other territories and conquer other nations.

That is why the US imperialist aggressors can never display as great heroism and patriotic devotion as the soldiers of our People's Army. Nor can they win such a support of the people and international encouragement as our People's Army does. Instead, they are being denounced, hated and cursed by people in their own country and all over the world as aggressors, as provokers of a new war.

Today, we have fulfilled every condition required for victory. During the last nine months of fierce fighting our people have united closer round the Workers' Party of Korea and the Government of the Republic, have overcome all grim trials and are firmly convinced of victory. At the same time, the combat efficiency of the People's Army has increased tremendously. The morale of this army at present is sky-high. The prestige of the Republic has also risen considerably both at home and abroad.

In contrast, the nine months of war has shown up growing contradictions, conflicts and confusion, in the enemy camp. And the morale of the enemy forces has fallen very low.

The favourable situation and sure prospect of victory, however, do not mean that we can take our success for granted. It must be won through organized efforts.

We have many difficulties and hardships. Only by breaking through

all these obstacles can we emerge victorious. To this end, the peasants should supply more provisions to the state and the army, increase their support to the front and repair roads and bridges in time to ensure transport of war supplies without a hitch. On the principle of mutual help and self-reliance, they should stabilize their livelihood, consolidate the home front and proceed with this year's spring sowing successfully.

We are going to conduct spring sowing this year under the difficult conditions of war. A large number of men in the countryside have taken up arms and are away at the front to defend the freedom and honour of the country. During his temporary occupation, the enemy looted all seeds and cattle he could get hold of and destroyed farm implements in large quantities. The Hungnam Fertilizer Factory, the source of fertilizer supply in our country, is out of operation on account of barbarous enemy bombing. This adds to the great difficulties in spring sowing this year. But all this should not make the people sow less area as compared with the previous years. The front and rear need more provisions and industries call for more raw materials. The struggle for food is a struggle for the country and for victory at the front. "Let not an inch of land lie idle and let us produce even a single grain more!" should be the militant slogan of our peasants.

This year's sowing means fighting on a front. A failure at this front would mean a defeat in the war and a success at the sowing front means a victory in the war.

How, then, can we ensure proper sowing in these difficult conditions?

The Government of the Republic has adopted a decision on the measures to ensure the sowing of crops for 1951, and the state is taking every possible step to ensure spring farming. The state is loaning out food grains and seeds to the peasants who have run out of them. The state-run factories and producers' cooperatives are turning out farm implements in large numbers. But this alone will not solve all the problems.

If shortage of manpower, work animals, fertilizer and farm implements is to be overcome, all the people need to display a sense of creativity and enthusiasm, help and cooperate with each other and utilize locally available resources to the maximum.

Shortage of labour for spring sowing should be filled up through a social movement to help the work by enlisting as many rural women as possible and organizing spring ploughing teams of office employees, workers, teachers, students, interior workers and soldiers in the rear. Scarcity of draught animals should be overcome by forming oxen-sharing teams to accommodate and help each other as well as by beginning sowing earlier than usual; scarcity of seeds by lending and borrowing them each other in the spirit of mutual aid; the shortage of fertilizer by producing barnyard manure in large quantities. If, in this way, all the reserves are tapped and creativity is displayed, the task of sowing will be carried out on time without leaving even an inch of land idle.

The patriotic zeal of the peasants and the attitude with which the local people's committees and Party organizations guide the spring farm work and help the peasants would be the deciding factor.

I firmly believe that our peasants will carry out this year's spring sowing successfully, braving whatever difficulties come in their way, and thus hasten victory at the front.

In the nine months of war the people's living conditions have become much worse. Especially, the people who were in the area under the enemy's temporary occupation, are having a hard time. So the Government of the Republic has recently taken a number of measures to stabilize the livelihood of the people. It has set up camps for war victims, orphanages and schools for bereaved children of revolutionaries, is supplying food, distributing relief goods, offering state loans, supplying building materials, lending seeds to war victims. The lives of the people have already been stabilized considerably by such steps in many parts of the country.

Recently the Party and the Government have been taking further steps to increase the production of essential goods and promote goods distribution in order to stabilize the people's livelihood even in the raging war.

Thanks to the measures taken by the Party and the Government, the Ministry of Industry, the Ministry of Commerce, the consumers' and the producers' cooperatives will produce daily necessities in a big way.

The provincially-run factories and producers' cooperatives in particular will be operated actively. The state-owned and consumers' cooperative trading organizations, too, will be rapidly rehabilitated.

Measures taken by the state will not by themselves be adequate to increase production of essential goods and promote goods distribution. This should be supplemented by creative efforts made by all the people and their social movement, and by meticulous organizing work and guidance on the part of local people's committees and Party organizations.

Let me take the case of raw materials for example. Shortage of raw materials is now an obstacle in producing rubber shoes which are in great demand among the people. This is why they are not able to make more rubber shoes. What, then, is the real state of affairs? There are plenty of worn-out rubber shoes. If they are collected through the proper organization of a procurement campaign, a large amount of potential raw material will be obtained.

Another example can be that of salt. They say that they have no salt in Kangso and Nampho. But there are tens of thousands of tons of salt in the salt fields 50-60 *ri* away from these places. If Nampho and Kangso County People's Committees and the state-owned and consumers' cooperative trade organs had planned and organized their work meticulously to stabilize the people's livelihood by giving rein to the creativity of the people, they would not have cried for salt sitting on a mountain of it. Such phenomena are not limited to Kangso or Nampho, but are in evidence in many other districts in various forms.

The solution of such problems depends not only on Government measures but on the people's creativity as well as the efforts of the local people's committees and Party organizations which are to enlist this creativity.

If we give full play to the creativity of the broad masses and organize and guide the work meticulously to implement correctly the Government policy on increasing the production of daily necessities and improving goods distribution, we shall be able to satisfy the wartime demand of the people for daily necessities.

LET US KEEP THE UNIT PERFECTLY READY AND ALERT

**Talk to Soldiers of Unit 657
of the Korean People's Army**

March 17, 1951

You comrades have fought courageously since the very day when the US imperialist aggressors and traitorous Syngman Rhee clique provoked the war, and now are admirably carrying out your honourable combat mission to defend Pyongyang, the revolutionary capital. You achieved splendid feats in the battles to liberate Seoul and Taejon as well as in many other battles. You also overcame difficulties and trials, obtaining weapons, ammunition, food and clothes for yourselves, in your arduous struggle behind enemy lines and encircled and annihilated a large number of the enemy. I would like to offer my thanks to you for your excellent services in the battles during the first counteroffensive and also for the brilliant exploits you performed behind enemy lines during the temporary retreat and re-advance, displaying patriotic devotion and mass heroism.

The present situation at the front is excellent. The units of the People's Army, in close coordination with those of the Chinese People's Volunteers, have liberated the entire northern half of Korea which the enemy occupied temporarily, and they are carrying on successful battles south of the 38th Parallel. The People's Army and guerrilla units are active behind enemy lines, too. Today, the situation is developing decisively in our favour. There is every possibility of our winning final victory.

We have the Workers' Party of Korea, the leading and guiding force of the Korean people, which always leads them and their army to victory and a consolidated home front, The people at home, rallied firmly around the Party, are coming out as one for wartime production to ensure victors in the war, while, at the same time, loving the People's Army as their own flesh and blood and actively supporting them. Thanks to their justified cause and courageous struggle, our people and the People's Army enjoy the unreserved support and encouragement from the peoples of the Soviet Union, China and other fraternal countries and from other peace- loving people the world over.

We are sure to wipe out the US imperialist aggressors and win final victory. You must be convinced that victory is ours and execute your combat assignments more splendidly.

You must never be carried away by the successes already achieved. We must remember that the closer their downfall approaches, the more desperate the enemy become. Having suffered an ignominious defeat militarily and politically in the Korean war, the US imperialists will not quit this war meekly and are running amuck in an effort to realize their aggressive ambition. Therefore, the war may be even more fierce and protracted. You must keep yourselves perfectly ready and alert.

However, your unit is not adequately prepared for action. You are not quick to meet an emergency call, your weapons and equipment are not fully ready and there are quite a few shortcomings in combat organization and training.

Even if you want to win a wrestling game, you should get yourselves fully ready to fight. A People's Army unit fighting the US imperialist aggressors, who are equipped with modern weapons and have a long history of aggression, should be even more prepared. Only when you get your unit always well prepared for action, will you be successful in the fulfilment of your combat assignments in any situation.

Your combat mission is to crush possible invasion on this region by enemy paratroopers or their amphibious troops from the West Sea and strongly defend the west coast and Pyongyang, the democratic capital.

Your unit should make all combat preparations to conform with this task.

Your unit is now situated in an area where large forces of paratroopers may be dropped. You should get ready to fight their airborne forces, and when they start bailing out, destroy them in the air. If some of them reach the ground, you should wipe them out by charging fiercely, giving them no chance to catch their breath.

Proper battle formation is very important in the combat organization of the unit. As for the present battle order, you have only one echelon, which is insufficient for annihilating enemy paratroopers successfully. In case you have to form battle order with only one echelon, you must have a reserve force. In order to lure your forces the enemy may at first drop some of their troops over an area which is not the main dropping zone. In that case, your main force might be diverted there, and you might be unable to wipe out the enemy's main group descending afterward. Therefore, you should have a reserve force, whose duty it would be to crush the enemy troops dropped first, and your main force should destroy its counterpart. The battle order of the unit should be formed in this way. If there is no enemy feint, your reserve can join the main effort to wipe out the enemy.

Battalion defence organization must be coordinated with the operational plan of the regiment within the regimental defence system. Your battalions are now arrayed each in a single echelon; they, too, should have a reserve each, as is the case with the regiment. Battle order should be reorganized in this manner.

It is also important to organize the firing system properly. Heavy machine guns and other small arms should be arrayed in a system capable of concentrating fire on the area of probable invasion by the enemy paratroopers. This firing system must also be able to deliver cross fire all along the front of the defence sector without allowing any defilades. Heavy machine guns are better up on hills. There it will be easy to shoot down the enemy planes at preparatory bombing, troop carriers flying low to drop airborne troops and also paratroopers while falling.

Anti-armour weapons should be so placed as to concentrate their fire on areas where hostile airborne armour action is probable. You have emplaced the anti-tank guns only on one side of the road. This is improper. They should be on both sides to suit the terrain so that enemy's mechanized forces can be destroyed by cross fire. You had better build alternate firing positions to cope with different situations.

The enemy invading by sea should be annihilated on the sea before they are able to land. The area of possible enemy landing should be manned with the main force and covered with cross fire. If the enemy get ashore, they should be wiped out quickly by counterattack.

Defence positions should be reinforced. Then, they will withstand any hostile bombing or gun fire, reduce loss to friendly forces and increase enemy casualties. The enemy will saturate the target area with bombs in preparation for their airborne invasion. You must remember this and fortify your defensive positions.

Adequate measures should be taken to improve the mobility of the unit. Fighting the enemy, whether from the sea or from the air, requires a high degree of mobility. Your unit, in particular, as the second echelon of the division, may be ordered, according to circumstances, to reinforce the units which defend the west coast. A high degree of mobility and secrecy are vital for a task force. Therefore, you should always be well prepared to guarantee the swift movement of the unit.

All the mobile equipment should always be on the alert and the route of counterattack from the position should be well maintained.

Increasing the ability to march is a guarantee for unit mobility. If you are to forestall the enemy, you must move faster than the enemy. During the anti-Japanese armed struggle the guerrillas would cover hundreds of *ri* overnight to strike the enemy and return, appearing now in the east and now in the west in a flash. You should increase your marching ability to do the same.

The unit must have an effective command system and ensure communications over the command network. Your movement, when alerted, led me to think that your command system is not in proper order. A signal from a commander in his post must be able to alert the

entire unit at once. But the commander himself was scurrying about, to move the unit. He cannot lead the unit properly with such a command system. He should rearrange the command system thoroughly so that he can move his unit swiftly without himself moving about.

If the unit is to be commanded satisfactorily, the signalmen should always be well prepared for action. Unless communications are fully guaranteed, one cannot command the battle properly or win it. That is why communication is called the nerve of a unit. Clearly aware of the importance of their duties, the signalmen should always keep radio sets and other signal equipment ready for use at any moment and handle the messages over the command network punctually.

Commanders, too, should themselves be able to handle means of communications. If his radio operator is injured and put out of action, the commander must himself use the radio set to command the battle. Therefore, commanders should be familiar with the use of telephone and wireless communications devices.

Strict observation of secrecy is very important in the use of communications equipment. In this respect, the wire communication is better than the wireless. You should use the radio only in the battle and rely on wire communication in ordinary times.

If the combat efficiency of the unit is to be increased, it is imperative to step up combat training.

Combat training should be carried out as though in actual battle, in your own sector of defence, so as to master the methods necessary for your combat mission and to know your weapons and equipment inside out.

Lectures for staff members and command post exercises should be intensified to raise the working ability of the staff and the commanders' qualifications.

Shooting and anti-aircraft-observation practices should be conducted as well as exercises for cooperation between small units and training in the command of battles. Units should be frequently alerted and manoeuvred in different directions for training purpose. Both the training of the whole unit to familiarize it with its combat mission, and

that of its elements in the performance of their missions over specific terrain, should be given frequently. Special effort should be directed to training in the delivery of anti-aircraft fire to kill enemy paratroopers in the air.

Artillery plays an important part in battle. Artillerymen should have intensive firing practice in different terrain conditions in order to become crack shots and conduct a great deal of their training in coordination with infantry.

Training ought to be conducted on the basis of actual battle experience. Platoon leaders, company and battalion commanders of this unit have taken part in combats and accumulated a wealth of experience since the first days of the war. This experience is very precious and serves as an important asset for increasing the combat capability of the unit. So commanders should study and generalize the useful experience gained in battle and educate the soldiers in a number of combat methods which can be applied to actual fighting.

It is necessary to modify slightly the unit's combat training programme. The training programme should be geared to the unit's specific combat mission and implemented in close context of it.

Vacancies in personnel and shortage of prescribed weapons and equipment should be filled up quickly.

The unit has many comrades who have been to the Raktong River, some of whom are Heroes of the Republic. All of them are the hard core of the unit and the treasure of our Party. So many such comrades in this unit mean that it has great combat efficiency. But the unit has not yet a full complement of men, and also there are many new recruits and men of little combat experience. You should fill up the complement quickly and help the inexperienced men properly to be able to carry out their combat mission on their own as soon as possible.

You should supplement the weapons, ammunition and equipment you are lacking within a short period of time and take good care of the ones you already have. In particular, you should always clean your weapons and keep them in good shape. Cleaning weapons is not only aimed at preserving their effectiveness, but also at keeping them in

readiness to crush the enemy anytime. Therefore, cleaning and keeping the weapons in good order means getting the unit ready for combat. You have good weapons with which you destroyed a large number of enemy troops, while advancing down to the Raktong River. The mortar is a powerful weapon suitable to our mountainous country. It is one that the Americans fear most. The sub-machine gun is also excellent. For a short distance, it is equal to a machine gun. You must take good care of all your weapons as though they were the apple of your eye.

During the anti-Japanese armed struggle the guerrillas often gave up their lives to get a rifle. I was told that you brought all your weapons and equipment with you from the Raktong River breaking through the death line behind the enemy. This is indeed admirable. A soldier has no right to abandon his weapon even at the last moment of his life. A soldier who discards his weapon cannot protect his own life, to say nothing of safeguarding the country and the people. In the future, too, you should always take good care of your weapons and equipment as though they were the apple of your eye and keep them in good shape, so as to fight the enemy at any moment. You should also well preserve those weapons associated with military exploits.

In order to raise the combat capacity of the unit, it is essential to firmly prepare the soldiers politically and ideologically, while stepping up their military-technical preparations in every way.

An important guarantee for increasing the fighting efficiency of the unit is to equip the soldiers with a strong sense of class consciousness and fighting efficiency. Commanders and political workers should always pay primary attention to the work of strengthening political education, so that all the soldiers will be deeply conscious of their mission, and can fight resolutely for the Party and the revolution, for the country and the people.

The class education of the soldiers should also be strengthened. Only when they correctly understand who the class enemy is, hate them implacably and have a firm resolve to destroy them without fail, can they fight them bravely and be boundlessly loyal to the revolution.

During the anti-Japanese armed struggle, whether on the march or

while resting, not to mention during study hours, we explained to the guerrillas why we lived in poverty, who our class enemy was and what we should do to defeat them. Since they knew clearly who their class enemy was and had a high class spirit, the anti-Japanese guerrillas fought courageously against the Japanese imperialists and their stooges, and finally defeated them and liberated the country.

I was told that in the past, some of you, deprived of your lands and houses by the Japanese imperialists and the landlords, were forced to leave your beloved homes and lived in an alien country, maltreated and humiliated in every way. At that time, there were few Koreans who were not oppressed and exploited by the Japanese imperialists, landlords and capitalists. Today the US imperialist aggressors are reducing our towns, villages, schools and hospitals to ashes, and are barbarously slaughtering our dear parents and brothers wherever they go. I suppose many of you have had your families and relatives killed in cold blood by the American imperialists and their lackeys.

Commanders and political workers should convince the soldiers firmly that our class enemies are the US imperialist invaders and their stooges, the traitorous Syngman Rhee clique, landlords and capitalists. Then they all will hate them and have a strong class resolve to wipe out the aggressors and their stooges and reunify the country.

Meanwhile, every soldier should be properly educated so that he will have an indomitable revolutionary fighting spirit to endure any hardship, courage, audacity, stamina and patience and will display mass heroism in battle.

If you are to give the soldiers proper political and ideological education, you should improve the political lectures and carry out the study programme punctually. Political lecture plans should be scrupulously prepared on the basis of the study programme; in particular, they should be specific and closely coordinated with the implementation of the actual combat mission of the unit. In order to improve the quality of the political lecture plans and educate the men successfully, commanders and political workers must study hard.

Lecture plans being prepared for military training should also lay

great emphasis on the ideological education of the men. They must not stress only military and technical aspects, just because they are training plans. They must include not only these aspects, but also explain the need to undergo training and annihilate the enemy.

If soldiers are to be educated properly, Party and Democratic Youth League meetings should be well prepared and held to the purpose.

It is necessary to intensify motivation work among the soldiers. Junior motivation workers must enhance their role, conduct brisk motivation work in a vivid and flexible way, at shooting ranges, training grounds and on the battlefields, and thus increase the men's zeal and morale.

Mass cultural work should also be conducted well among the soldiers. Every soldier should be able to play an instrument and sing songs. In particular, officers should be interested and take part in this work. In the past, commanders of the Anti-Japanese Guerrilla Army would play a flute, dance and sing together with their men during a break. Officers should mix with their men, play instruments, dance and sing. Then, they will be better acquainted with the life of the soldiers and educate them more effectively.

If all the soldiers are well equipped politically and ideologically and properly prepared in terms of military technique, they can defeat any formidable enemy and carry out their combat mission successfully. By perfecting your combat preparations, you should strive to enrich your past meritorious services and turn all your companies and battalions into Hero units.

You must be confronted with many difficulties and be lacking a number of things since you are living under the hard conditions of the war. Commanders and political workers should take good care of the men as their mothers would, and help solve their problems promptly.

Commanders and political workers should have a good grasp of the composition of their units and work with the men accordingly. Commanders should know everything about their men: those enlisted before the war, those having no battle experience, the native places of the soldiers, past lives, character, constitution, etc. On this basis they

will work with the soldiers on purpose and according to the specific characteristics of the individuals.

Commanders and political workers must be deeply concerned for the health of their men at all times. Commanders should look after them lest they should fall ill. If there is a sick man, they should call on him and inquire about his illness feeling his head and take necessary measures. They should also pay profound attention to the meals of the soldiers. They should provide them with a sufficient amount of non-staple food by getting in touch with local government bodies.

Officers should be concerned about the day-to-day life of their men. Some comrades are still in old uniforms, which they wore behind enemy lines. The soldiers should be issued new uniforms and shoes. They must always be neatly dressed, sew a button on promptly if it comes off, and have clean collars on all the time. They should build the bathhouse, take a bath regularly and wash their clothes often. They must not be allowed to live in a slovenly fashion because they are at war. The People's Army is the revolutionary army of the working class, the most progressive and cultured of all classes. Under any circumstances they should be neat, tidy and hygienic, as befitting soldiers of such a revolutionary army.

In future, you should not stay in the villages, but build and live in dugout-style barracks on the hillside. This will be convenient for you for camouflage and fighting purposes when enemy planes attack you. Besides, the soldiers will be able to live a disciplined life there, as prescribed by the regulations and manuals; it is also good for training and will relieve the population of their burden. Even under the difficult circumstances during the anti-Japanese armed struggle, after the day's march we used to pitch tents to sleep in, in order to avoid causing the people any trouble. You must follow such examples.

Commanders and political workers should skilfully undertake the work related to the population of the area where they are stationed.

They should know well the composition of the inhabitants the size of the population, the number of Party members, the number of people

with checkered backgrounds and the mentality of the inhabitants. Then, they can conduct political work to suit the actual situation and actively help the people, maintaining close ties with them.

If you are to strengthen your ties with the people, it is important to work closely with the organs of people's power in the areas where you stay. While working behind enemy lines you rescued a lot of patriots and restored the organs of people's power. This is very good. It has a great political bearing, too. In the past, the anti-Japanese guerrilla commanders performed political work efficiently. They were able commanders while fighting the enemy, and competent political workers when working with people in outlying areas. All commanders of the People's Army should be able to conduct political work as well as work with the organs of people's power.

The combat mission assigned to you is highly important. You hit the US imperialist aggressors bravely, advancing down to the Raktong River and fought well also behind enemy lines. This is why the Supreme Headquarters entrusted you with such an important combat mission and placed your unit here.

I am firmly convinced that you will justify the deep trust and expectations of the Party Central Committee and the Supreme Headquarters by successfully carrying out the honourable combat mission assigned to your unit.

ON STRENGTHENING PARTY LIFE IN THE PEOPLE'S ARMY

**Speech Delivered at the Second Meeting of Party Activists
of the General Staff of the Supreme Headquarters
of the Korean People's Army**

March 18, 1951

The first impression I received here today at the meeting of Party activists of the General Staff is that much progress has been made in your Party life. I think the report and your criticisms were all correct.

Over long centuries Koreans had been affected by the morality of Confucius and Mencius. The morality of Confucius preaches that it is wrong to criticize others. Influenced by this thinking in the past, quite a few people did not try to see others' shortcomings or, when aware of them, were reluctant to expose or criticize them.

In fact, Confucian morality which, preached by Confucius and Mencius, forbids people to criticize others, suited the feudal autocracy of the Ri dynasty that lasted for 500 years. In order to maintain their old ruling system the feudal rulers of this dynasty had no desire to develop society and feared the exposure of their corrupt feudal reign. With a view to hindering social progress, they were engrossed in concealing wrongs and preventing the people from being awakened. The old habit of fearing the exposure and criticism of mistakes still remains today.

In order to make progress and create the new it is essential to criticize the old and wrong. Only by criticizing things old and corrupt

can we step up the advancement of society. Therefore, ever since its foundation our Party has stressed the need to intensify criticism and self-criticism as a weapon to promote advancement.

Before the war there were no Party organizations in the army except in the military academies and some army units. Due to the lack of Party organizations criticism had not been carried out properly in the army.

During the retreat we formed Party organizations throughout the army. The Party Central Committee regarded it as absolutely necessary to form Party organizations in the army and increase their role in attaining the final victory in the war and put this into effect without delay.

It is not long since Party organizations were formed in the army, but from your frank criticism I consider that much progress has been made in your organized life. However, criticism is still insufficient and grave defects are not yet rectified.

From now on we should decisively tighten Party life in the People's Army.

First, the Party spirit of Party members in the army should be heightened.

A party is an organization in which people with the same interests and ideology are rallied to attain the same goal. It has its programme and rules. Since it is a militant force formed not by an individual but with the participation of large numbers of people, each of its members should submit to its programme and rules and act unanimously in accordance with them.

Our Party admits only those who adhere to the ideology clearly explained in its Programme. We do not enrol anyone at random into the Party: we admit only those who accept the Party Programme and Rules and want to strive to carry out the Party's lines and policies.

What, then, does it mean to have a strong Party spirit? You cannot have it merely because you always visit Party officials or mouth the words the "Party" and the "Party Central Committee".

By the Party spirit we mean the Party member's revolutionary spirit arming himself firmly with the ideology set out in the Party Programme, vigorously defending and fulfilling its lines and policies

and always being in step with the Party. You cannot have a strong Party spirit simply by earning a Party membership card with you. A Party member must carry into effect the Party Programme and abide by its Rules and act in strict accordance with its lines.

In order to carry through the Party's lines it is imperative to correctly grasp the intentions of the Party Central Committee, have a good understanding of the Party's policies, tactics and strategy, and strengthen Party life.

At present some Party members in the army lack a strong Party spirit because they joined the Party comparatively recently and have not led a Party life since being enlisted in the army. Wrong tendencies have been manifested by some Party members in the army because of their weak Party spirit.

The Party meeting is one of the important media to educate Party members. However, according to information furnished some time ago by the General Political Bureau of the People's Army, many Party members, especially those with higher ranks, still fail to take an active part in Party meetings.

Only by attending Party meetings can the Party member acquaint himself in detail with the Party's policies and carry them into effect. If he does not attend Party meetings he cannot understand or fulfil the Party's policies. When the Party member neglects Party meetings, it is tantamount to losing his qualification for Party membership.

There is no higher or lower Party member. Both a commander and a soldier are equal Party members. However, as soon as they become high-ranking officers, some people often behave in a way unbecoming to Workers' Party members, imagining that they are greatest men in the world.

We must gravely warn some officers against their warlordism and dissipated way of life. Officers who do not lead a healthy Party life resort to warlordism, drinking and dissipation and work their soldiers hard. Since they are people who fight against feudalism and capitalism, they should not behave in this way.

At the recent Third Plenary Meeting of the Party Central

Committee a comrade said the army was getting stronger because Party organizations had been formed in the army. However, their formation alone cannot solve all problems.

The point is, after the formation of Party organizations we must consolidate and develop them, intensify the Party life of the membership, arm them with the Party's ideas, and rally them around its Central Committee as firmly as a rock.

Unless Party life is intensified, it will be impossible to temper the membership's Party spirit.

Only when Party members think and act in unanimity as required by the Party Central Committee, strictly abide by Party discipline and discharge their duties without fail, will warlordism and dissipation be eliminated from the army.

The enemy has reduced our country to ashes, robbed many of our people of their precious lives and insulted our women. When the ice and snow melt and stream down the rivers and brooks, it will not be a mere thaw but the very blood shed by our parents, brothers and sisters. How can we tolerate this and lead a loose and profligate life? Our People's Army is an army of the people and an armed force of the Workers' Party.

In order to repulse the enemy and save the country and people, our Party must be further strengthened, so every member should first and foremost raise his Party spirit ever higher. It is the primary task of our Party members to heighten this Party spirit.

The General Political Bureau must take active measures to temper the Party members' Party spirit and exert every effort to intensify political work in the People's Army. It is also necessary to issue many treatises on increasing the Party spirit.

Second, Marxist-Leninist education must be intensified in the army and the servicemen armed firmly with the conviction of victory.

All members of the Workers' Party must fight, equipped with the same ideology and conviction. For the Party to become a revolutionary and militant party, it must first of all achieve ideological unity and cohesion. There is an old saying: "When the family lives in harmony,

everything goes well.” If the mother and the daughter-in-law quarrel, their domestic affairs can never go well.

Marxism-Leninism is an ideological weapon for the entire Party to beat off the hostile forces and advance forward in unity. All the members must make active efforts to arm themselves firmly with Marxist-Leninist ideology, preserve the Party’s ideological purity and cement its unity.

Comrades, we are fully capable of driving out the US imperialists who invaded our country. It is a conclusion we have come to on a profound analysis of the balance of forces between friend and foe.

The enemy has been raving for a long time to reinforce his armed forces of aggression. As to their air force alone, the US imperialists have spent scores of years on building it up.

We could not take so long to prepare our air force. If only we have pilots right now, we can solve the problem. We can receive aircraft from the fraternal countries which aid us. There is no reason why we cannot acquire the same skills as the US imperialist blackguards. We can do if we get down to learning them.

Needless to say, the enemy’s armed forces are superior in technological equipment. But the fate of a war is not decided by that alone. We have a more powerful weapon, the indomitable patriotic spirit of defending the country to the last drop of blood.

Our people have experienced more than enough the sorrow of a stateless people. Our people are well aware that if they are deprived of their country they will become colonial slaves. Therefore, they fear no sacrifice to defend their country. However, the enemies are mercenaries who have come to the front to earn money, so they are afraid of death. We can master technology but the enemy cannot acquire the patriotism we have. This is a fundamental factor which enables us to prevail over the enemy.

But we must not merely shout cheers because there is a possibility of victory. A staunch struggle is necessary to win it. Not just a few, but all our Workers’ Party members and all other people must be drawn in this struggle.

Marxism-Leninism teaches the unvarying truth that imperialism will fall inevitably and that socialism will surely triumph. The more thoroughly we arm ourselves with the Marxist-Leninist ideology, the more invincible our might will become.

Those who are not armed with Marxism-Leninism do not think as we do. They know only the mightiness of atomic or hydrogen bombs; they do not understand that Marxist-Leninist ideology, the guiding compass of our action, is an ever-victorious weapon stronger than any bombs.

When we started the anti-Japanese armed struggle, some comrades imagined they would win victory if they fought Japanese imperialism for a couple of years. Of course, this was not the case. The anti-Japanese guerrillas, however, had fought, deeply convinced that Japanese imperialism was doomed and that they would win. Only when one believes implicitly in victory, can one be sure of prevailing over any enemy.

It is because of this ideology and conviction that the anti-Japanese guerrillas finally triumphed in the fifteen-year-long bloody struggle in spite of all hardships.

At that time the Japanese imperialists spread leaflets against the anti-Japanese guerrillas, one of which read: "You are like a drop in the ocean, so you had better surrender." Seeing this, some of the guerrillas whose political consciousness was weak ran away. But the overwhelming majority of our comrades armed firmly with Marxism-Leninism did not waver in the least and fought to the last with the strong conviction that Japanese imperialism would inevitably meet its doom and that the Korean people would finally defeat it.

While waging a revolutionary struggle in the dark years when the Japanese imperialists completely occupied and overran our country, we never lost our firm faith in victory even for a moment. So, it is impossible to have even a single man fighting in the favourable situation of today waver without faith in victory.

Today we have one million members in the Workers' Party, hundreds of thousands of soldiers and a people educated and tempered for five years since liberation.

Some time ago I had a talk with peasants in a farm village in Kangso County, and among them was an 81-year-old man. I said to him: "In your days people would get killed without resistance when the enemy invaded, but the people of today do not die in vain. In your time you didn't fight staunchly against foreign invaders, so you had a hard time of it and, 'thanks to you', we had hardships, too. If we die for nothing without fighting, our sons and daughters and even grandsons will also have to have hardships. That's why our young people are fighting today at the risk of their lives."

Comrades, Marxism-Leninism is not a worn-out concept. Some people claim that the principles of Marxism-Leninism, our ideological weapon, are obsolete and that there is nothing new in them now. Then, can we say the *Communist Manifesto* is outdated? We cannot say so. It is not outworn but is alive and fresh. As the days go by the correctness of Marxism-Leninism is all the more clearly proved, and it will remain new for ever.

In order to steel our People's Army politically and ideologically it is essential to intensify your study of Marxism-Leninism. On the pretext of intensifying your study, you should not try to learn by heart just a few passages from the classics, the way old scholars used to quote what "Confucius says" or "Mencius says". Nor should you mechanically copy other parties' experience. It is meaningless to study that way. You must study Marxist-Leninist principles and the fraternal parties' experience in conjunction with specific revolutionary practice in our country and apply them creatively to Korea's realities.

Certain comrades always carry books, claiming that they are studying Marxism-Leninism. And some high-ranking officers have their adjutants carry the *Communist Manifesto* for them. When asked questions, they say, "Adjutant, bring my book" and thumb through the book. The point lies not in carrying Marxist-Leninist literature like dictionaries, but in grasping the essence and knowing how to apply it creatively in practice.

Just as a knife can be used in different ways, so Marxism-Leninism can be applied differently in different nations. We must make a

profound study and grasp the truth of Marxism-Leninism and apply it creatively to our realities.

Third, the officials' style of work must be corrected.

Bureaucracy and formalism obstruct the solution of all problems.

The General Staff is now entrusted with a highly important mission in the life-and-death struggle to decide the Korean people's destiny. Whether or not the Koreans will become a people without a country again depends primarily on you.

In order to fulfil this weighty mission, you must eliminate bureaucracy and formalism once and for all and work like servants of the people.

You should not try to solve all problems in the easy way, through commands only; before issuing commands, you should first grasp and analyse the given situation in detail and carefully weigh up whether or not there are possibilities and conditions for carrying them out, and take prudent organizational measures. You should check and control the correct carrying out of the commands and be prepared to hold yourselves entirely responsible for their outcome.

The Ordnance Bureau ordered shells to be dispatched to the frontline units within a definite period, on the plea of preparing for the fourth campaign. As we asked them why only shells when the guns were not being used effectively for lack of vehicles to tow them, they retorted that the shells would have to be sent anyhow and used sooner or later. But the actual situation there needs machine guns and bullets more badly than shells. Regarded from a favourable viewpoint, it is bureaucracy and, regarded negatively, it is harmful.

Now, let us see how the Communications Control Bureau has been working. These days newspapers do not get to the front regularly. When I asked the reason, they said it was due to the lack of vehicles. They said so when they had ten vehicles, as I have found out. We provided them with another 30 vehicles and made an inquiry. This time they replied that they had vehicles but were out of gasoline. So I asked the chief of staff of the General Commissariat Bureau why he had not supplied them with gasoline. And he replied that nobody had asked for it.

This insincere and formalistic style of work is manifested in the General Staff as an extremely dangerous phenomenon.

Several days ago we assigned the Bureau of Operations the task of sending a vehicle for a certain cadre coming from the south. The bureau ordered a unit without a car to fulfil the task. The unit explained that it had not been able to go because there was no car, whereas the bureau only reprimanded the unit for its failure to carry out the order. Meanwhile, time glided on and we ourselves had to send a car to pick him up. They are smooth operators, indeed. They seem to think that they will not be court-martialled because they had issued an order. You should not only issue orders but should guarantee conditions for their punctual fulfilment.

In all bureaus and spheres there still exists a tendency to work in a formalistic manner. We are doing our own work, the Party's work; and not the work of others. We are working now to destroy and annihilate the US imperialists as soon as possible. So one should be anxious when something goes wrong. Only a Party member like this can be said to have the Party spirit.

Next, I would like to touch briefly on the remarks made by a certain bureau chief in the debate—that he would keep in close contact with the Party. This expression is incorrect. He seems to think the bureau is independent of the Party. He is wrong. Since the bureau chief is a Party member, his work, though administrative, is, after all, entrusted to him by the Party. We do not think that we only work for the Cabinet when working at the Cabinet offices and that we do Party work only when working at the offices of the Party Central Committee. A Party member should clearly realize that all his work is assigned to him by the Party and is work for the Party. Faithfully carrying out his assignments means precisely being loyal to the Party.

Party organizations in the army should politically ensure the correct execution of the commanders' orders. Cell or Party committee chairmen should always be well acquainted with what their commanders plan and organize, and should work in the same direction. It is wrong if a Party organization chairman holds an amusement

gathering when the commander plans to make an assault on the hill ahead. He should be aware of the military tasks of his unit, and if he doesn't, he should ask so as to get informed of them without fail. Only then can he guarantee their political fulfilment.

At this Party activists' meeting I have stressed a number of points in order to further enhance the Party spirit of Party members; to struggle uncompromisingly against all negative practices, advance staunchly in the direction indicated by the Party Central Committee and constantly rectify a wrong of work.

As I stated some time ago before comrades of the People's Army and the Chinese People's Volunteers and also at a meeting of heads of the political departments of the combined units, our Party is now confronted with the important task of making full preparations for the ultimate victory in the war, while consolidating the victory already achieved.

Local Party organizations should strengthen the people's power, make spring sowing a success, have factories rebuilt and large quantities of goods produced to stabilize the people's life. The People's Army must defend the areas already liberated, never yielding an inch to the enemy, and increase its units' combat capacity still more. This is precisely the way to consolidate the victory already won; it is preparatory to our general offensive, preparatory to our final victory.

The Artillery Headquarters must strengthen the work of all armories to supply weapons and shells in time where necessary; the Medical Bureau must fully meet the requirements for medicines, doctors and nurses; the Bureau of Organization, Mobilization and Replenishment must make preparations to quickly fill the shortage of combatants in the frontline divisions; the General Commissariat Bureau must replace the uniforms of the soldiers with the new ones in good time and transport rice to the vicinity of the 38th Parallel.

Only when these preparations are made satisfactorily in all spheres will we be able to achieve final victory in the Fatherland Liberation War.

ON IMPROVING THE WORK OF THE EDITORIAL DEPARTMENT OF THE MAGAZINE *MILITARY KNOWLEDGE*

**Instruction to the Chief of the General Staff of the Supreme
Headquarters of the Korean People's Army**

April 26, 1951

In order to annihilate the US imperialist aggressors at an earliest date and win the Fatherland Liberation War, we must increase the fighting efficiency of the People's Army.

The magazine *Military Knowledge* has a very important mission to discharge in increasing the combat efficiency of the People's Army. It must play its part in equipping officers firmly with our Party's ideology, advanced military science and technology, and in raising their quality of leadership. In particular, in the war situation as it is today it should play the role of close helper in correcting the shortcomings revealed in battle command and coordination between units.

This magazine, however, has so far failed to perform its important mission properly. According to the inspection report of the General Staff, the errors committed by its editorial department are very serious.

One of these errors is that the editorial department published many treatises and diagrams contrary to our Party's military policy and army regulations, and contradictory to military theory. Theses and charts carried in this magazine should be based thoroughly on the Party's military policy and justifiable from the viewpoint of military theory.

Only then, can the magazine play the proper role of a true propagator and educator that disseminates and teaches our Party's military thought, advanced military science and theory, and military technology. Nevertheless the editorial department has failed to perform its mission satisfactorily by publishing treatises and material which were contrary to our Party's military policy and army regulations and untenable from the viewpoint of military theory.

Another mistake of the editorial department is that it did not give adequate space to articles and other political-educational material to explain and disseminate our Party's line and policy. It has given too little space to articles explaining our Party's line and policy and to educational material encouraging soldiers to mass heroism, and also neglected the explanation and dissemination of military regulations and manuals.

Still another error is that it has not edited different materials on military science and theory, combat experience and the like in time and in a planned way. The delayed and unplanned publication of military and political theses and educational material indispensable to raising officers' military technical levels and improving their quality of leadership made the magazine ineffective in helping them to increase their military, political and practical qualifications and their abilities to command.

There are many other defects in the work of the editorial department, but I will not touch on them, since they are all pointed out correctly in the inspection report of the General Staff.

What, then, are the main reasons for the errors committed by the editorial department?

The mistakes are due, first of all, to the failure of the General Staff to give regular guidance to and check up on the work of the editorial department. It has not given regular guidance and assistance to the department to carry out its duty with credit nor has it inspected and controlled the editorial work properly. The department has been working as it pleased, completely free from guidance and control since its formation.

The mistakes are due also to the inadequate political and military knowledge of the staff and their lack of the sense of Party responsibility. Many of them are not well qualified politically, ideologically and in military technique nor are they experienced in editing magazines. So it was impossible for the magazine to carry good military and political theses and educational material. They also lacked Party responsibility to perform their duties in good faith. If they had been competent militarily and politically and had a high sense of Party responsibility to be faithful to their duties, they would not have committed such errors.

Another major reason for the editorial department's mistakes lies in their inadequate effort to increase the number of zealous contributors and enlist the opinions of the readers widely. The magazine will be able to carry good material when it enlists in its editorial work the generals and other officers, who are competent politically and militarily and have a wealth of combat experience, and when it obtains active assistance from its readers. The editorial department, however, neglected to develop active contributors and establish contact with readers. That was why the magazine failed to carry excellent military and political treatises and educational material. Because of such poor contents, generals and officers were reluctant to read the magazine to raise their own military, political and practical levels nor did they use it effectively in educating their men. The readers on their part were not interested in helping to correct the shortcomings in its editorial work and were quite indifferent to its destiny. The editorial department, therefore, could not receive good suggestions from the readers.

The General Staff should see to it that the editorial department of the *Military Knowledge* corrects its mistakes as quickly as possible and that the magazine acquits itself of its duty satisfactorily.

Before all else, the editorial department must be staffed well and its role enhanced. It must consist of officers who are boundlessly loyal to the Party, highly competent politically and theoretically, well qualified in military practice, and experienced in war. Improvement in the

makeup of staff should be combined with tireless efforts on their part to equip themselves firmly with our Party's ideology and Marxist-Leninist ideas and master modern military science, theory and technology.

Next, the ranks of enthusiastic contributors should be increased. This is the way to obtain a variety of war experiences and other material sufficiently when needed. From now on the number of active writers must increase and they must be encouraged to contribute many articles.

Next, the contents of the magazine should be improved.

The editorial department should, first of all, make up the magazine with material which would explain and disseminate the Workers' Party's line and policy to officers, inculcate in them boundless loyalty to the Party, fervent love of their country and people, burning hatred for the enemy and confidence in victory. In the future, the magazine should carry many articles and write-ups explaining and propagating our Party's line and policy. At the same time, it should give information on the Heroes of the Republic who displayed indomitable revolutionary spirit and mass heroism in the just Fatherland Liberation War for the freedom and independence of the country and also material on revolutionary comradeship.

The magazine should also devote much space to the material needed in enhancing the role of commanders and staffs. To win the Fatherland Liberation War ultimately, we must fully equip all our officers with advanced military science and technology and improve the quality of leadership of commanders. That is why much space should be given to articles for the dissemination of advanced military science and technology and improvement of the role of staffs and the quality of commanders' leadership.

The magazine should carry many combat experiences in particular. At present the People's Army is accumulating valuable experience every day and every minute in the life-and-death struggle against the US imperialist aggressors. The magazine should disseminate this experience widely among the officers. It would be advisable that wide publicity is given to the experiences of mountain battles, night actions,

raids, flanking movement and encirclement by which the enemy was destroyed.

The magazine should introduce foreign battle experience as well.

It should also give much information on the enemy. Without knowing the enemy we cannot wipe him out. It should deal with information on his military organizations and equipment as well as the weaknesses in the tactics, weapons and other equipment of the US imperialist forces of aggression.

The magazine should also introduce much information needed in establishing iron discipline in the People's Army. The People's Army needs iron discipline. An undisciplined army cannot defeat the enemy. Only a well disciplined army can beat the enemy however difficult the battle. What is important in tightening discipline in the People's Army is to encourage the soldiers to observe it voluntarily. The magazine should carry many articles explaining army regulations and manuals, so that every officer acts according to them.

In order to improve the contents, the editorial department should work well with the readers. They can be active assistants to and critics on the editorial work of the magazine. If it has close relations with the readers, it can understand their demand in time and get good suggestions and help from them.

Guidance to the editorial department in its work should be strengthened to increase its role. Steps to correct its errors should be discussed at the meeting of officers of the General Staff and the General Political Bureau. In addition, a non-permanent editorial committee of high-ranking officers who are qualified politically and ideologically, and in military technique, should be appointed to give regular guidance, scrutiny and assistance to the editorial work.

The organizational structure of the editorial department, too, should be examined. It is no easy job to edit a magazine during a war. After proper examination, the editorial department should be reorganized to suit the wartime conditions.

It would be a good idea for the next issue of the *Military Knowledge* to carry a critical article on the shortcomings in the editorial

department's work. This will be an honest self-criticism. Such an article will not estrange the editorial department from the readers. Instead, it will win their deep trust and love. Communists are not afraid of making their shortcomings public. It is a good thing to be criticized and controlled publicly. The magazine should carry not only the criticism of its editorial work but also an article about the future editorial orientation of the *Military Knowledge*.

The Party expects a great deal from the journal. The editorial staff should keep this in mind and carry out their revolutionary task faithfully so that the magazine makes a great contribution to winning the Fatherland Liberation War.

ENHANCE THE COMBAT EFFICIENCY OF THE UNIT AND MAKE OUR COASTAL DEFENCE IMPREGNABLE

**Speech to the Officers and Men of Unit 851
of the Korean People's Army**

April 28, 1951

On behalf of the Central Committee of the Workers' Party of Korea, the Government of the Democratic People's Republic of Korea and the Supreme Headquarters of the Korean People's Army, I would like to express warm thanks to all officers, noncommissioned officers and men of Unit 851 of the Korean People's Army for their long arduous struggle behind enemy lines, under most difficult conditions.

Unit 851 advanced as far down as the Raktong River, scored tremendous victories in battle, and made a successful strategic retreat by breaking through manifold enemy lines in the period of temporary retirement. The unit was also the first to dash into Pyongyang, the democratic capital, in the light for its liberation.

Your battle exploits will mark a brilliant page in the history of the struggle to liberate the country.

Today we are fighting US imperialism, the self-styled strongest in the world. The US imperialists are our vicious enemy who are trying to turn back human history and stamp out our country and nation once and for all, repeating Hitler's dream of world domination.

In view of her location in the Far East, Korea can be likened to a bridge to the continent. In the past, the Japanese imperialists occupied

Korea and then, using her as a bridge, invaded China and made the same attempt on the Soviet Union. After World War II, the US imperialists took the place of the Japanese imperialists and invaded Korea, and are scheming to invade China and the Soviet Union at some time in the future. Their pipe dream is doomed to failure, just as fascist Germany, Japan and Italy who dreamt of world conquest, were vanquished in World War II. History shows that wild dreamers of world conquest will collapse without exception.

Forgetting past historical lessons, the US imperialists are rearming Germany and Japan in gross violation of the Potsdam Agreements and other international pacts. They have also armed the reactionary Syngman Rhee clique and encouraged them to initiate frequent invasions on the northern half of Korea, with the evil design of turning Korea into their colony. Finally in June last year, by instigating the traitorous Syngman Rhee clique, the US imperialist aggressors launched a surprise invasion of the northern half of Korea and unleashed an aggressive war in Korea.

Our People's Army, alert to cope with the enemy attempt, repelled the invaders at once and launched a counteroffensive. Three days after the outbreak of the war, the People's Army liberated Seoul, the citadel of the Syngman Rhee puppet clique. Alarmed at the defeat of the puppet clique by the counterattacking People's Army, the US imperialists openly started their invasion on our country.

The US imperialists are the most outrageous aggressors who are trying to swallow up the whole world. They have aggressive armed forces long trained and superior in equipment and technique. They lost nothing but earned, instead, large sums of money in the First and Second World Wars. In Korea, however, they lost over 100,000 troops during the first several months of the war, in their futile attempt to attain their aim of aggression. They are still losing one battle after another.

Why, then, are the US imperialists suffering such defeat in the Korean war?

First, this is because the Korean people today are not what they were yesterday.

When the Japanese imperialists invaded Korea, its feudal rulers, who were corrupt, incompetent, and blind to the world situation, were idling away their time, riding about on donkeys in horse-hair hats. This resulted in our country being conquered by the Japanese imperialists, and our people were forced to live in slavery, suffering bitter grief and pain as a homeless nation for 36 years. From this torturous experience our people refuse to become homeless again and refuse to yield their country meekly to any aggressors.

In the five post-liberation years, the Korean people, under the leadership of our Party, set up the Democratic People's Republic, their genuine state power, ran factories, built schools and developed agriculture through their own efforts. In the past five years of democratic construction, our people created a happy new life, indeed, on their own, and grew strong enough to defend it. They are now very strong and unconquerable.

For the defence of the freedom of their country and their new life, the Korean people are now going all out in the Fatherland Liberation War against the US imperialist invasion.

No matter how many troops and airplanes they have and no matter how superior they are technically, the United States will never be able to conquer our people who have risen as one in this just cause. Our people are firmly resolved to fight the enemy in defence of the country, even if it would mean a devastated Korea and national martyrdom. If the US imperialist aggressor forces refuse to withdraw from Korea, we shall fight to the end, whether it be for one year or two years or longer, until we destroy them to the last man, until we ultimately win the war.

Today, the Korean people are playing a major role in the struggle against imperialism and for peace, and their heroic struggle against the aggressors greatly inspires the world's oppressed people in their national-liberation movements. This is a great honour for our people and our People's Army.

What, then, are the factors which contribute to our victory?

First, we have the Workers' Party of Korea which accurately estimates the balance of forces between friends and foes and leads our

people correctly to victory. We have the people who are closely united around the Party and the Government of the Republic. We have the heroic People's Army made up of the sons and daughters of the workers and peasants.

This is the basic guarantee for our might, the basic factor for our victory.

The People's Army has grown both in numerical strength and quality in the struggle against the US imperialist aggressors. Formerly it was no more than an armed force of several divisions, but today it has several corps scores of divisions. In the past it was trained mainly in war games, but now it is being tempered in real battles: it is now experienced in offensive and defensive battles and in the temporary retreat and is also skilful in guerrilla warfare.

The People's Army also fully displays lofty political and moral traits in battles.

Our army is incomparably superior in ideology to the US imperialist aggressor forces. It is an army of the people, which is firmly equipped with patriotism and fights in defence of the country and the people. But the US imperialist aggressor troops are hired soldiers who invade other countries for money. They are devastating and burning down the factories, villages, schools, and everything else which have been built by the sweat of our people's brow.

All our soldiers are now fighting with a burning hatred for the enemy and a firm determination to wipe them out. Precisely for this reason the People's Army soldiers are brave in battles.

Second, we are not fighting alone; we are receiving active support and encouragement from peace-loving people the world over.

Our people are fighting for a just cause; they are firm in their cause and capable of winning it. We are guided by the correct lines and policies of the Workers' Party of Korea and the Government of the Republic. We have the people and the People's Army with an indomitable fighting spirit. For this reason the peoples of the Soviet Union, China and many other People's Democracies and other peace-loving people all over the world ardently support our people in

their just cause and encourage them actively in their valiant struggle.

It is inevitable that the US imperialists will be defeated in the Korean war and that we will emerge victorious. The US imperialist aggressors will never realize their aggressive ambition no matter how frantically they build up arms and no matter how many troops of their satellite states they send to the Korean front.

The US imperialists miscalculated at the outset. They failed to see revolutionary spirit and courage of the Korean people. They were foolish enough to believe that with one stroke they would be able to bring our people to their knees easily. They did not consider the fact that the Korean people were led by the Workers' Party of Korea and tempered in the struggle.

The US imperialists were also blind to the united force of the Korean and Chinese peoples. The Korean and Chinese peoples are comrades-in-arms, who have fought together against their common enemy, from the period of the anti-Japanese armed struggle. For their blindness to this united force, the US imperialists were reckless enough to attack us.

Now they would not take their hands off Korea, even if they wished to, because it would mean losing face.

The Fatherland Liberation War of our people will not end soon because we are engaged in a conflict with US imperialism, the chieftain of world imperialism. If we were fighting just the Syngman Rhee puppet army, we would have completely defeated them a long time ago. We must anticipate a protracted war since we are fighting against the US imperialists.

Today, the situation is definitely in our favour. There are sufficient objective and subjective conditions which will enable us to win. Despite this, the enemy will not perish, unless he is destroyed. Victory will not come of itself, but must be won through struggle. We must fight larger battles in the future.

In order to wipe out the US imperialist aggressors and win ultimate victory, we must consolidate the People's Army still further.

Our immediate task is to consolidate the victory already achieved

and at the same time increase the combat efficiency of the People's Army units and get them fully ready for combat.

We must, above all, improve military equipment and establish a strict system and order in the units and promote the management of the units, political work and all other activities of the People's Army, on a regular basis.

In developing the People's Army into a better-trained regular army and in making its units perfectly combat ready, we must always proceed from the specific conditions of our country and solve all problems according to these conditions. We must not try to imitate a foreign army merely to improve ours on a regular basis. We must draft new military regulations conforming to our conditions and apply the existing ones to suit our realities.

Our country is mountainous. This means that we have to fight mostly in the mountains. Therefore, in drawing up the artillery structure of the army, for instance, priority should be given to high-angle fire rather than to direct fire. Besides, an effective use of mortars is important in our country. Tactical problems, too, should be handled in such a way as to acquire the tactics of mountain warfare and night action. This is also important.

Our country is a peninsula with a long coastline on three sides. This makes it imperative to defend the coast solidly.

For a strong coastal defence, we must build a powerful navy.

Taking advantage of our lacking a powerful navy, the US imperialist aggressors marshalled their strong forces and landed at Inchon. That is why the People's Army units, which had advanced as far as the Raktong River line, had to make a temporary strategic retreat. Only when the home front is solid, can our achievements be defended, and the soldiers at the battle front can fight well, free from any worries about home. Therefore, one of the most important strategic tasks confronting us today is to firmly defend the major coastal areas in the rear in order to prevent the enemy from isolating our home front.

Unit 851 of the Korean People's Army must ensure an impregnable

coastal defence by further increasing their combat efficiency.

What, then, must this unit do to cope with its combat mission?

First, the unit should replenish itself as soon as possible by getting full complement of troops and weapons, and should deploy its forces properly in accordance with its mission and to suit the terrain features. It should thus become an elite as quickly as possible—a unit which is fully combat ready.

Second, it must intensify military training and political education.

Combat training should be intensified. Through intensive combat training every soldier must improve his marksmanship and adequately learn the methods of assault, night action, encirclement, outflanking, counterattack and so on, by making the most of his training hours. Officers should teach their men to master their weapons and take good care of them. In particular, a great deal of attention should be directed to the education of recruits.

Combat training should be geared to the need of actual warfare and oriented to digesting valuable experience. Training should be conducted in the field, building up positions. This is the way to familiarize the soldiers better with the terrain conditions and enable them to destroy the enemy promptly, even when they launch a surprise attack.

Political education should be intensified among soldiers, in order to heighten their fighting spirit and inspire them with a firmer confidence in victory.

When we were waging the anti-Japanese armed struggle in the past, we did not have so many men and powerful weapons as we have today. Nevertheless, convinced of the immutable truth that imperialism will perish, we conducted ideological education properly for the soldiers. Because they had a firm faith in victory, the anti-Japanese guerrillas were able to fight on bravely, overcoming all difficulties, and at last liberated the country.

The conditions today are incomparably better in every respect than those in the years of our anti-Japanese armed struggle.

As a result of World War I, the Soviet Union, the socialist state, was

born out of the ruins of tsarist Russia. In World War II, fascist Germany and Italy and the Japanese imperialists were defeated, and in consequence, the People's Democracies emerged in Europe and Asia. If the imperialists unleash a third world war it will mean digging graves for all capitalist countries on earth.

Every soldier should firmly believe that the US imperialists will be defeated in the Korean war and that the Korean people will triumph. For fighting soldiers, confidence in victory is more valuable than weapons and ammunition.

The unit should intensify political education among the officers, noncommissioned officers and men and instil in them greater confidence in victory and increased hatred for the enemy. They should be educated thoroughly, in particular, to keep in mind the crimes of the US imperialists at all times, and to curse and hate the enemy bitterly.

Third, the unit should be managed properly, and the work style of the officers improved.

If the unit is to be run efficiently, commanding officers should acquire the art of correct leadership. They should treasure and love their men as their own brothers and help the men who commit errors to correct them promptly, by criticizing them severely. Political workers, in particular, should persuade and educate their men patiently like a loving mother. Every soldier should thus be encouraged to accept criticism earnestly and observe discipline voluntarily.

Commanding officers should perform their jobs in good faith and have a high sense of responsibility. If a commanding officer gives an inappropriate order, he may suffer heavy casualties and unexpected losses. All military and political cadres should, therefore, conduct themselves in a responsible and exemplary manner at all times—both in battle and daily routine.

Commanding officers should be deeply concerned about the daily lives of their men.

They should pay attention, above all, to the men's meals. Of course, it may be somewhat difficult to always provide their men with non-staple food according to the regulations under the wartime

conditions. But the men should never run out of such items. At present, some supply service workers do not organize meticulously the daily rationing of food supplies for the men; they are working as if on a hand-to-mouth job, eating up everything they get in one gulp and then lasting. This is not proper.

The unit should organize sideline production properly grow potatoes and vegetables, raise pigs and chickens and sprout beans or make bean curds for the servicemen. You should bring marine products by using transport rationally and supply them to supplement non-staple food. Units should strive to obtain non-staple foodstuffs through their own effort as far as possible.

Along with this, wasteful practices must be thoroughly eliminated. Especially when moving, the unit should not throw away leftovers.

Medical service to the soldiers should be improved. For the present, a large number of nurses should be trained, as it is impossible to train army surgeons within a short period. The stretcher teams should be reinforced according to the new table of organization.

You should pay constant attention to the hygienic and anti-epidemic work. You should organize baths and washes frequently and take vaccination regularly so as to prevent diseases.

Fourth, you should maintain close ties with the people in your area.

People's Army units should help with the farm work of the people in their areas, carry salt and the like for them in military vehicles and help them solve other difficult problems to the best of their abilities. They should properly explain Party policy and current events to the people. The People's Army should be an army of the people in the true sense of the word—an army which not only defends the country with arms but strives in the interests and for the happiness of the people and helps them overcome their difficulties.

Fifth, discipline and order should be further tightened.

Iron discipline and order is the life and soul of an army and the basic guarantee for greater combat efficiency of a unit. Wartime conditions should never be an excuse for laxity in discipline and order. The war requires a more rigid discipline and order and strict implementation of

orders from superiors and state laws.

Today I am very satisfied to see you comrades in high spirits.

You should further increase the unit's combat efficiency, build up impregnable coastal defences and carry out your combat mission with credit.

I hope Unit 851 of the Korean People's Army will produce many more Heroes and win the title of Guards Unit without fail.

Let all of you rally more firmly around our Party and the Government of the Republic, and bravely advance towards fresh victories!

ON THE OCCASION OF MAY DAY

**Order No. 310 of the Supreme Commander
of the Korean People's Army**

May 1, 1951

Men, noncommissioned officers, and officers of the three services
of the Korean People's Army,

Men and women guerrillas,

Dear fellow countrymen, brothers and sisters,

Today, on the occasion of May Day when the militant force of the
working people throughout the world is tested and demonstrated, I
offer warm congratulations to you in the name of the Government of
the Democratic People's Republic of Korea and the Supreme
Headquarters of the Korean People's Army.

Today our people greet May Day in the grim situation of the
Fatherland Liberation War against the US imperialist invaders.

The Korean People's Army has undertaken national defence with the
honour of being entrusted with the destiny of the country and the people,
and it is now ten months since the outbreak of the Fatherland Liberation
War for defending the freedom and independence of the country.

In this period the Korean People's Army has dealt heavy blows at
the American imperialist invaders and inflicted on them a tremendous
loss in troops, weapons and equipment. The US imperialists'
underhand design to enslave the Korean people and make our country
the base of their aggression on Asia is being frustrated at every step in
the war.

The Korean People's Army has grown stronger in the course of the difficult war against the US imperialist aggressors and for the reunification, independence and freedom of the country.

People's Army units are able to use a variety of tactics efficiently under different combat situations: they can destroy the enemy by a flanking movement or encirclement or strike him by means of feint or decoying. The soldiers are disciplined and capable of handling their weapons skilfully and carrying out the combat missions given by their commanding officers in whatever adversity. The fear of enemy's technical means, aircraft in particular, noticeable among some of the soldiers in the early period of the war, has given way to their self-confidence that they can defeat the enemy by relying on their patriotic devotion and military skill they have acquired.

All this shows that the People's Army has become better organized and stronger in the course of the Fatherland Liberation War and that its commanding officers are experienced in combat and their men tempered.

The war found all our people united more firmly than ever before around the Government of the Republic.

All the Korean people have joined in the struggle to supply the front with more arms and food for victory, and the whole country is embattled.

Friendship and solidarity with the peace-loving people of the world has become and is growing closer with each passing day. In their heroic struggle against the American imperialist invaders, the Korean people are getting support and encouragement from the democratic camp and freedom-loving people throughout the world. The Chinese People's Volunteers are cooperating with our People's Army in the war against US imperialism, the common enemy, who is out to conquer our country and then invade the whole of Asia.

Our strength is increasing with the passing time and the situation is developing decisively in our favour.

The US imperialist aggressors, however, find themselves in different circumstances. Each fresh blow delivered at them by the

heroic Korean People's Army and the Chinese People's Volunteers pushes the invaders closer to their doom.

The aggressive provocation of the US imperialists against our country and the People's Republic of China is stirring up serious discontent among broad sections of the American people.

The contradictions and conflicts among those who implement the imperialist policy of aggression are sharpening further, and the invaders are feeling more uneasy and confused. Truman, the main culprit of aggression, revealed his gloomy outlook of the war when he dismissed MacArthur, his favourite butcher, from the office of Commander, US Armed Forces in the Far East.

The arrogant bluster of the invaders that they would swallow up our country before "Christmas" last year has given way to a mournful cry for what they call a "reexamination of their Far East policy".

These facts show that the aggressive policy of the US imperialists is failing in Korea and that our people are emerging victorious in their struggle.

Our victory is of historic significance.

Our triumph is a clear proof that no imperialist armed forces can bring to their knees the people who have stood up for the freedom and independence of the nation.

This, however, never means that the American imperialist invaders are completely defeated.

They have been hit hard by the heroic Korean People's Army and the Chinese People's Volunteers, but not yet completely destroyed.

It would be very foolish to hope for a walkover or a victory without effort.

If we are to win ultimately, we must deal much heavier blows at the enemy than we have done already.

We still have an arduous struggle to carry on.

We must emerge victorious in this struggle. To this end, we must mobilize all our forces and possibilities.

Dear men, noncommissioned officers and officers of the Korean People's Army,

Men and women guerrillas who are brave,

The country and the people are expecting a great deal from you and are deeply concerned for you. They spare nothing for the strengthening of the People's Army, their own armed forces.

The peoples of the Soviet Union, the People's Republic of China and other fraternal People's Democracies are giving enthusiastic support and encouragement to our people in their struggle against the invaders.

The freedom-loving people the world over, with unbounded sympathy and respect, are watching the heroic Korean people and their child, the People's Army, who are participating, arms in hand, in the struggle for world peace.

The officers and men of the People's Army should by all means live up to the trust and expectations of their country and people and avenge their parents, brothers and sisters.

We must wipe out the US imperialist invaders and thus prove ourselves worthy of the support and encouragement from the peoples of the Soviet Union and the People's Democracies and the freedom-loving people throughout the world.

We must liberate all our country from the American aggressors.

We must destroy the US aggressors to the last man since they do not withdraw from our land of their own accord. We have no other alternative.

We must accomplish this sacred and noble mission. For this purpose the People's Army soldiers must have a good command of military affairs, master their weapons and acquire the ability to handle skilfully the combat equipment given by their country and people.

Men, noncommissioned officers and officers of the three services of the Korean People's Army,

Men and women guerrillas,

Greeting May Day, I congratulate you and order:

1. Every serviceman of the Korean People's Army, preserve the successes in the previous battles, follow them up and strive to win the war ultimately!

Deliver sledgehammer blows at the US imperialist invaders in revenge for the bloodshed they have caused to your parents, brothers and sisters! Be more merciless and brave and force the enemy to pay blood for blood!

2. Every infantryman, artilleryman, tankman, airman, reconnaissance scout, engineer and aircraft-hunter of the Korean People's Army, master your weapons and improve your combat efficiency tirelessly! Veterans, teach your military skill to the recruits with warm comradeship!

Let every soldier be prompt and accurate in implementing the commander's order and in meeting the requirements of military regulations and manuals and tighten the military discipline and organization of the People's Army!

Commanders of the units of different arms, strive further to acquire flexible tactics and improve the art of leadership, skilfully coordinate the actions of different arms, different units and individual soldiers, and improve your military technique and ability to command through the study, review and mutual exchange of combat experience!

3. Political workers, intensify your work among the soldiers so as to imbue them with patriotism and devotion to the country and the people, firmer conviction of victory and a stronger hatred for the enemy, to establish iron discipline in the army and cherish their weapons and equipment!

4. Communications are the nerve of modern warfare. They ensure swift and smooth command and greatly affect the outcome of battles. Signalmen, strive to ensure swift and accurate communications!

5. All of the logistical workers, provide the front in time with adequate weapons, ammunition, food rations and other munitions and satisfy its requirements!

6. The doomed enemy resorts to all sorts of vile and crafty means and manoeuvres. Detect and expose the sinister plans of the enemy everywhere with heightened vigilance!

7. Men and women guerrillas, raid and destroy enemy command

posts and headquarters to throw the enemy into panic and harass him further in his rear!

The time is drawing nearer when the Korean People's Army together with the Chinese People's Volunteers will destroy the cannibalistic American imperialists to the last man.

Long live our glorious motherland!

Long live the heroic Korean People's Army!

Long live the heroic Chinese People's Volunteers!

Long live our valiant men and women guerrillas!

Wipe out the US imperialist invaders!

**TALK WITH A FACT-FINDING COMMISSION
FROM THE WOMEN'S INTERNATIONAL
DEMOCRATIC FEDERATION**

May 27, 1951

Dear members of the commission,

You have been in our country with the noble aim of investigating on the spot the atrocities the American aggressors are committing in Korea, in a vicious attempt to make our country their colony, and of determining the real nature of the Korean war. I would like to express my heartfelt thanks to you for this.

If you inform the world public of the truth of the Korean war and the just struggle of our people, which you have witnessed on your visit to our country, we shall be very grateful to you.

I am convinced that your efforts in our behalf will contribute to driving out the American imperialist aggressors from our land.

Korea is bound to be a free, independent state.

Korea cannot and will never be a colony of the American imperialists.

I wish you a safe return home and greater success in your work.

TALK WITH HEROES OF THE REPUBLIC AND MODEL SOLDIERS

June 29, 1951

Comrade Heroes, thank you for coming all the way from the front line. You are all stout soldiers.

I am very glad to hear that everyone fighting at the front is in good health.

The congratulatory banner presented to me by Unit 327 in the name of all its officers and men is said to have been embroidered in a trench. Their devotion is great, indeed. The unit also sent me the pistol of Comrade Han Kye Ryol, Hero of the Republic, and the sub-machine gun of Comrade Kang Ho Yong, Hero of the Republic. As you know, the former was a brave hero who initiated the “my hill” movement and the latter was a true son of the Party and an indomitable hero who courageously fought to the last moment of his life for the country and the people. We should not forget these heroes for ever.

I was deeply impressed by your battle accounts.

The Reconnaissance Hero says that, encountered with a puppet army company on his way through the enemy rear on his reconnaissance mission, he shouted at the enemy from a vantage point and intimidated him into surrender. That was really a bold and successful action. Shouting is one of the important tactics to capture the enemy. In those years of the anti-Japanese armed struggle, too, the guerrillas often did the same and forced the enemy to surrender. Soldiers should know how to capture the enemy not only with guns

but by word of mouth and various other tricks.

In other words, they should be skilful in the use of flexible, elusive tactics to suit the combat situation.

It was laudable of the Hero to have acted boldly, but that was risky. It was fortunate that the enemy was easily intimidated to surrender by the shouting. What would have happened, if the enemy had found a chance to open fire in a last-ditch effort? Then, the venture might have failed with resultant casualties to the scouts. All of you are the treasure of the country. One of our men cannot be bartered for a hundred enemy soldiers. When you use this tactics again in the future, you must be on the alert and shout at the enemy.

You the Hero and Squad Leader, whose home is in the south, infiltrated into the enemy rear on a mission to cut off the enemy's retreat. You paralysed enemy command first by raiding and destroying an enemy regimental headquarters and then blocked the route of his retreat, killing a large number of enemy troops and capturing his weapons and equipment. You the Hero and Squad Leader were adroit in your action. Soldiers must act boldly and cleverly at the decisive moment. You must in the future, too, fight better than anyone else in the forefront of the battle to liberate your parents and brothers and home place in the south.

Comrade Hero Chief Nurse, you are said to have offered much of your blood to be transfused to the wounded and saved them. How is your health now? Your deed on the battlefield truly behoves a communist. Indeed, you are a woman of great strength, for you rescued two wounded comrades at a time, carrying them on your back or helping them to walk through the flames of gunfire. During the period of the anti-Japanese armed struggle, too, many women guerrillas fought as bravely as men. Carrying forward the brilliant revolutionary traditions of the anti-Japanese armed struggle, the women in our country are now fighting devotedly both at the front and in the rear.

The Hero who, as a Demolition-Team Leader, destroyed many heavy-machine gun pillboxes of the enemy and opened the way for the advancing unit, also fulfilled his combat mission excellently by

displaying ardent patriotism to the full. You comrades say that your battle experience with the American imperialist aggressors confirmed that they were mere nothing, though they had been considered otherwise. That is correct. They may look strong, but in fact they are cowardly and powerless.

Comrade Heavy-Machine Gun Squad Leader and Model Soldier, you, too, were courageous in a decisive battle. I hope you will become a Hero without fail by fighting better to liberate the south where you came from.

The Deputy for Political Affairs to the Commander of the Company which produced Hero Kang Ho Yong is said to have roused the men vigorously to annihilate the enemy by launching a movement to keep in record the vengeance taken on the enemy for their comrades-in-arms who fell in battles. He was proficient in his job. Since the political work in the battlefield aims at rousing the soldiers to wipe out the enemy, the revenge- and-record movement is one of the good methods of political work. This movement should be widely introduced in all units of the People's Army. The Deputy Company Commander for Political Affairs did his job effectively during the march as well to make it a success. The unit which is good at marching is also good at fighting. A swift march is an important factor in winning the battle. Political work should be properly conducted to ensure a successful march at small units of the People's Army. To this end, the soldiers should be imbued with the spirit of overcoming hardships.

Since you have not full support from air, artillery, armour and other heavy weapons, it would be a good idea to strike at the enemy by night, by surprise, by envelopment, by flanking movement and similar tactics. Such tactics should be widely used. If you employ tactics skilfully, you will be able to destroy a lot of enemy despite limited heavy weapons support. In order to win a battle you should be efficient in applying a variety of tactics. In particular, you must grasp weaknesses of the enemy and turn them to good account. You should employ supple tactics so as to win the battle with less bloodshed.

The soldiers at the front are now courageously fighting with a firm

conviction of victory. Soldiers' unshakable faith in victory is essential in war. The small number of friendly aircraft in the sky may worry some soldiers. But aircraft can never decide the outcome of a war. Success in a war depends on the political and moral qualities of the soldiers and people who participate in it. We must overwhelm the enemy's numerical and technical preponderance by our politico-ideological and tactical superiority. As the fact shows, we are defeating the enemy, though we have not many airplanes in action.

We have the ever-victorious Workers' Party of Korea, more powerful than airplanes or guns, and the heroic People's Army and people armed with the indomitable revolutionary spirit. And the peoples of the fraternal countries are actively supporting and encouraging us. A just war is bound to succeed. Our People's Army and people firmly united around the Party are sure to defeat the enemy and achieve ultimate victory. With a firmer confidence in victory the soldiers of the People's Army should fight the enemy bravely.

If the US imperialists had not brought large reinforcements to the front during our first counteroffensive, we would have already liberated the whole area of the southern half and achieved the cause of national reunification. But they brought in all their forces of the Pacific area and even a part of their forces from the Mediterranean Sea and launched a frantic invasion. This caused a great change in the balance of forces between friend and foe. That was why we had to make a strategic retreat. Accordingly, the just Fatherland Liberation War of our people has dragged on and become difficult, and our People's Army and people are undergoing a severe trial.

The US imperialists will never leave Korea and withdraw of their own accord. History knows no imperialisms having ever quitted the land it occupied of its own will. US imperialism, in particular, is the most vicious and atrocious invader and the ringleader of the world reactionaries which has been involved in aggression and plunder from the day of its birth in the world. Therefore, it will never withdraw from Korea meekly. In the face of its repeated ignominious setbacks now in the Korean war, US imperialist is using every available means and

ways to realize its aggressive ambition at any cost. The nearer his doom, the more frantic effort the enemy will make.

We must never rest content with successes already gained. We must sharpen our vigilance still further and continue to fight stubbornly to win the war ultimately. If we are to completely annihilate US imperialism and its stooges and triumph finally in the Fatherland Liberation War, we must be firmly ready to overcome more arduous trials.

We cannot yield even an inch of our land to the enemy. We must destroy him and liberate the southern half of Korea at any cost. As long as US imperialism remains in the southern part of our country, Korea will not be reunified nor will our people be able to lead a happy life. We must wipe out the US imperialist aggressors from our land. This very important task is entrusted to you.

Our Party believes in the valiant soldiers of the People's Army fighting at the front. Our heroic soldiers have been brave in all battles—in advance or retreat, and in actions behind enemy lines—and accumulated much experience. This experience will serve as precious asset for the victory in the war.

The soldiers of the 12th Andong Infantry Division are said to be determined to win the honour of a Guards Division by carrying out more difficult combat missions. Their resolve is excellent. I hope they will display mass heroism in the battles to liberate the southern half and perform greater feats of valour.

Back at the front you yourselves should fight well as ever and at the same time help the birth of more heroes and model soldiers until all your units win these honours.

You should, first of all, lead Party organizational life properly and observe Party discipline voluntarily.

It is an important guarantee for success in battles that all Party members lead Party life properly and that Party organizations enhance their role. If Party members neglect Party life and do not observe Party discipline, victory cannot be ensured.

Party organizations should guide the Party life in keeping with

battle situations. Party meetings on the firing line, for instance, should not be held for long hours, following all the formalities. In combat situations Party meetings should be held in a militant way. Party organizations should guide Party life of their members meticulously, give Party assignments to them without exception and sum up the results in time. Thus all of them will be active all the time with high political consciousness.

An iron military discipline should be established in the units. Discipline is the life and soul of an army and a source of the fighting capacity. In the units soldiers should be educated to observe military discipline voluntarily.

Efficient military and political training is an important task of the soldiers.

Knowledge will give you a firm confidence in the victory of the revolution and enable you to carry out your combat missions with credit. Knowledge is power. Soldiers tend to neglect study in war conditions. This should not be the case. The more difficult and complex the situation is, the harder you must study military and political affairs and the current events. This is the way you can clearly understand the will of the Party and the demands of the situation and courageously fight on, overcoming all the difficulties and hardships.

Before all else you should study politics well. Party line and policy should be brought home to the soldiers through political lessons in the People's Army units. Only then can the soldiers breathe and act in accordance with the Party's desire. Military subjects and current events, too, should be studied well.

Proper use of newspapers, the Motivation Worker's Handbook and other publications is important in improving the training of soldiers. They should make it a rule to read the editorials and other articles of newspapers in particular. These reflect the policy of our Party and the demands of the situation. Motivation workers should always carry newspapers and the Motivation Worker's Handbook with them and read them to the soldiers in the intervals between marches or battles. If the soldiers digest all these publications, they will be able to grasp the

Party's intention and the latest developments, know the happenings at the home front and learn from the battle experience of other units. The General Political Bureau of the People's Army should take steps to increase the circulation of the army paper and the Motivation Worker's Handbook and to deliver them quickly to the soldiers.

The People's Army men should acquire the traits of overcoming hardships and difficulties by their own efforts. As you know, in the bygone days the anti-Japanese guerrillas fought Japanese imperialism for 15 years and defeated it under very hard conditions without any home front of a state and any support of a regular army. Under the slogan of self-reliance they captured the enemy's weapons to arm themselves and solved the problems of food and clothing by themselves. On top of it, they had to fight the enemy scores of times a day, struggling through six-feet deep snowdrifts and often without eating for several days on end. Whenever in difficulties the anti-Japanese guerrillas helped each other and fought firmly united with one mind and one will. The People's Army must carry forward this revolutionary spirit of the anti-Japanese guerrillas. You say that when you run out of ammunition you wrest it from the enemy and fight on. This is the way a revolutionary soldier should fight.

You say that you do not feel homesick for your parents, though it is a long time since your enlistment. Why not? You must be too busy fighting the Americans to be homesick. The warmer one's love of home, parents and brothers, the more bitter one's hatred for the enemy and the braver one is in battle.

I would like to give each of you a wristwatch and a sub-machine gun with an inscription: "Wipe out the US imperialist aggressors!" as souvenirs of this occasion. This gun is permeated with the precious sweat and blood of the revolutionary forerunners and the people and also with the desire of the Party and the people to annihilate the enemy, defend the country and liberate the people downtrodden by the American imperialist aggressors in the south. With this gun you must destroy the aggressors to the last man. You will keep it in your hands until you liberate the south and reunify the country. You will tell the

valiant soldiers at the front that our workers are making such excellent weapons on their own and the people in the rear, too, are fighting well.

In the future the situation at the front will turn more and more in favour of our People's Army and people, and we will triumph without fail.

Please convey my best regards and instructions to your fellow soldiers, back at the front.

The soldiers on the field wished the Supreme Commander a long life in good health. If they fight well in good health, I, too, shall be healthy. I wish all the soldiers at the front will fight on in good health and more courageously for the Party, the country and the people. My heart is always with the men fighting in the trenches.

See all of you again when the American imperialist aggressors are wiped out and the war is won.

ON SOME QUESTIONS ARISING IN OUR LITERATURE AND ART

Talk with Writers and Artists

June 30, 1951

Writers and artists,

Our writers and artists are entrusted with very important tasks today when the Korean people are fighting a sacred war of liberation against the US imperialist aggressors in defence of the freedom and independence of the country. As engineers of the human soul, they should vividly reflect in their works our people's lofty patriotism and staunch fighting spirit and their unshakable conviction in final victory. They should see that their works serve our fighting people as a powerful weapon and as a great inspiration spurring them to ultimate victory.

Since liberation there has been rapid progress in our literature and art and our writers and artists have scored brilliant achievements.

But we must not rest content with past achievements. We must remember that our writers and artists have many shortcomings in their work. They have failed to reflect the noble ideas and sentiments of the people and their life and work on a high artistic plane. Their creative activities have lost touch with life and are lagging behind our rapidly advancing realities. Our writers and artists have failed to portray vividly, on a high level of representation and artistic form, men and women engaged in the creation of a new life. They have failed to produce excellent literary and art works in a large number that can be made

textbooks of life. They still do not skilfully depict our people's creative labour and heroic struggle. They fail to reflect well the criticism and hatred of things old and the love of and longing for the new.

Many literary and art works have been produced by our writers and artists during the Fatherland Liberation War, but, in terms of both ideological content and artistic quality, it cannot be said that they are worthy of our heroic people.

Availing myself of this opportunity at our small gathering today, I would like to speak to you writers and artists on some important problems in our literature and art.

Our writers and artists must reflect our people's lofty patriotism in their works. Patriotism stems only from a good knowledge of the past of one's country and of the fine traditions, culture and customs of one's nation. Patriotism is not an abstract concept, but is boundless love for the land, history and culture of one's country. It is manifested also in attachment to one's native place and its people, affection for one's parents, wife and children. Patriotism takes concrete forms and finds concrete expression in human feelings.

Writers and artists should therefore present the lofty patriotism of our people concretely and profoundly through the thoughts, feelings and lives of real people, instead of filling their works with abstract and dry slogans. Only then will the patriotism represented in their works be concrete and true to life.

Never before in their history have the Korean people displayed such lofty patriotism as today. At the front and in the rear, in town and country, our people are displaying patriotic devotion unimaginable in the past.

This shows that our people are deeply concerned about the fate of their country and that they are fully conscious of their historical mission. It also shows that our people, breaking through the limits of narrow nationalism, have become profoundly aware of their position and stand from the viewpoint of world history.

The Korean people of today are different from what they were under Japanese imperialist rule, or from what they were in the feudal era of the Ri dynasty.

Literary and art works must mirror this great change in our nation's history.

Narrow nationalist or chauvinist sentiments are alien to lofty patriotism and national pride, which find genuine expression only when these remnants of outdated ideologies are totally eliminated. It goes without saying, therefore, that our patriotism must be combined with the thorough internationalist spirit which allows no vestige of nationalism and chauvinism.

Further, writers and artists must portray the heroism and fortitude of our People's Army. Though young, our People's Army has accumulated incomparably rich combat experience. In the course of the first offensive our army learned how to wage offensive action to defeat the enemy, and during the strategic retreat it learned how to regroup its ranks in the face of a strong enemy and how to prepare its combat forces for a fresh offensive. Our army has thus become strengthened and grown into a full-fledged modern army.

The heroism of the People's Army is found in its mass heroism, not in the heroism of a few individual soldiers. Innumerable acts of heroism and courage in battle are graphic evidence that our men and officers are fully conscious of their sacred duty to the country and the people and that they are fulfilling it magnificently.

Writers and artists must portray the countless heroes who have sprung from the people. There are some who take pains to seek novelty or a legendary figure in order, they claim, to portray heroes. Such an attitude in creative work makes it impossible to depict our heroes truthfully. Our heroes are yesterday's workers, peasants, office workers and students, and their children. Describe their deep feelings and human traits, their lofty ideas and convictions and their unaffected, simple behaviour as they are, and you will have caught the image of the heroes of our Republic today.

In this respect, too, you must not proceed from an abstract concept but from concrete reality. Remember that abstraction means death to art.

It is to be regretted that among our writers there are those who, not

acquainted with the qualities of a hero and without making a detailed study of him, try to portray him after hearing his brief personal history. This not only debases the hero himself but shows intolerable disdain for our readers.

Our writers must always remember that their works go into the hands of the people. They must bear in mind that people read their works not as a better means of killing time than taking a nap but to acquire a deeper understanding of life, to learn something from the lofty spirit of ordinary people who serve the country and the people devotedly and to increase their confidence in the happy future of mankind.

Our literary and art works must not only represent the struggle of heroes at the front but also the struggle of our people who have fought heroically in the rear and in enemy-occupied areas.

Writers and artists must produce works which will help our People's Army men and all the people strengthen their confidence in victory. One's conviction of victory becomes real and acquires great force only when one knows one's strength and conditions well and is able to estimate the enemy's strength and situation correctly. Our writers and artists, while portraying the indestructible superiority of our social system and the inexhaustible strength of our people, their unity and high ideological level and so on, should also give a clear picture of the enemy's fatal weak points and his situation. It is important here to describe on a high artistic plane that the war we are waging now is a just war—a war for the freedom and independence of the country and the happiness of all generations to come.

Also, our writers and artists should arouse burning hatred for the enemy through their works. Here the question arises as to how to depict the enemy. Our writers paint the US imperialist aggressors as cunning. That is right, of course. It must be remembered, however, that not only are they cunning, they are also the most heinous and foul barbarians of modern times. The US imperialists have shown their true features in all their ugliness in Korea.

The US robbers have reduced our towns and villages to ashes and are massacring our people. American missionaries who once presented

themselves as “apostles of God” in Korea are now assembling pregnant women by the score and shooting them down en masse with carbines and running over children with tanks. The “gentlemen of Wall Street”, who Used to boast arrogantly to the world of the “Goddess of Liberty”, now strip Korean girls naked and carry them oil in cars and tanks, perpetrating outrages and atrocities against them which surpass all human imagination.

The barbarities of the US imperialists in Korea are the most heinous crime against humanity and an indescribable insult to posterity. They will arouse the wrath and curse of the people of the world for all ages to come. We must thoroughly expose the crimes of the US bandits to the people of the world and teach our people to hate them.

Writers and artists should not only expose these barbarities but also bring out in their works the evil of the traitorous Syngman Rhee clique.

But mere description of the enemy’s atrocities does not in itself mean realistic art, nor do works of this sort always invoke hostility against the enemy. It is to be regretted that the naturalistic technique still finds glaring expression in the works of our writers and artists. Without thoroughly rectifying such a tendency, it is impossible to advance our literature and art in a wholesome direction.

Writers and artists should know that the real creator of great art is always the people. No excellent work of art ever fails to command the people’s love, and if a work of art is not understood and appreciated by the people, it cannot be excellent. Our writers and artists must delve deeply into the life of the people. They must study the people’s literature, folk tales, folk songs, etc., and make extensive use of them in their creative activities. But not all folk songs are good, and not all folk tales are worth using.

Here a question arises as to what we should inherit from the past and how we should use it. From the literature and art of the past we must take over and develop those things that are genuinely of the people and cast aside whatever is unscientific and vulgar.

There are people who think that inheriting national culture means singing all the old folk songs as they were sung in the past, but that is

wrong. Such a tendency runs counter to the basic line for the development of our national culture. We must preserve the fine features peculiar to our nation in folk song, music, dance and other spheres, but, at the same time, create new rhythms, new melodies and new rhythmic forms demanded by the new life and learn to put new content in the rich, varied artistic forms created by our people.

While taking over and developing our own literary and art heritage, we should study that which is excellent and progressive in the literature and art of the Soviet Union, China and other People's Democracies, thereby enriching our national culture still further.

Our literature and art do not present the Soviet Union satisfactorily as the bulwark of world peace and the Soviet people as an eternal friend of our people. They give an incomplete picture of the Chinese People's Volunteers, who are valiantly fighting shoulder to shoulder with the Korean People's Army, and poorly represent the peoples of the People's Democracies who are giving us internationalist support and encouragement.

Our Korean writers and artists must produce many works of high artistic quality on these subjects, so that they strike terror into the hearts of the aggressors and warmongers and give songs of warm friendship to peace-loving people the world over.

Our writers and artists should practise lively criticism and self-criticism on their creative activities. Works revealing either a formalistic trend or cosmopolitan element have also appeared in our literature and art since liberation. Yet, literary and art criticism still remains backward.

Stagnation and backwardness in this sphere must be overcome if creative work is to go forward. It goes without saying that we cannot expect literature and art to develop soundly if there is no criticism. Needless to say, however, criticism should not proceed along the lines of "Let's smash up," but should be constructive in every sense.

Some critics still have the tendency to "knock down" authors and their works; instead of giving them advice and assistance and indicating to them the right path for their creative work. This sort of

criticism is not the literary criticism we are calling for.

The critics should be thoroughgoing and sharp in their criticism and, at the same time, their criticism should be permeated with the comradely spirit of mutual help and cooperation so that they correct defects along with the authors, produce better results and contribute to our treasure house of culture. Committing errors in creative work is nothing to be feared. Writers may make mistakes and their works may reveal defects. What is to be feared most is that the defects are not corrected and that they are connived at.

Not only should the unity of writers and critics be strengthened, but also the unity of all the creative teams in the literary and art world. An implacable struggle must be fought against any and every sectarian act and tendency that impedes the implementation of the Party's policies on literature and art and weakens the unity of the literary and art world.

Dear writers and artists,

You have the glorious task of introducing our people's heroic struggle to the world and handing it down to posterity through your creative activities. More than ever, our people are showing a keen interest in your work.

Art demanded by a heroic people must naturally be heroic, and the art demanded by a people that has entered the world arena must naturally rise to world levels. The people expect you to work heart and soul to create such literature and art.

You are glorious soldiers on the literary and art front. How can a writer create patriotic works if he is not an ardent patriot, and how can an artist create art for the people if he has no love for the people?

Outstanding world writers and artists were great patriots and great champions of a happy life for the people. So, they have the love and respect of all people down the ages and are the pride of mankind.

Today, the Korean people are valiantly marching to final victory in the Fatherland Liberation War, overcoming all difficulties and ordeals. I firmly believe that you writers and artists, the best sons and daughters of our heroic people, will emerge on the world scene through great works of art and will make our glorious era shine for all generations to come.

ON STRENGTHENING AIR DEFENCE

**Talk with Cadres of the Supreme Headquarters
of the Korean People's Army**

July 13, 1951

Today I would like to speak to you about some problems for strengthening air defence.

The US imperialist aggressors sustained a serious loss by the successive powerful counterattack of our People's Army in the fifth operation of the third stage of the Fatherland Liberation War. The enemy was encircled and annihilated everywhere and lost heavily in men and materiel.

Having suffered the repeated ignominious defeats by the powerful attack of our People's Army units, the US imperialists were thrown into confusion and have proposed armistice negotiations to our side.

Insidiously manoeuvring to use the negotiation hall in retrieving their military and political setbacks at the front, the US imperialists are attempting to launch another military offensive by increasing their forces behind the screen of the armistice talks.

They are scheming to seize the mountainous areas of strategic importance on the eastern and central sectors of the front by landing their fresh forces in the areas of Wonsan and Thongchon and by joining their efforts with the forces attacking from the ground. At present, they are preparing on a large scale for landing to launch a new campaign and, at the same time, reinforcing their air force. The US imperialist aggressors are expanding their air base in Okinawa,

increasing the number of B-29 bombers and bringing various new-type aircraft to air bases at Kimpho, Suwon, Taegu, Pohang and other parts of south Korea.

In an attempt to disrupt our home front, they are now mobilizing a large air force, destroying power stations, reservoirs, railways and bridges and killing our innocent people in cold blood by indiscriminately bombing Pyongyang, Wonsan, Hamhung, Chongjin, Sariwon, Haeju, Nampho, Sinuiju and other big towns and villages.

This urgently demands that we further strengthen air defence. More effective air defence is all the more important and urgent especially because the enemy is increasing the air force on a large scale, pinning hope on “air supremacy”, in an attempt to recover from his defeat on the ground.

What is most important in strengthening air defence is to establish a strict system by which to ensure a unified command and control of this effort.

Until recently the Supreme Headquarters had no department to perform such a function. In other words, no one was specifically in charge of air defence. We have newly set up an air-defence department in the Supreme Headquarters. The main purpose lies in establishing a thoroughgoing system of unified air-defence command. This department will exercise unified command and control of air defence both for the frontline units and the home front.

The air-defence department should thoroughly establish an air watch and warning system and keep it under its unified direction.

Air defence can be efficient only when this system spots the enemy planes quickly and alerts anti-aircraft artillery and air force units promptly.

Air watches should be wide-awake and spot enemy planes early. To this end, surveillance by radars and visual means should be combined properly. Air-defence surveillance should not rely exclusively on radars. Radars may not be able to spot all enemy planes intruding into our country where there are many high mountains. So the two means of surveillance should be combined properly.

For efficient visual surveillance air watches should be posted on the top of mountains in the frontline areas, on the west and east coasts, and all other parts of the country where enemy air invasion is probable. Air observation posts should be located in such a way that enemy planes can be spotted with naked eyes simultaneously from two points. In addition, it would be a good idea to have alternate posts. Then, any of them is bound to catch sight of enemy aircraft.

On spotting an enemy plane, the observation post should warn the central post and the units concerned, and the central post in turn should inform the Air-Defence Office of the Ministry of the Interior. Only then can we shoot down enemy planes without fail and suffer less damage.

The Supreme Headquarters should quickly fill up the staff of the Air-Defence Department and man the units under its direct control according to the table of organization, and provide the air-defence units preferentially with the radio sets, weapons and other necessary equipment.

Further, the movement of aircraft-hunting teams should be further intensified.

This movement is the best method of mass anti-aircraft struggle. It can be easily organized anywhere and will ensure mobility in shooting down enemy planes. Forming many of such teams is also very economical. It is said that hundreds of anti-aircraft shells are fired to hit an enemy plane. But a lot of them will be saved if we organize many aircraft-hunting teams and shoot down enemy planes with small arms.

In the future, these teams should be increased in number so that each of the tactically important heights and major targets can be protected with a dense network of small arms fire.

It is wrong in air defence to overestimate the role of anti-aircraft artillery and air force and underestimate that of aircraft-hunting teams equipped with small arms. It is true that the former plays an important role in air defence. But it is impossible to dispose anti-aircraft guns on every height, nor is there any need to do so. Combatting enemy aircraft

with a large force of aircraft-hunting teams is most effective in our country with many mountains.

Each infantry regiment should have two to three of such teams equipped with large-calibre machine guns, heavy machine guns, anti-tank rifles, rifles and other small arms.

We have good experience in shooting down enemy planes with small arms in the days of the anti-Japanese armed struggle. We have also the experience of our People's Army men having downed enemy aircraft with heavy machine guns in Mt. Kyongam of Sariwon and also with rifles at the time of the first southward advance during the Fatherland Liberation War. Such experience should be disseminated and generalized widely among the soldiers, so that they carry on an extensive drive to shoot down enemy planes with small arms.

The practice of assigning or dismissing the members of aircraft-hunting teams arbitrarily, instead of fixing them, and that of dissolving existing teams, should be eliminated. Since the aircraft-hunting team is the first of its kind we have ever had, we can hardly expect that everything will go smoothly from the outset. It is natural that the growth and development of the new is beset with difficulties and obstacles. The aircraft-hunting team movement, too, will get on the track and show results only when it has accumulated experience, surmounting difficulties and obstacles for a certain period. If commanding officers raise their organizing function and give proper training to the members of the teams, this movement will prove quite successful in a short span of time.

Massive development of this movement should be coupled with the continuous strengthening of anti-aircraft artillery and air force units.

Anti-aircraft artillery plays an important role in air defence. A strong anti-aircraft artillery is needed to protect major targets; it should be massed around such targets.

The anti-aircraft artillery force involved in the air defence of Pyongyang is now deployed rather in a dispersed manner. Such a disposition will make it difficult to shoot down enemy planes. Anti-aircraft guns should be massed for the defence of important

targets. Medium-and small-calibre guns should be located in such a way as to ensure integral fire coordination in keeping with the characters of the targets to be protected. In case a medium-calibre AA battery is disposed separately, it should have attached weapons capable of killing low-flying targets and of protecting itself. Since the enemy planes are now intensifying bombing on Pyongyang, we should concretely examine the city's air defence and take elaborate measures.

Air force, too, should be strengthened. Since we have not yet many planes, we need not have two separate air forces—one exclusively for air defence, and the other for close air support. Separate air forces would make it impossible to mass air power in its employment and to ensure unified leadership. We should, therefore, have a single air force in keeping with our actual conditions and give it close-air-support, air-defence and coastal-defence missions.

To continue. Close cooperation should be ensured among anti-aircraft artillery, air force and aircraft-hunting teams. Their close coordination is very important in air defence. Their harmonious development and concerted actions alone will ensure success in combatting modern enemy aircraft. Fire should be coordinated mainly by boundaries and altitudes, and the anti-aircraft artillery units and aircraft-hunting teams involved in fire coordination should be informed of the codes and signals for the identification of friendly aircraft. Only then, the artillery units and hunting teams will be able to distinguish between friend and foe in the air.

Next, we should make a careful study of the nature of activities and tactics of enemy planes and take appropriate countermeasures.

In all battles, ground, naval and air, the enemy cannot be countered by appropriate tactics unless one knows the nature of enemy actions and his tactics. Only when a wrestler knows his rival's skill beforehand can he take advantage of his weak points and trip up the opponent or apply belly throw. The same is true of anti-aircraft battles. A good knowledge of the nature of enemy air actions and tactics will enable us to use effective countermeasures and strike the enemy on his weak spot.

At present, the enemy has made a number of tactical changes in his aerial warfare. This demands that we take suitable countermeasures.

Aircraft-hunting teams should not have firing positions at fixed spots. They should have one or two alternate positions so that they can shoot down enemy aircraft by moving from one position to another whenever necessary according to the nature of enemy air actions and tactics. Along with this, they should set up dummy positions and mock targets and the like in many places, and lure and shoot down the enemy.

Thoroughgoing measures should be taken to prevent damage from bombing and strafing by the enemy. In particular, units and supply service facilities should be dispersed and camouflaged properly.

ON EXTENSIVE USE OF MORTARS

**Instruction No. 00468 of the Supreme Commander
of the Korean People's Army**

August 11, 1951

The experience of our People's Army units in their heroic battles against the American and British armed interventionists and the puppet Syngman Rhee's army shows that 82mm and 120mm mortars are powerful fire-support weapons for the infantry in mountainous terrains. Nevertheless, most of the infantry commanding officers still do not know how to use mortars effectively and even tend to underestimate them.

The 82mm mortar of the infantry battalion is very simple in its structure. The crew needed to operate this requires a comparatively short training period. It also has special features as regards the effectiveness of its shells as compared with those of 76mm.

The 120mm mortar of the infantry regiment is a powerful weapon capable of destroying or suppressing enemy troops. It can hit targets in trenches and on reverse slopes and fire freely over steep defilades in mountainous areas, which would be impossible for the artillery to do.

Mortars are much more useful in mountains than other guns.

Mortars can be emplaced in rugged mountains without difficulty, and their firing positions, if well chosen to suit the terrain features, are safe from enemy air attack and artillery fire. So the enemy will find it most difficult to neutralize our mortars.

As our war experience shows, mortar units play an important role in mountain warfare. They can be readily employed in mountains where artillery action is difficult.

Some infantry battalion and regimental commanders are taking a wrong attitude towards mortar employment, despite its many advantages.

Some infantry battalion commanders are committing a serious mistake: when their forces advance, they only use a very small number of mortars, leaving the bulk of them behind on the pretext that ammunition supply is difficult. This prevents the full use of mortar fire in mass destruction of enemy manpower and weapons. This is because they do not realize that an extensive use of mortars will bring greater battle results.

Commanders of some infantry battalions and regiments are oblivious of the fundamental question, that is, the extensive employment of mortar units within the advancing infantry battle formation in firing over the heads of their attacking infantry forces, through gaps between small units, on flanks or on slopes, and do not assign these missions to mortar unit commanders in concrete terms.

Mortar units are isolated or left out of combat action because infantry commanders do not help their mortar men in step with the forward movement of the battle formation.

The crew of an 82mm mortar has been increased to eight persons to help them to overcome the difficulties in mountain warfare. But this does not preclude the need of infantry units to help mortar units where the latter's passage is difficult.

In order to correct the aforesaid major shortcomings quickly and make an effective use of mortars in the future, I issue the following instructions:

1. The above-mentioned shortcomings in the combat employment of mortars shall be made known to the commanders of the mortar units and infantry battalions and regiments.

2. That the mortar is one of the powerful infantry weapons shall be explained to every soldier, and lessons shall be given on the tactical and technical data of the mortar and the basic combat mission of mortar units in August 1951.

3. Necessary measures to use the mortar widely shall be taken, and the errors rectified quickly.

4. The Front Commander shall report to me by August 15, 1951, regarding the steps he has taken to implement these instructions.

REPORT AT THE PYONGYANG MEETING TO CELEBRATE THE SIXTH ANNIVERSARY OF THE AUGUST 15 LIBERATION

August 14, 1951

Dear fellow countrymen, brothers and sisters,

We Korean people are observing the sixth anniversary of the August 15 liberation amidst the rigorous circumstances of the great Fatherland Liberation War.

In the forefront of the struggle of the peoples throughout the world to defend their nations and their countries' independence and win peace, the Korean people are now carrying out the historic task of annihilating the US imperialist-led armed interventionists from 16 countries and the traitorous Syngman Rheeites. They are playing a great role in checking the outbreak of a third world war for which the US and British imperialists are preparing frenziedly.

During the past one year and two months of the Fatherland Liberation War our people by delivering heavy blows at the US imperialists and the puppet Syngman Rhee's clique, their cat's paw, have manifested the heroism and fortitude of the Korean people and demonstrated to the whole world their great ability to defend the freedom and independence of the country.

In the course of the war the political awareness of the Korean people has risen as never before. Never before have the cohesion of all the people and the united front of all political parties been consolidated

as they are today. Both at the battle and home fronts, our people have made every effort to win the war and thus shown that they can achieve the ultimate victory.

In the prolonged warfare against the invaders of 16 countries headed by such a strong aggressor as the US imperialists, the Korean people are striking a telling blow at them and registering a historic victory. This is due to the fact that they have become strong through the building up of democracy in all fields of politics, the economy and culture, holding power firmly in their hands over the last six years.

On behalf of the Government of the Democratic People's Republic of Korea, on this occasion of the sixth anniversary of the August 15 liberation, I would like to extend felicitations to the officers and men of the Korean People's Army and all the Korean people who are displaying such unparalleled heroism and fortitude in the prolonged war to defend the motherland and who are commanding the unbounded respect of the people throughout the world.

Dear fellow countrymen,

I am going to review the Fatherland Liberation War waged by us for 14 months.

As you all know, the Government of our Republic, together with all the Korean people, has been, for years, making every possible effort to solve the question of national reunification in a peaceful way.

But the US imperialists instigated the treacherous Syngman Rhee clique to provoke a fratricidal war on June 25 last year in order to realize the so-called "northward expedition" that they had been planning for so long with the aim of conquering the whole of our country.

Only three days after unleashing the fratricidal war in Korea, the US imperialists started the direct armed intervention against our country in what they called "police action" in the name of the UN. As a result, our country was enveloped in the flames of the aggressive war kindled by the US imperialists. All the patriotic Koreans rose to fight for victory in the great Fatherland Liberation War with an indomitable fighting will and the bitterest animosity against the enemy's

outrageous and inhuman acts of aggression.

Our People's Army displayed heroism and devotion to the utmost in order to safeguard the honour and freedom of the country. Repulsing the enemy's invasion and giving fatal blows to his troops and materiel, the officers and men of the People's Army advanced down to the Raktong River, and shattered with one stroke the design of the so-called "northward expedition" which had been worked out meticulously by the US imperialists.

Coming to this pass, the US imperialists first sent to Korea a few US divisions stationed in Japan to rescue their old henchman, Syngman Rhee, and attempted to stop the advance of the People's Army. But they could not stop it. After that the US imperialists mobilized their armed forces on the Pacific, part of its Mediterranean Fleet and even the troops of their satellites and landed them at Inchon. Taking advantage of our Republic's inadequate preparations of war mobilization to oppose imperialist aggression, the enemy sent massive forces to the Korean war for the purpose of occupying the whole area of the northern half. As a result, the People's Army had to make a strategic retreat in the face of the attack made by the enemy's formidable land, naval and air forces which were several times greater than ours in number, and a large area of the northern half was occupied temporarily by the aggressors.

The enemy killed a great many people in the areas occupied by them, destroyed the peaceful industrial establishments and cultural facilities built by the sweat of our people's brow and reduced our towns and villages to ashes. They tried to subjugate our people the way the Japanese imperialists had done.

But, in the grim days when our country's existence was threatened, our people stood solidly united around the Government of the Republic and struggled tenaciously for their country. They were determined to fight to the last drop of their blood, braving all sorts of sacrifices and hardships, fully convinced that victory would finally be theirs.

We actively enlisted workers, peasants, intellectuals and students in the People's Army, reinforced it quantitatively and qualitatively, and

thus prepared the forces for a counteroffensive in a short span of time. Meanwhile, all the people devoted themselves to their tasks at the home front and in giving assistance to the battle front.

Even in the areas which were under the temporary occupation of the enemy, the people enraged at the enemy's brutalities fought against them, never succumbing to their repressions and massacre, and carried out daring guerrilla warfare in step with the advance of the People's Army.

The Chinese people who have been on friendly terms with the Korean people through many years of revolutionary struggles could not look on with arms folded at the grave situation our people were in. Many of the best sons and daughters of the Chinese people organized volunteer units of their own accord and took part in the Korean war to help the Korean people to surmount their difficulties and crises. This just action of assistance taken by the Chinese people not only increased the Korean people's conviction of victory but also served as a tremendous force with which to annihilate the beastly invaders from 16 countries including the imperialist United States.

In close coordination, the valorous Korean People's Army and Chinese People's Volunteers conducted five operations and dealt a heavy blow at the enemy.

Towards the end of October last year the first operation was launched in order to destroy and hold in check the enemy who had invaded as far as the area north of the Chongchon River. In this operation the gallant People's Army and Chinese People's Volunteers forces delivered crushing blows at the enemy's corps d'elite, including the 2nd and 24th US Divisions and the Turkish Brigade, as well as the 1st and 6th Divisions of the south Korean puppet army. They completely liberated the area north of the Chongchon River, and checked the enemy's attack, smashing MacArthur's absurd plan to occupy the whole area of Korea up to the borders on the Amnok River before "Christmas".

Late in November last year our People's Army and the Chinese People's Volunteers went on to the second operation, giving no respite

to the enemy. In this operation most of the 25th US Division, the 29th British Brigade and the 7th and 8th Divisions of the puppet army were encircled and crushed on the Chongchon River; and on Lake Jangjin and the east coast, the main forces of the 1st US Marine Division and the 7th US Division, and the main forces of the 3rd Division and the Capital Division of the puppet army were crushed and exterminated. This resulted in the complete liberation of Pyongyang, our country's democratic capital, and the areas of Hamhung and Wonsan.

The third operation took place from late December last year until early January of this year. In a few days our People's Army and the Chinese People's Volunteers overran the pillboxes along the 38th Parallel, built by the US imperialist armed forces of aggression and the composite forces from Britain, Australia and the like, and broke through their defence line which stretched over a distance of more than 760 kilometres; they pursued and wiped out the enemy in flight, liberated Seoul in a flash and went on to liberate the important places such as Inchon, Suwon, Hongchon, Hoengsong and Wonju. In this operation they totally or partially destroyed the 2nd and 5th Divisions of the puppet Syngman Rhee's army, the 24th and 25th US Divisions, the 21st and 19th British Brigades and Tank Regiment, and many other troops.

With a view to wiping out the enemy's combat effectives en masse to baffle their plan of landing, we carried out the fourth and the fifth operation during the period from late January till the beginning of June this year. In these operations our People's Army and the Chinese People's Volunteers encircled and smashed most or part of the 3rd, 24th and 25th US Divisions and the 1st US Cavalry Division, British and Turkish units and the units of the 1st, 6th, 7th, 3rd and 9th Divisions of the puppet army, thus inflicting tremendous losses on the enemy's troops and equipment.

We can sum up the results of our brilliant successes achieved in a year since the beginning of the war as follows.

According to the minimized figures announced by the US imperialists themselves, the losses the enemy has sustained in the

Korean war amount to more than 50,000 million dollars and the losses in manpower and materiel exceed one half of what was sustained during World War II. More than 598,000 enemy troops were killed, wounded or taken captive by our army. The enemy's weapons and equipment captured or destroyed include 146,000 rifles, 68,838 guns, 9,145 motorcars and 1,997 tanks and armoured vehicles. We brought down or captured 1,730 enemy planes, sank 122 naval vessels and captured 120 wagons of ammunition.

During the Fatherland Liberation War in the period of a little more than a year, great successes were registered not only at the front but also in the rear which aided the front.

All the people more clearly realized that the people's government was the only true government for national independence and the people, and they rallied around it. They took an active part in the work of aiding the front and consolidating the rear under the slogan "Everything for victory in the war!".

Our workers produced more arms, ammunition and other military supplies for the People's Army in good time. In particular, the railway and other transport workers succeeded in ensuring wartime transport in spite of the heavy bombing perpetrated by the enemy every day.

The shortage of manpower and draught animals in the countryside and the enemy's intensive air raids did not prevent the peasants from rising as one to produce more food in response to the appeal from the Government of the Republic. In spite of hardships the peasants finished sowing this year half a month earlier than last year and completed weeding also in good time. Consequently, we can now expect a bumper harvest this year.

We are especially proud of the fact that the women are playing an active part in the rural and industrial areas in place of their husbands who have gone to the front. I highly value the meritorious deeds of the Korean women who have displayed unbounded patriotic devotion in rebuilding the roads and aiding the front day and night even through the rigours of winter.

Our men of science, culture and the arts, too, have served the state

and people devotedly at the front and in the rear. They put out a large amount of scientific and theoretical literature and created excellent realist works of patriotism.

The analysis of the one year and two months of the Fatherland Liberation War shows that the US imperialists who had schemed to occupy the whole of our territory in a trice and enslave our nation, failed completely in their wild designs and that the morale of the US imperialist troops is getting lower every day because of their successive defeats in a number of operations; also, the contradictions among the imperialists themselves are being aggravated.

It shows on the other hand that the Korean people tempered in the war are becoming more and more tenacious and that the combat capabilities of the Korean People's Army and the Chinese People's Volunteers have increased even further.

Firm foundations have been laid in the war for our complete victory and the Korean people have grown invincible.

Fellow countrymen,

Through the struggle against the invaders headed by the US imperialists, our own forces have gained in strength; so have the international democratic forces which are giving us moral and material support and encouragement. The peoples of the People's Democracies and hundreds of millions of freedom-loving people the world over are now united firm as a rock.

They are waging a great struggle to win a durable peace and prevent the fascist imperialist war of aggression.

Since World War II, the Soviet Union has already entered upon its task of building a communist society, for which it is carrying out the postwar Five-Year National Economic Plan successfully. The Soviet Five-Year Plan envisages a 90-per cent increase in total industrial output value in 1950 as against 1940, the year before the war. This year's total industrial output value has exceeded the prewar level by 70 per cent and, particularly, the steel industry has already surpassed the goal under the Five-Year Plan. Big headway has been made in agriculture, too. Last year the total grain output increased to 7,600

million *pood*. Such tremendous Soviet achievements in economic construction, not only improve the living standards of its people and promote their well-being, but also ensure favourable conditions for the economic development of the People's Democracies.

Under the leadership of the Communist Party of China, the Chinese people overthrew the Jiang Jieshi's reactionary Guomindang rule and founded the People's Republic of China by unifying the whole of China. They brought about a great democratic progress in all spheres of politics, economy and culture, thus becoming part of the gigantic forces of the world democratic camp.

The People's Democracies in East and Southeast Europe are advancing victoriously on the road to socialism.

National-liberation struggles are going on in the colonial or semi-colonial countries of Southeast Asia. The struggles of the Vietnamese people against the French invaders and of the Malay and Philippine peoples against the American and British imperialists are gaining momentum every day.

The working-class movements are on a steady upswing in the capitalist countries, too. The workers in the capitalist countries throughout the world who are groaning in poverty and hunger are fighting fiercely against imperialist exploitation: 70,000 US textile workers waged a nationwide strike which stopped the production of ordered munitions; 9,000 aviators of US airlines went on a strike; steel workers downed their tools in West Germany; ship workers were on strike in France and Italy; coal miners carried out a strike in Japan; and the employees of the Iranian Oil Company also went on a strike.

People throughout the world are waging an intensive campaign to defend peace against the provokers of a new war. More than 800 million people are already taking part in this campaign.

The Soviet Union has time and again made proposals at the UN General Assembly on the conclusion of a peace treaty between the five great powers, disarmament, the banning of atomic weapons, and so on. These proposals are aimed to ensure a durable peace throughout the world, prevent imperialists from meddling in the internal affairs of

other countries, enable many peoples of the world to hew out their own destiny and provide all nations with equal rights and liberty.

But the US and British imperialists have turned down these just Soviet proposals and are attempting and resorting to military adventures. US imperialism is emerging as the chief of the provokers of a fresh war with wicked designs of world domination. Taking advantage of the difficulties that exist in a number of European countries after World War II, the US imperialists are interfering directly in their internal affairs and subjugating them militarily, politically and economically.

The US imperialists are trying hard to put down the national-liberation movements in the colonial and semi-colonial countries of Asia and are running amuck trying to rule the East at their will as they did before. They are also plotting to squash the working-class and communist movements which are gaining momentum in many capitalist countries. With a view to attaining their ambition for world domination they are making frenzied preparations for another aggressive war while deceiving the world's people and their own countrymen and covering up their piratic invasion with a mendacious "anti-communist defence task".

Spreading the most barbarous ideas and theory of human hatred at home and poisoning their people with the venom of chauvinism and militarism, the US and British imperialists are preparing for a new, third world war.

It is reported that the US imperialists will augment their military budget by more than 1,000 million dollars annually and that out of this year's military budget expenditure amounting to 60,000 million dollars, they will spend 34,700 million dollars on the manufacture of aircraft, warships, tanks and so on.

In order to realize their aggressive ambitions the US imperialists have never hesitated to carry out openly any heinous and reactionary murderous policy. We Koreans know this fact better than anybody else.

In Korea the Americans committed atrocities the like of which

cannot be found in the history of any nation. In the areas of the northern half which were temporarily occupied by them, the US army of aggression perpetrated all sorts of savageries such as murder, arson, rape and plunder and went to the extent of massacring old people and children. However brazenly the Americans may utter humanitarian words under the mask of democracy, they cannot hoodwink anybody in the world, leave alone the Korean people.

The American and British aggressors ignore any international treaties and agreements in order to realize their aggressive ambitions. Disregarding the Cairo Declaration, and the Yalta and Potsdam Agreements adopted and concluded by themselves, they are rearming Germany and reviving Japanese militarism.

For the purpose of invading the Soviet Union and People's Democracies, the US imperialists have rigged up the "North Atlantic Treaty Organization" under the cloak of a "defensive step against the menace of communism" in Europe, and have placed at their disposal the armed forces and military plans of all the countries on the Atlantic coasts, including Britain and France, as well as the Mediterranean countries such as Greece and Turkey. They are establishing their air and naval bases and drill grounds on the territories of these countries.

In addition, the US imperialists have taken up major military bases on the Pacific for the purpose of invading Asia and enslaving the "coloured races". They have refused the just Soviet proposal for the conclusion of a peace treaty with Japan and have made frantic efforts to enter into a "separate peace treaty with Japan" to revitalize Japanese militarism and rearm its fascist army. The idea is to use Japan as an advance base for aggression in Asia and make Japanese troops the vanguard in invading Korea and the People's Republic of China. They have set up a large number of US air and naval bases in Japan and Alaska and even on the Arctic Ocean and are equipping and training the Syngman Rhee and Jiang Jieshi puppet armies in the American way.

The US imperialists are rearming Japan for the purpose of invading our Korea before any other country.

Languishing under the yoke of the colonial rule of the Japanese occupiers for nearly 40 years, the Korean people were clearly convinced that Japanese militarism was indeed their heinous enemy. If the US imperialist armed forces continue to occupy Japan and stay on there, it will be a factor for further strengthening the reactionary Japanese warlords and militarism and will pose a grave threat to Korea.

The US imperialists are perpetrating a direct armed intervention in our country through a general mobilization of their armed forces with an eye to taking up the old position of the Japanese aggressor as colonial ruler of Korea.

Whatever frenzied endeavours they may make to intimidate the people with atomic weapons and conquer them on the strength of their military technique, the US imperialists will never be able to satisfy their wicked lust for aggression.

The triumph of the great Chinese revolution, the battle results of the Vietnamese people and the courageous struggle of the Korean people who are setting themselves against the invaders of US imperialism—all this graphically shows that the Asian nations, despised and maltreated by the imperialist plunderers as “inferior nations”, are capable of safeguarding their national independence and freedom, if they take up arms and fight the enemy.

The gallant struggle of the Korean people has proved to freedom-loving people all over the world that the threat of atomic weapons will not bother in the least those people who are fighting for the sake of their country’s independence and liberty. Therefore, the war we are carrying on is a practical lesson to the imperialist marauders. It infinitely inspires the peoples of the colonial and dependent countries and serves as a banner of the liberation movement of the oppressed nations.

Fellow countrymen,

Such is the summing up of the one year and two months of the great Fatherland Liberation War we are waging now and the international situation we are in.

The US imperialist aggressors will never be able to conquer the

Korean people. What is worse, their combat effectives and materiel are being depleted in large quantities every day when they have not yet ready sources of reinforcements to carry on the war, and their internal contradictions are sharpening. So they are now in a dilemma and have had to find a way out in ceasefire. Accordingly, the US imperialists proposed truce talks with our People's Army on June 30 through the "UN" Commander Ridgway.

Why, then, did we agree to this proposal for armistice negotiations?

Regardless of the intentions that the US imperialists might have had in proposing a ceasefire first, those who had disturbed peace all along now insisted on a peaceful settlement of the problem. And why should we not have agreed to their proposal? We have proposed a peaceful solution to the Korean question and still want it now and shall insist on it in the future, too.

Besides, we did not go to strike first at the US; it is the Americans who came across the Pacific to conquer our country. But they now say that they would like to stop fighting as they have failed to conquer us. So there is no reason why we Koreans, who are a peace-loving people, should not consent to their proposal for ceasefire.

We Korean people want truce talks. Our people always want and demand peace. We need and demand peace in order to put an end to the war, reconstruct our ravaged industries, rehabilitate and develop our national economy and create a happy life again. Peace is needed also to prevent the holocaust of a third world war which is frantically being prepared for by the US imperialists. The Korean people's desire for peace is justified and people of the whole world demand a peaceful solution to the Korean question. So our representative participated in the talks at Kaesong to settle the problem in a peaceful way.

It is more than 30 days now since the Kaesong talks began. However, we cannot but doubt whether the US imperialists, representing the "UN Command", are really willing to solve the Korean question peacefully, because by dragging on the negotiations deliberately, they do not show their good faith for its settlement.

Our representative has made a just proposal for the withdrawal of

foreign troops from Korea and for the cessation of hostilities with the 38th Parallel as the demarcation line. But the US imperialists are opposed to this proposal, and pursue their aggressive ambitions, repeatedly making unreasonable and preposterous proposals which only reflect their aggressive designs.

How can we explain this?

First, the withdrawal of foreign troops from Korea is the only key to the peaceful solution of the Korean question and constitutes the basic factor that will prevent the outbreak of another war in Korea. Their withdrawal is the unanimous desire of the world's freedom-loving people who are opposed to the unlawful interference in the internal affairs of Korea.

As you all know, the Soviet Government has already withdrawn all their troops from north Korea in December 1948 in the interests of the Korean people. But the US imperialists continue to keep their troops stationed in south Korea and have instigated the Syngman Rhee puppet army to carry out the plan of "northward expedition".

If foreign troops stay on in the southern half of the country, it precisely means a continued existence of the danger of aggression on our country. No foreign troops are required by the Korean people to make their country rich and strong with their peaceful labour, to stabilize their life and to promote their welfare. Only the puppet Syngman Rhee regime which is not supported by its people and is afraid of them demands the presence of foreign troops.

The US imperialists keep their armed forces in foreign territory, while advocating "peace" by word of mouth. We cannot but suspect that they have some ulterior motives.

Second, as regards the problem of fixing the military demarcation line, the US government had already agreed to the Soviet delegate's proposal at the UN that the troops of the two belligerents be withdrawn respectively to north and south of the 38th Parallel which would serve as a line of demarcation. But, at the Kaesong talks, the delegate of the "UN Command" opposed this, trying to wrest from north Korea an area which stretches from Songwoltong to Kumchon and Kosong and

is 80 kilometres farther up into north Korean territory from the 38th Parallel, or as wide an area as one-twentieth of the whole of Korea.

It is clear that the enemy intends to seize this area of great strategic importance and turn it into an advantageous military base from which to surprise and destroy our People's Army in a short span of time and invade the People's Republic of China and the Soviet Union.

Why do the US imperialists persist in this unreasonable demand with regard to the question of the military demarcation line?

The experience of World War II shows that without bases on the ground, air forces and naval units cannot take effective action and that only the ground fronts play a decisive role in guaranteeing victory in war. Therefore, the US imperialists demand a wide area which is tactically advantageous, although they say they will give up our territorial air and waters.

If the US wants peace in real earnest, they should withdraw their troops to the south of the 38th Parallel. There are no obstacles to prevent them from doing so. But they refuse to withdraw and try to draw another military demarcation line on north Korean territory. This means that the US imperialists are pursuing their aggressive ends. It can hardly be interpreted otherwise.

The US imperialists are delaying truce negotiations by offering various excuses and employing tricks. This cannot but give rise to the suspicion that they proposed the talks not because they were truly desirous of peace, but because they wanted to concoct some other military schemes behind the scenes of the armistice negotiations and, using the negotiations, placate public opinion, cover up their aggressive desire and ease the war-weariness of the warmongers in the satellite countries.

Whatever the US imperialists' motive may be in utilizing and dragging on the armistice talks, we shall strive in good faith for peace which is being demanded by everybody. If the US imperialists frustrate the ceasefire negotiations to realize their aggressive desire, they will have to assume the whole responsibility for the consequences.

Dear fellow countrymen,

We have not yet driven but the invaders led by the US imperialists from our country nor destroyed the reactionary Syngman Rhee clique.

At present we are holding truce talks at Kaesong on the proposal of the US imperialist invaders. But the talks only convince us more clearly that they have not given up their aggressive desire to continue with the aggression in our country and are hatching new plots behind the scenes of the negotiations. The puppet Syngman Rhee clique are opposed to the truce talks for the peaceful settlement of the Korean problem and are clamouring that they must push ahead with the “northward expedition” and the Korean war.

So long as the enemy does not give up their aggressive designs but continues these acts of aggression, we Korean people must be more vigilant against their crafty manoeuvrings, and must annihilate them not only on the ground as before but also in the air till they desist from their aggression.

To this end all the people must unite more firmly under the banner of the Government of the Republic and the Democratic Front for the Reunification of Korea headed by the Workers’ Party of Korea, so as to increase our might. Only then can we win complete victory in the battle with the enemy.

The officers and men of the People’s Army should carry on all preparations and replenishments so that they can further consolidate and develop the results already achieved and give more stunning blows to the enemy’s effectives and materiel. Thus they will wage a heroic struggle to repel and wipe out the enemy in our country.

The officers should keep studying advanced arts of military leadership, employ extensively the tactics of encircling and wiping out the enemy and strive to raise the activity and creativity of their men. In addition, they must speed up the training of the reserve units and technical-arms units and further improve their ability to organize coordinated operations between different technical units.

All the soldiers should make efforts to master their weapons and improve their combat skills.

Guerrillas and combined units active behind enemy lines should

conduct brisk combat activities everywhere, destroy the enemy's supply routes and communications networks and paralyse their manoeuvres, and conduct organizational and political propaganda extensively to organize and unite the people firmly behind enemy lines.

The entire Korean population should always be ready and alert and redouble their efforts to give assistance to the front, so that they can increase the production of munitions and food further. In this way they will be able to actively aid the People's Army and the Chinese People's Volunteers who are discharging bravely the honourable duty of defending our country from foreign invaders.

Working men and women, engineers and assistant engineers should further expand the war industry and tap domestic resources to the maximum so as to produce more arms and ammunition of different kinds and other munitions which are needed at the front.

It is imperative to increase the production of daily necessities which are badly needed by the people by rapidly rehabilitating the production installations. In particular, we must make effective use of all home resources and production means and turn out more goods of various kinds. We must fulfil this year's plans of capital construction and production, no matter what kinds of difficulties and obstacles we might encounter.

Railway workers should participate more courageously in rapidly rebuilding damaged railways and bridges and repairing the railway communications network. All of them should work hard to put transport facilities in order without any loss of time and thus contribute greatly to guaranteeing transport to the front.

Our peasants have already registered tremendous successes in farming. They should strive to harvest crops opportunely and thresh them without losing a grain and pay their agricultural tax in kind within the set time.

The peasants should produce more compost for next year's farming and develop animal husbandry in a big way. The Ministry of Agriculture and Forestry and the people's committees at all levels

should set up state stock farms and also breeding stock farms everywhere for the distribution of animals to the peasants.

All the peasants and people's committees of different levels should take measures to store both individual and state provisions properly.

Providing the people with daily necessities is now coming to the fore as one of the most important national tasks. People engaged in state and cooperative trade should supply these goods to the people satisfactorily. State organizations should provide against winter for the people, and especially take meticulous steps to stabilize the livelihood of war victims whose houses have been destroyed or who have been evacuated from the battle areas.

As our expenses and losses are tremendous in the war, all the people should strive for economy in all spheres. In particular, economic officials of state and cooperative organizations should be deeply concerned with economization and conduct an extensive programme for concentrating and accumulating state finances.

Health workers should spot and stamp out in time epidemics resulting from the enemy's brutalities and aid and treat those who have been wounded by bombs and in battles as soon as possible.

All men of culture and the arts should create more patriotic works for the people and, at the same time, strive to increase their patriotism and build up a hatred for the enemy.

Everybody must keep a sharper vigilance against the enemy. They must detect and punish in good time those spies and subverters who are being parachuted by the enemy almost daily and safeguard state property, warehouses and bridges.

At every farm village and town a relentless struggle must be waged against the vicious elements who undermine the state and do harm to the cause of the Fatherland Liberation War by spreading false rumours.

The Korean people should strengthen their friendship further with the Soviet Union, China and other People's Democracies which are helping us in our war both materially and morally. Strengthening our friendship with the fraternal countries is a guarantee for our victory in the struggle against the aggressors.

It is necessary for us in the future to extend our diplomatic and economic ties with those countries which have a common understanding with us in order to strengthen our international position.

On the occasion of the sixth anniversary of the August 15 liberation I would like to offer encouragement to our fellow countrymen, brothers and sisters who are still subjected to oppression and exploitation in the southern half of Korea. The people in the northern half must always remember the people of the south who are leading a miserable subhuman life, terrorized, slaughtered, oppressed and exploited by the US imperialists and the Syngman Rhee clique.

Korea will be reunified definitely and our compatriots in the south, too, will greet the day of liberation just like the people of the north. It is our most important task to reunify Korea completely.

Fellow countrymen,

At present the internal and external situation is developing in favour of the Korean people. The progressive people of the whole world support and encourage us to win the great Fatherland Liberation War.

Let all of us Korean people advance dynamically, more firmly united and convinced of victory.

Hail the sixth anniversary of the August 15 liberation of our motherland from the yoke of Japanese imperialist rule!

Glory to the Korean people who have risen up as one in the great Fatherland Liberation War and the valorous People's Army, the citadel of national defence!

Glory to the Chinese People's Volunteers who are fighting with matchless courage against the US imperialist armed forces of aggression!

Glory to the officers and men of the heroic People's Army and Chinese People's Volunteers and to the guerrillas who fell in the great Fatherland Liberation War to defend our country's independence, freedom and honour!

Long live the reunification and independence of the motherland!

Wipe out the US imperialist marauders!

ON THE OCCASION OF THE SIXTH ANNIVERSARY OF THE AUGUST 15 LIBERATION

**Order No. 461 of the Supreme Commander
of the Korean People's Army**

August 15, 1951

Men and noncommissioned officers of our army, navy and air forces,

Commanding officers and political workers,

Men and women guerrillas active behind enemy lines,

Workers, peasants and working intellectuals and brothers and sisters in the enemy-occupied area,

Today we are greeting the sixth anniversary of the August 15 liberation of our country and people from the yoke of Japanese imperialist marauders.

All our people and the Korean People's Army, their genuine armed forces, commemorate this event in the raging flames of war of destroying the US imperialist armed interventionists and their running dogs, the traitorous Syngman Rhee clique, in the cause of the independence, freedom and honour of their country.

The American colonial plunderers have been invading our country with brutal force of arms for over one year now.

The US interventionists are doggedly trying to realize their aggressive design to enslave our people, wring superprofits for their monopoly capitalists by plundering our country of its rich resources

and turn Korea into their strategic base in the Far East for provoking a third world war. But the Korean war is showing clearly that the US aggressors' sinister scheme is being foiled and is doomed to failure.

In more than one year of fierce battles, the heroic Korean People's Army, the true armed forces of our people, in close cooperation with the Chinese People's Volunteers, has repelled the invading enemy by stubborn resistance and killed, wounded or captured over 630,000 enemy officers and men. The Korean battlefields are strewn with rotting corpses of the American hirelings utilized to enslave our people. The American imperialist aggressors are not in a position to recover from the heavy loss they have suffered, hit hard repeatedly by the People's Army and the brotherly Chinese People's Volunteers.

In the great Fatherland Liberation War the Korean People's Army has improved its military technique and combat efficiency, proved its skill in the coordination of offensive and defensive operations and encirclement, and displayed a noble and inflexible fighting spirit. Our soldiers have been tempered in battle and have learned how to strike and defeat the enemy. The People's Army has gained in strength and developed into a powerful armed force our people can totally depend on.

It has shown peerless heroism and patriotism in the sacred struggle for the independence of its dear motherland—the Democratic People's Republic of Korea—and for the freedom and happiness of generations to come and upheld the honour of a victor.

The devoted efforts of all the people to support the front and the labour feats of the workers, peasants and working intellectuals ensured the victory of the People's Army. The people honourably discharged their duty to the country, tiding over war difficulties courageously and supplied the front with weapons, ammunition, provisions and clothing in time.

The war has united our people more firmly around the Workers' Party of Korea and the Government of the Democratic People's Republic of Korea, and they are now making more strenuous efforts to

help the People's Army, with a firm confidence in ultimate victory.

The present situation is turning favourable for our people to repel the American invaders and liberate the country completely.

The fighting morale of the hirelings of US imperialism, who suffered serious setbacks politically and morally as well as militarily, is at its lowest ebb, and the overwhelming majority of the satellites, dismayed at the defeat of their boss, went so far as to refuse to send their troops to the Korean front any more. The arrogant US aggressors were now compelled to admit that they would be unable to save themselves by any means from inevitable destruction.

Under the circumstances, US imperialism had to propose to negotiate with us for an armistice.

From the outset the Korean people did not want war, opposed a third world war which would involve enormous human casualties and consistently advocated peaceful national reunification and a peaceful settlement of the Korean question. That is why we agreed to the proposal of the US imperialists for the armistice talks and are participating in them in good faith.

The American aggressors, however, are delaying the truce talks by all means, trying to impose their aggressive will on our people and encroach upon the northern half of Korea on various pretexts.

These shameless manoeuvres to retrieve from their fatal military defeat in the Korean war and recover their shattered prestige are revealing their aggressive scheme more vividly and adding fuel to the resentment of the broad sections of the people.

The Korean people and the People's Army are prepared to deliver fresh fatal blows at the desperate enemy.

Our strength is growing day after day, and the Korean People's Army and the Chinese People's Volunteers are indestructible.

If the US aggressors refuse the peaceful settlement of the Korean question and persist in their aggressive plots to expand the war, they will not escape a crushing defeat and annihilation in Korea.

Men and noncommissioned officers of our army, navy and air forces,

Commanding officers and political workers,
Men and women guerrillas,
Dear brothers and sisters,

The struggle for the ultimate triumph of the great Fatherland Liberation War for defending national independence, freedom and honour requires a fresh alertness from all our forces and nobler heroism, patriotism, greater efforts and distinguished service from the People's Army and the people.

We should be more vigilant against the US imperialist aggressors who, in spite of their setbacks, are attempting frantic and insidious moves. We should further strive to increase our strength in every respect so that we can frustrate the enemy attempt anywhere anytime and wipe him out from our land.

Greeting the sixth anniversary of the August 15 liberation, I offer my congratulations to you on behalf of the Government of the DPRK and the Workers' Party of Korea and order you as follows:

1. All the men and noncommissioned officers shall make tireless efforts to consummate their military skill and combat efficiency, take good care of their weapons, strictly follow the regulations and manuals, carry out the orders and instructions of their superiors to the letter and punctually, observe discipline and order voluntarily and acquire a strong sense of organization.

2. The unit commanders of different arms shall acquire a perfect ability to lead and coordinate unit actions, consolidate their victories, prepare for more powerful strikes at the enemy, and destroy more enemy troops and weapons and equipment, by organizing their forces successfully.

3. Political workers shall further enhance their role as assistants to their commanders, strengthen the one-man management system in their units, improve the fighting morality of the People's Army, one of the decisive factors for victory in the war, and intensify the political and ideological work of the Party in the units so as to imbue the servicemen with patriotism and the spirit of devotion to the country and people, firm belief in victory, the spirit of treasuring their arms and

hatred for the enemy. In this way they will develop the People's Army into a steeled revolutionary armed force.

4. Airmen shall make every effort and display all their enthusiasm and devotion to train themselves tirelessly in the science of aviation and strengthen the air force, and fight more heroically, bravely and boldly against the brutal US air force which has burnt down our towns, villages and precious property, and massacred our parents and brothers.

5 The logistical workers shall ensure victory at the front by providing it with sufficient weapons and ammunition, food and clothing, and other necessities on time. All the army medical workers shall treat the war wounded with all their heart and cure them as quickly as possible in order to strengthen the combat force of the People's Army.

6. All the officers and men of the People's Army shall further strengthen friendship and solidarity with the fraternal Chinese People's Volunteers, act in close cooperation with them and exchange information with each other and strike the enemy harder.

7. The men and women guerrillas shall harass the enemy more and more from behind, strike him hard by raiding his transport routes, and surprising his signal units, munition depots and headquarters, and expose the atrocities of the US imperialist aggressors to the people under enemy occupation. The people in the enemy-occupied area shall struggle harder against the American aggressors and their henchmen, the traitorous Syngman Rheeites.

8. Gun salute of 20 salvoes shall be fired respectively by 240 guns in Pyongyang, Wonsan and Hamhung at 20:00 today, August 15, the sixth anniversary of the liberation, in order to celebrate the historic victory won by the Korean People's Army at the front and the great success achieved by our workers, peasants, working intellectuals and brothers and sisters in the rear and to attain a great victory in the future struggle.

Hail the sixth anniversary of the August 15 liberation!

SUPPORTING THE FRONT IS AN IMPORTANT DUTY OF THE MEMBERS OF THE WOMEN'S UNION

Talk with Workers of the Women's Union

August 15, 1951

Our people have courageously surmounted the bitter trials of having to retreat temporarily. I am very happy to meet you again after overcoming them.

During the past months of the war quite a few comrades among the Women's Union workers sacrificed themselves in the heroic fight against the enemy. We should always remember those who have laid down their lives heroically for the sake of the Party, the country and the people, and take good care of their bereaved families.

The war we are now involved in is being drawn out. At present, the front line is at a standstill on the 38th Parallel.

As you know, US imperialism sustained one defeat after another due to the powerful blows of our army, and proposed armistice negotiations to our side on the 30th of last June. The truce talks started in Kaesong on July 10, according to an agreement between both sides.

The US imperialists proposed the negotiations as a means to realize their aggressive aims, which they failed to attain on the battlefield, and to gain time for preparing for a fresh attack.

Besides, through the negotiations they are pretending that they are eager to end the war and bring peace to Korea, and thus are attempting

to deceive the people of the world and hide their true colours as an aggressor.

We are not opposed to either an armistice or a protracted war; nor are we afraid of a long-drawn-out war. We are sure, we would win it.

Recent enemy moves show even more clearly that they are trying to use the ceasefire negotiations for their own aggressive ends. Behind the screen of the armistice talks, the US imperialist aggressors are making frantic preparations for launching another offensive. They have brought in large reinforcements and combat equipment from their mainland and satellite countries and deployed them in the central and eastern sectors of the front. They are also hurrying up with their preparations for making a landing from the sea. The enemy is likely to come in a large-scale offensive before long. So we must realize that the war will become more difficult in the future.

Ultimate victory, however, belongs to us. We are fully ready to smash the enemy's offensive. Nothing can defeat our heroic People's Army and people who are fighting a just war for the freedom and independence of the country. We must fight on valiantly, firmly confident of victory, to finally win the Fatherland Liberation War.

How, then, should the Women's Union members at the home front fight?

Their first and foremost task is to support the battle front zealously.

Support for the front is very important in hastening ultimate victory in the war. The more effectively the women at home support the front, the more heroically and courageously will the People's Army soldiers fight the enemy.

Assistance to the front by the people at home helps raise the morale of the People's Army soldiers, who are now at the front, defending the heights of the country with their lives. In the years of the anti-Japanese armed struggle, too, the guerrillas fought well with great gusts and in soaring spirits, whenever they received aid supplies from the people, reaffirming their determination to win back the country at any cost. Supporting the front is as important as actually fighting the enemy at the front.

Providing effective support to the front is also the noble duty of our women, whose husbands and children are away at the front. Who else but the women will help their husbands, sons and daughters engaged in battle?

Just as husband and wife have their own duties in a family, so do men and women have their respective duties during war.

Today the women are the masters at home, and it is their duty to support the battle front.

The Women's Union members should support the front more actively, in hearty response to the call of the Government of the Republic, "Everything for the front!"

There is a great deal the Women's Union members have to do for the front.

It would be a good idea for them to gather plenty of broad bellflower roots, bracken and other wild edible vegetables and send them to the front. They grow everywhere in our country and are tasty, highly nutritious and also very effective against diseases. When dry, they are light and easy to transport. Women's Union organizations should launch a widespread movement among the women to collect wild vegetables and send large amounts of them to the soldiers of the People's Army.

If it organizes its work properly, the Women's Union can help the bravely fighting soldiers of the People's Army to a great extent. You might bring women to build cosy houses near the road where soldiers pass frequently, cook meals for them, mend their uniforms and also look out for enemy aircraft for them. How encouraging such a service will be for them! The Women's Union should properly arrange the work to provide conveniences for the soldiers.

Damaged roads and bridges should also be repaired properly. At present, there is a great demand for shells and other ammunition at the front. They are indispensable for destroying the enemy. But transport to the front is greatly hampered due to the damage caused to roads and bridges by enemy aerial and surface bombardment. The women, who are now in charge of affairs on the home front, should repair damaged

roads and bridges promptly to facilitate transport of war supplies.

It is said that the women, now living in the frontline area, carry ammunition up to the heights even at night if they find the artillery and other weapons of the People's Army silent there. Their work is, indeed, laudable. They should carry on fighting well in the future, too.

More presents and letters should be sent to encourage our soldiers fighting at the front.

Women are now sending many congratulatory banners, presents and letters of best wishes to the soldiers fighting courageously at the front. It is said that some women sent wadded clothes, underwear and gloves made of fabric and cotton, which they had been saving, for the time when their sons and daughters would marry. The soldiers are fighting more valiantly, feeling in their hearts the warm love of their parents and brothers, due to the presents and letters from the women.

Women's Union organizations should encourage and generalize the commendable deeds of supporting the front, so that more presents and letters are sent to the front.

Ensuring wartime production is an important task for meeting the material demands of the front and rear. Women should strive to increase the production of weapons, ammunition, food, clothes and other necessities, by displaying unlimited loyalty and devotion to the Party and the country.

The Women's Union developed an effective campaign for production of cotton cloth before the war. If women are organized properly, plenty of cotton fabric will be produced even under wartime conditions. Every provincial Women's Union chairman should scrupulously organize the production of cotton cloth, in keeping with the actual conditions in the province. The Central Committee of the Women's Union should send officials to each province to help it actively in this work. More cotton cloth should thus be produced.

Furthermore, war orphans should be brought up with care.

For a long time I have been thinking of discussing this problem with you.

At present, there are many war orphans in our country. Their

number swelled particularly during the period of temporary retreat. Deprived of their parents by the enemy, they are treasures who will shoulder the future of the country.

Therefore, we should pay close attention to their upbringing. If we neglect this work because we are in the midst of a difficult war, it will only cause the enemy to be elated.

We have already set up orphans' primary schools and orphanages in different places and are bringing up the war orphans under state care, but not all of them have been accommodated as yet.

Recently fraternal countries asked us to send our war orphans to be looked after by them. True, the grim war now leaves us no other choice but to send some of them to other countries. Nevertheless, the thought of their parents killed by the enemy makes me reluctant to send any of them. Sympathy for the orphaned children having to be sent abroad keeps me sleepless.

Although the country is in a difficult situation, we must rear as many of them as possible by our own efforts. To do this, the state should increase the orphans' primary schools and orphanages and, at the same time, the Women's Union, the organization of mothers, should launch a movement to bring up war orphans. I think all our women are mentally ready to help us in this undertaking. Taking good care of helpless children is a traditional virtue and an excellent custom of our people. So I believe that if the Women's Union activates women properly, this work will prove successful.

Some women have already undertaken the care of war orphans. This is excellent. Of course, it is by no means an easy task for a woman to rear them, in addition to her own children. For the future of the country, however, women should raise them with as much care as their own mothers would have, enduring all difficulties. In this work the officials of the Women's Union should set an example.

If the current tasks for women are to be carried out successfully, the Women's Union organizations should be strengthened and their role improved radically.

The Women's Union organizations at all levels should at first

quickly fill up the vacancies in their cadres with fine women, and train many hard-core elements. In particular, close attention should be paid to strengthening the Women's Union organizations in the frontline area.

Besides, the Women's Union should tighten its organizational life so that every woman observes organizational discipline voluntarily, without drifting away from organizational life.

The Women's Union organizations should educate women well in ideology.

Women should be imbued with our Party's line and policy. This is important in their ideological education. Only when they clearly understand Party line and policy can they carry out in time the tasks proposed by the Party. All the Women's Union organizations should bring home to the women in good time the line and policy put forward by the Party periodically and get them to profoundly study the Party's policies.

In addition, the Women's Union organizations should widely propagate examples set by women in the struggle to win the war. At present there are a large number of women who are taking good care of war orphans, who are exemplary in supporting the front and who are devoted to other work at home. The records of their struggle will make up a good collection of educational information. The Women's Union organizations should arrange such information properly for use in educating women.

In order to be successful, the ideological education of women must fit in with the wartime conditions and the characteristics of the women to be educated.

The cultural and educational department of the Central Committee of the Women's Union is said to be giving lectures at women's gatherings. A large gathering might be exposed to danger when enemy bombing is heavy. Individual education is much preferable under wartime conditions. If you are to educate women, who, for instance, are taking care of war orphans, you should meet them in person, and get to know in detail how they are bringing them up, if they have any

problems in rearing them, if the children are healthy, whether they follow them well, and if school agers go to school regularly. You should explain Party policy and the war situation to them, helping solve their problems.

When giving a lecture, the lecturer should prepare the lecture plan to suit the specific features of the audience and then speak to a group of several women at a time.

I hope you will mobilize the women properly and carry out the wartime tasks for the Women's Union excellently.

ON ORGANIZING AND TRAINING TANK-HUNTING TEAMS

**Order No. 0483 of the Supreme Commander
of the Korean People's Army**

August 24, 1951

The complex battle situation in the Fatherland Liberation War today requires the application of new forms and methods of warfare. Combat experiences have clearly proved the importance of intensive engineers activities in frustrating and defeating the enemy's frantic armoured and mechanized actions in mountainous areas.

I order, therefore, that units and combined units should organize tank-hunting teams as stated below, give them effective training according to the separate training programme and disseminate combat experience widely.

1. Three tank-hunting teams, each of three to five men, headed by an engineers platoon leader, shall be formed in each engineers company of infantry regiments, and five tank-hunting teams, each of the aforesaid strength under the overall leadership of a company commander, shall be organized in each division engineers battalion.

2. The training of the tank-hunting teams shall be conducted collectively at each division engineers battalion for one month from September 6 to October 5, 1951 excluding Sundays. Training time shall be eight hours per day.

3. The chief of the engineers department of each corps shall report to me the statistics on the formation of tank-hunting teams in his corps

by September 5 and the results of their training by October 15, through the Chief of the Engineers Bureau.

4. State commendations shall be awarded to the distinguished teams in accordance with my previous Order No. 00409.

LET US DEFEND HEIGHT 1211 WITH LIVES

**Talk with Commanders of Unit 256
of the Korean People's Army**
September 23, 1951

Today I am very glad and heartened to see the brave fighters on Height 1211 in excellent health, mowing down the enemy.

You are anxious about my presence here in the dangerous forward area. But there is no reason why I cannot come where our men are fighting the enemy. We must visit our soldiers at the front, no matter how far it is and how perilous the conditions are.

As we emphasized in the days of the anti-Japanese armed struggle and still are emphasizing, the commanders must, first of all, have a correct estimate of the enemy attempt and be fully prepared at all times to destroy them in order to win a battle.

The US imperialists failed in their “summer offensive” about which they had blustered so much. When they launched the “summer offensive”, the aggressors claimed that it could bring about some sort of change at the front. They described it as a “most carefully planned operation” and “attacks in waves” adapted to mountainous regions of Korea. The People's Army forces, however, crushed it by a powerful counterattack which destroyed enemy troops and materiel en masse. So even the enemy had to admit their failure.

Dreaming of realizing at all costs, in an “autumn offensive”, their sinister ambitions which came to naught in the “summer offensive”,

the US imperialist aggressors are now reinforcing themselves and preparing another large-scale offensive behind the facade of truce talks.

Evidently, the enemy is going to direct their main attack to the eastern sector of the front. Foolishly enough, they attempt to secure the line running through Height 1211, Mundung-ri, Kkachi Hill and Mt. Wolbi and further, push the front line up to the area north of Wonsan. Therefore, they will doggedly try to break through the line at Height 1211, come what may.

Height 1211 is of tremendous strategic importance. If we surrender it to the enemy, we shall have to lose a vast area including Mt. Kumgang. In case you fail to defend it the enemy will capture Mt. Kumgang and then Wonsan because behind it there are no noteworthy hills to fall back on. Since Height 1211 is of such a strategic importance, the enemy is making frantic efforts to capture it, while the brave soldiers of our People's Army are fighting to defend it at the cost of their lives.

Moreover, if you do not hold out, we shall be unable to frustrate the enemy attempt to land on the east and west coasts in step with the advance of their ground forces at the front. Success in foiling this attempt depends largely on whether or not you hold out for Height 1211.

The enemy is scheming to launch an attack by throwing hundreds of thousands of troops into the ground front and, at the same time, landing on the east and west coasts. The US imperialist aggressors are concentrating a number of warships in the East Sea and keeping aircraft and new divisions on the alert for immediate action. In addition, they plan to drop their paratroopers to the areas of Majon-ri, Hoeyang County, and Anbyon Plain in an attempt to disrupt our operations by means of this crafty manoeuvre. Of course, it is not a big problem, for we have deployed our own units in these areas to counter it.

We attach great importance to the defence of Height 1211 because success in it will change the situation on all fronts in our favour. You

must defend it with your lives, not yielding even an inch.

For the defence of Height 1211 it is imperative to first fortify all your defence positions impregnably.

The primary task facing us today is to consolidate the front. Under the present conditions where the Fatherland liberation War is drawing out because of the US imperialist moves to reinforce their armed forces on a large scale, we must fight stubbornly relying on defensive positions.

In order to fortify our defence positions and make them impregnable, we must dig tunnels in hilly areas at the front as well as on the coastal areas.

Tunnel tactics is a new way of fighting introduced to fit in with the prevailing situation, our terrain and the balance of forces between the enemy and us.

We can wipe out more enemies, while protecting our men and combat equipment to the maximum, if we fight in tunnelled positions. Therefore, we should mainly use the tunnel tactics in future engagements.

While making tunnelled defence positions, we should also dig communication trenches between combatants, between small units and between heights, so as to link them with each other and fortify field positions. This is the way to protect our soldiers and combat equipment from enemy bombing and surprise attacks from various guns.

All combat units must introduce tunnels into defence positions and, relying on them, hold out, striking the frenzied enemy hard. You should strive to eliminate non-battle casualties and pay special attention to the maintenance and strengthening of our force.

Next, the activities of different storming parties must be intensified.

Intensifying defence in position never precludes the activity of a storming party. Stubborn positional defence should be combined, when necessary, with brisk, daring and surprise actions of storming parties. This would enable us to destroy more enemy troops and combat equipment and throw them into panic. By strengthening storming actions, the units of the People's Army must strike the enemy

everywhere and ceaselessly destroy their manpower, materiel and various other targets.

Further, fire power must be organized properly.

When the enemy is throwing all his manpower and materiel in successive “attacks in waves”, we must deploy our men and weapons properly and organize fire power effectively. Thus we will be able to check and frustrate their desperate attack and follow up successes in defensive warfare. Of course organization of fire power should be efficient with small arms, but it is all the more so with artillery.

As is the case with all other combat organization and tactical application, foreign experience should not be mechanically copied for the organization of artillery fire. We must always organize artillery fire in a Korean way to suit the specific conditions in our country, which is full of mountains and has very few plains.

We must definitely emplace all sorts of guns closer to the forward edge of the battle area and bring more direct-fire guns onto the heights. This is unexampled both in the history of modern war and in any foreign literature on tactics. With the guns emplaced on hills and with adequate density of gunfire, you should be able to overpower the enemy artillery and give powerful fire support to friendly infantry actions. In this way infantry and artillery will closely cooperate and destroy the enemy troops and other targets. You should also organize fire in such a way as to cover properly the adjoining points between friendly units.

Next, close attention should be paid to the transport of munitions.

Their smooth transport is one of the basic factors determining victory in the war.

With a view to cutting off our supply routes and compelling our forces to withdraw from the present line, the US imperialists mobilize their air force to bomb Malhwi-ri, Hoeyang, Chol Pass and Kosan areas savagely almost every day. These areas are very important—they are the lifeline through which we provide our units with war supplies. The blockade of this route may hinder us from transporting supplies to the eastern sector of the front including Height 1211. Every step must,

therefore, be taken to ensure the smooth transport of war supplies in the teeth of frantic enemy bombing.

For this purpose, anti-aircraft fire should be organized scrupulously. Aircraft-hunting teams must be posted on the peaks, high and low, in those areas where enemy bombing is heavy, and in the vicinity of important roads and bridges, so that they can prevent enemy planes from flying freely and shoot down all the intruders. In addition, you should increase the number of air-defence observation posts to strengthen air-defence watch.

Road repairs should be undertaken. A long spell of rain has roughened the roads a great deal. They must be repaired quickly by engineers units with the help of the people. Only then can the transport of war supplies be carried on in a satisfactory manner.

Further, political work should be conducted well among the soldiers.

This will help to boost their morale. High morale is one of the main factors for victory in battle. The heavier the enemy bombing and bombardment and the fiercer the battle, the more energetically must political work among soldiers be conducted.

Commanders and political workers should bring home to the soldiers the true meaning of the Party's strategic slogan—never yield even an inch of our land to the enemy—so that their matchless bravery and mass heroism is fully expressed in the sacred struggle to defend Height 1211.

At the same time, the soldiers should be inspired with unshakable confidence in victory. For this they should be familiar with the justness of our cause and what is needed to bring about victory in the war.

Our People's Army and people are waging a sacred, just war to defend their motherland and democratic system from enemy invasion, whereas the US imperialists are fighting an aggressive, unjust war to make our country their colony. People fighting for justice always win, while aggressors engaged in an unjust war are bound to lose. This is an immutable law of the development of history.

We have factors leading us to certain victory in the Fatherland

Liberation War. We have the Workers' Party of Korea, the organizer and inspirer of all victories, and the heroic People's Army and people united firmly around it. Our People's Army and people have an unusually high degree of politico-ideological readiness. In particular, the brave men of the People's Army are full of burning hatred for the enemy, topped up by a resolve to wipe him out on our land at the cost of even the last drop of their blood. They have been further tempered and have acquired rich experience in one year of the war. The might of our People's Army and people under the wise leadership of the Party is invincible. This is a decisive factor in winning the final victory in the war.

Our strength is far greater than that of the enemy in the politico-ideological aspect; it is by no means weaker in the military-technical aspect. At present, our People's Army units have been equipped firmly with up-to-date combat equipment. The air force and artillery, in particular, have grown incomparably stronger than they were in the period of the first advance. That is why US imperialist air pirates dare not fly over the air space north of Pyongyang as freely as they used to. Gone are the days when the enemy bragged about their "almighty technique". Our People's Army and people will never fail to defend their country from the invasion of US imperialism and its stooges, defeat them and win the Fatherland Liberation War ultimately.

Next, commanders should always pay great attention to the living conditions of their soldiers.

Our fighters are all treasures and revolutionary comrades-in-arms. Taking good care of the men is a sacred duty of the commanding officers. They should, in a fatherly manner, look after every aspect of their men's lives—the problem of their food, clothing and rest, as well as combat action.

The frontline units may not be able to provide soldiers with enough vegetables, and they may contract vitaminosis as a result. You should therefore supply them with greens by all means and, if not, with edible herbs, pine needles and the like so as to ward off this disease. We will

send you beans. From that you should make bean sprouts with which to cook cold dishes or hot soup for the men.

I hear that you give the weak an opportunity to rest even when fierce battles go on. This is excellent, indeed. I will see that glutinous rice is sent to them to be served with rice cakes. There is nothing to begrudge for the combatants who are fighting a life-or-death struggle against the enemy. Commanders should promptly bring to attention any problems in the lives of their soldiers.

Last, closer ties with the people should be maintained.

The People's Army is literally an army of the people, made up of the sons and daughters of the working people including workers and peasants and serving the people. It is natural that it strengthens the bonds with the people. Only when the army and the people help each other and fight in a body, can they win the war.

Since the people in the frontline areas are not well-off in wartime conditions, the army must in no way put them to trouble. It is said that the People's Army units look after the people in their posts. An army of the people should conduct itself in this manner.

Now the people in Kangwon Province are fighting well, giving a helping hand to the People's Army. If we are to smash the American imperialists and win this war, the people should continue to work hard, helping the army. They should engage in farming in the rear, repair the damaged roads and bridges, and carry ammunitions and provisions to the front, thereby giving every possible aid to the soldiers fighting on the hills.

I am sure that by upholding the strategic policy of the Party, you will turn your positions into impregnable fortresses, organize every battle meticulously, and thus defend Height 1211 without fail.

ON LAUNCHING A MODEL COMPANY MOVEMENT

**Instructions to Personnel of the General Political Bureau
of the Korean People's Army**

October 29, 1951

The battle front has been fixed completely now. Having suffered great losses, struck hard by our People's Army, the US imperialist aggressors have bogged down along the 38th Parallel from where they had started invasion. After suffering an ignominious defeat in the "summer and autumn offensives", the enemy was compelled to creep to the site of the truce talks again, which they had broken off unilaterally. However, they may frustrate the truce talks again and launch into another military offensive.

The war is expected to get more fierce and long drawn out. Victory in such a case goes to the side which can stay longer. In order to outstay the enemy in a long-drawn-out war, one needs forces superior to those of one's opponent. It can be said that the present balance of forces between us and our foes is even. We must strengthen the combat efficiency of the People's Army in every possible way in order to win the prolonged war.

It is very important to build up strong defence positions in increasing the fighting power of the People's Army. This will make it possible to protect manpower soundly as well as weapons and equipment from the enemy's bombing and gunfire. Also, it would guarantee free combat activity. The units of the People's Army must

build up their frontline and coastal positions by digging tunnels and connect the whole front line with communication trenches. In this way they will launch stubborn positional defence operations.

Units must see to it that there are no casualties which have nothing to do with battles. Each soldier of the People's Army is more precious than his weight in gold. Each of its combatants is an irreplaceable treasure. If the units lose even a single combatant as a non-battle casualty, it will greatly hinder the strengthening of their combat capacity. Frontline units should tighten combat discipline and prevent accidents so that not even a single non-battle casualty is allowed to take place.

Political and ideological education for the soldiers must be intensified.

Fortifying all the servicemen with lofty political and moral qualities through a proper politico-ideological education is an important guarantee for increasing the fighting potential of the People's Army. Political workers must intensify the political and ideological education of the soldiers so that all of them acquire an indomitable revolutionary spirit and fight staunchly for the country and the people in any adversity.

To begin with, political workers must educate the soldiers to be convinced of victory. This conviction will enable them to overcome any difficulty and vanquish any enemy. In the past the anti-Japanese guerrillas had a firm belief in the victory of our revolutionary cause. That is why they fought bravely for fifteen long years, defying all obstacles that stood in their way and won the final victory destroying the Japanese imperialist aggressors. Political workers must explain to the soldiers clearly that the US imperialist aggressors are doomed to failure and we are bound to win and, thus, should convince them of victory.

Political workers must educate the army personnel effectively in order to equip them with ardent love of the country and the people and hatred for the US imperialist aggressors. They should induce the soldiers to have a bitter enmity for these aggressors by informing them

in detail about their crimes: how cruelly they killed our people and how they burnt down our workplaces and villages.

The soldiers should be inculcated with the habit of observing military discipline voluntarily and accepting unconditionally and executing the orders of the superiors to the letter. In this way all of them will fulfil their combat tasks splendidly in any difficult conditions.

The enemy spies and subversive elements are now infiltrating into our ranks in an attempt to ferret out all kinds of secrets. Therefore, the army men should all be made to possess a high degree of revolutionary vigilance and launch a widespread struggle against the spies and subversive elements of the enemy.

In order to intensify political and ideological education of the soldiers, various publications should be sent down to the small units in greater numbers. The General Political Bureau should put together educative material in easy and simple terms and augment the circulation of publications, so that each company should get at least a copy of the newspaper Korean People's Army and the magazine respectively.

Political workers must value soldiers greatly and take loving care of them. As I always emphasize, they are like mothers to the soldiers. They must not only give them correct political guidance but also look after them the way mothers do their sons. In particular, supply service to the soldiers should be improved and their cultural life organized properly. Supply service is part of political work. If the servicemen lead a stable life through the improvement of supply service, ideological education will be more effective. Therefore, political workers should regard this service as one of their own important tasks and pay great attention to it.

The frontline hills are already covered with snow and cold weather continues. You must provide the soldiers adequately with cotton-padded clothes and overcoats as well as winter shoes and caps, so that they do not feel the nip of winter. Besides, you must see to it that the combatants on Height 1211 and other frontline hills take hot

rice and soup thrice a day and always drink hot water. I think this is quite possible if the political workers make good organizational arrangements and rouse the soldiers to activity. You must send musical instruments and paper for the field bulletin to frontline posts. I believe that the morale of our soldiers will be boosted if they live an optimistic life in the tunnels taking three hot meals every day and drinking hot water all the time.

It is essential to strengthen the company if we are to increase the fighting potential of the People's Army to cope with a prolonged war.

The company is a cell of the People's Army. It is a unit of military service and a basic combat unit. It is a combat group where soldiers sleep together, eat together, study together and fight together. In a company there are the Party cell and the primary committee of the Democratic Youth League, basic organizations of the Party and the DYL. After all, combat tasks of the People's Army units are carried out through the company. Therefore, it occupies a very important place and plays a great role.

Whether or not we can strengthen the People's Army politically, ideologically and militarily depends on how we strengthen the company. If the company conducts good political work and military and political training, its combat capabilities will increase, and the soldiers' morale will rise. This will augment the combat efficiency of the battalion, regiment and division and also that of the army as a whole. Therefore, we must concentrate all our efforts on strengthening the company in quality and raising its combat efficiency.

For this, you should initiate a model company movement.

In launching the model company movement, you should lay stress on increasing the company's fighting potential, enhancing the level of its military and political training as well as that of Party political education. Stress should also be laid on building up the company to be a vigorous combat group. If you organize and conduct this movement properly, there will be a great turn in strengthening the company qualitatively and increasing its fighting capacity.

If you are to conduct the movement to meet these objectives, you

should set correct norms of qualifying the model company. In my opinion, they should be the following:

First, you must examine the political and ideological education of the soldiers. A company should be judged as a model company, when, through good political and ideological education, all its soldiers are fortified with our Party policy and have firm confidence in victory, a strong sense of class consciousness and fighting spirit, and when its mass cultural activities are conducted at a high level.

Second, you must check the implementation of the tasks assigned to the company. As for frontline units, the model companies should be those whose men have displayed peerless bravery and mass heroism and achieved a lot killing, wounding or capturing a large number of enemies with minimal casualties of their own. As for reserves and other units in the rear, you should qualify as models those companies that have obtained excellent marks in military and political training including tactical exercises and target practices.

Third, you must see how military discipline is observed. If a company is lax in military discipline and causes serious accidents, it cannot become a model company. It can be a model company only when it has established an iron military discipline and order and no longer causes serious accidents or violates discipline in relation to the people.

Fourth, you must appraise the way in which weapons and other equipment are kept and handled, and state and public property is managed. A company can be rated as a model company when it keeps and handles weapons and other equipment as stipulated by the regulations and takes good care of and economizes in state and public property.

Fifth, the model company should be the one which satisfies the material needs of the soldiers as per regulations and whose men keep their company neat and hygienic in the spirit of self-reliance.

Sixth, a company which has carried out excellent defence works should be rated as a model company.

The General Political Bureau should draw up norms for the model

company in accordance with the above-mentioned points and send them down to all units. Political workers should widely explain to the soldiers the political significance of the model company movement and the norms for the model company, and encourage them to take an active part in this movement. You must see that all units of different arms and services of the People's Army participate in this movement.

You should award the model company flag and the model serviceman's badge to a company and its soldiers that have passed this test. You should not make the model company flag too big; you had better make it small out of red cloth, so that they can carry it on their bayonets while engaged in battle or training. You must take the flag back if and when the company has transgressed the above-mentioned norms.

If this movement is to be conducted energetically, commanders and political workers should pay great attention to it. It is particularly important to raise the role of political bodies and their workers. They should take the lead in this movement. They should guide it responsibly lest it should fall into any deviations. They should generalize the good experience of model companies timely and widely. In this way you should increase the ranks of model companies speedily.

ON SOME DEFECTS IN THE ORGANIZATIONAL WORK OF PARTY ORGANIZATIONS

**Report to the Fourth Plenary Meeting of the Central
Committee of the Workers' Party of Korea**

November 1, 1951

After liberation the Korean people, under the leadership of our Party, established the people's government and carried out democratic reforms in the northern half of the country and are now striving to complete the national-liberation revolution throughout the country.

In the struggle for the freedom and happiness of the Korean people and for national reunification and independence, our Party has rapidly grown and become strengthened and is now the force leading and guiding all the Korean people. The Korean people regard our Party's policies as their own and know that they are the only ones which accord with their interests. The unity of our Party and people has been further consolidated, particularly in the fierce struggle against the armed invasion of the US imperialists.

Basing itself on Marxist-Leninist theory and overcoming all difficulties, our Party has organized and mobilized our people in the sacred struggle to defeat our internal and external enemies and win freedom and independence for the nation. The policies and slogans of our Party have become a great force for inspiring and encouraging the workers, peasants and all other labouring people to victory.

Under our Party's leadership, the Korean people have been fighting bravely against the US imperialist armed invaders and their stooges for

17 long months and are displaying their inexhaustible might. In the war, our Party has strengthened its ties with the broad masses and accumulated a wealth of valuable experience in struggle.

Surmounting the hard trials of war, our Party has won the deep confidence of the masses and achieved enormous successes in its activities. This is because our Party has always been faithful to Marxism-Leninism and true to the interests of the working people.

Marxism-Leninism teaches that close bonds between the Party and the masses are a decisive condition for victory in revolution. In his work *What Is To Be Done?*, Lenin called upon the revolutionary Social-Democrats to “go among all classes of the population dispatch units of their army in all directions”. Comrade Stalin says that the wellspring of the great strength of the Bolshevik Party lies in its close bonds with the masses of the people, just as the unbreakable strength of Antaeus, a hero in Greek mythology, was derived from his bond with the earth, his mother.

Our Party has always worked tirelessly for firm unity with the broad labouring masses, with the working class as their core, and drawn its inexhaustible strength and courage from this.

To strengthen its ranks organizationally, our Party has in recent months re-registered its members and reorganized its ranks in the areas liberated from the enemy’s temporary occupation. We have basically restored Party organizations in a short period of time. This is a great victory for us. It means that our Party has the active support of the toiling masses in the struggle for the freedom and independence of the country and will be able to exercise greater influence on the masses in the future.

But some Party organizations and leading officials are failing to carry out the Party’s line correctly in the work of organizational regulations. Some of them are committing the grave error of straying from the Party’s line, blind to the historical development of the country and the specific circumstances which now prevail, because they fail to pay due attention to the organizational and political work of the Party and do not study inner-Party work carefully, but simply occupy

themselves with the shock campaigns conducted in each period.

The defects recently revealed in the work of some Party organizations can be divided into two categories. One consists of deviations in dealing with organizational matters and the other of wrong tendencies in their work with the Democratic Front for the Reunification of Korea and its affiliated political parties.

1. ON THE PARTY'S ORGANIZATIONAL WORK

The organizational principles of our Party constitute a powerful weapon for carrying the Party's Programme and tactics into effect. Without steel-strong organization and good organizational work it is impossible to fulfil all the tasks confronting the Party successfully. We have, therefore, always emphasized that organizational work has great significance.

Our Party is the vanguard of the labouring people with the working class as the core, a new-type, revolutionary Marxist-Leninist party. Our Party takes Marxism-Leninism as its theoretical guide in its activities and learns constantly from the experience in struggle of the Communist Party of the Soviet Union and other fraternal parties. At the same time, our Party has characteristic features due to the historical conditions and specific realities of our country.

Our Party always proceeds from Marxist-Leninist principles and the specific realities of our country in determining its organizational principles and political line. Therefore, the Party organizations at all levels must conduct their organizational and political work strictly on the basis of our Party's line in such a way as to build themselves up firmly, strengthen their bonds with the masses, make the Party a mass-based party, temper the members' Party spirit and steadily raise their level of leadership.

Some Party organizations, however, fail to understand fully the

mass character of our Party and do not reckon with the fact that our Party is young and the political level of its members is low. Without allowing for the fact that many survivals of Japanese imperialist ideas still remain in the minds of the masses, that our struggle is being waged under very complex circumstances, with the country divided into the north and the south, and so on, they regard Party members as perfect Marxist-Leninists and demand too much of them.

While keeping the working class as the core and firmly upholding the ideology of the working class and its leading role, we should take into the Party the advanced patriotic elements from among the people of all social strata and expand and strengthen it on a mass basis.

Today, our enemies are engaged in malicious schemes to disrupt our Party—the chief motive force in building the state and the militant core in the Fatherland Liberation War—isolate it from the masses and sap its fighting efficiency. Under these conditions, it is very important to improve and strengthen our Party's organizational work in keeping with its mass character.

But some Party organizations have done this work mechanically without taking the prevailing conditions into account, with the result that many defects are revealed.

(1) SHORTCOMINGS IN PARTY RECRUITING

Many Party organizations and leading officials fail to do recruitment work satisfactorily because they do not correctly understand the mass character of our Party and the present situation. Some organizations have developed a tendency towards closed-doorism, refusing admission to advanced patriotic elements by setting up various unwarranted conditions.

Quite a number of Party organizations and leading officials have a wrong tendency. They tend not to recruit many toiling peasants who are fighting with patriotic devotion at the front and in the rear, for fear that this will cause a drop in the proportion of workers. They only cling

to the prewar rate of increase in members of worker origin without considering the present situation when, owing to the barbarous enemy bombing, factories have been destroyed and the number of workers has fallen sharply.

Despite the fact that recruitment should be stepped up among the labouring peasants in such an area as Jagang Province where there are not many industrial enterprises, in the first half of this year the provincial Party organization has admitted to the Party an insignificant number of peasants—only 0.8 per cent of the province's Peasants' Union members with no party affiliation who are aged 20 or above. The Pakchon County Party Committee in North Phyongan Province mechanically places a limit on recruitment and, therefore, not more than an average of 17 peasants a month are accepted into the Party, although there are a good many more people qualified for membership.

Though a large number of peasant activists who have displayed patriotic devotion both in increasing production, giving aid to the front and fighting against the reactionaries, and many families of servicemen who have fought well in the war or of people killed by the enemy, want to join our Party, the Kangso county Party organization in South Phyongan Province has not accepted them. The cells (sub-cells), which account for 77 per cent of the Party organizations in that county, including those in Kusan and Sori sub-counties, totally neglected recruitment in the first half of this year.

Some of the Party organizations in the Ministry of Transport did not pay due attention to recruitment and, therefore, did not admit even one person to the Party in the first half of the year, though thousands of personnel under it are of worker and poor peasant origin. Today in the People's Army there are a great number of servicemen who are fighting the enemy heroically and with patriotic devotion. Nevertheless, no education is actively conducted for them so that they may be admitted normally into the Party. Some Party organizations take army men into the Party only on the basis of short battle record. Thus, when there is no fighting, the work of recruiting stops.

Industrial and transport enterprises, where workers are

concentrated, are important sources of recruitment. Nevertheless, the Party organizations have not done their work with the workers well, with the result that recruitment made little progress in the first half of the year. Shortcomings of this sort are revealed in no small measure in some Party organizations in the coal mines of Hwanghae Province and also in the timber industry of Jagang Province.

The primary Party organizations at some collieries in North Hamgyong Province do not provide regular education for those qualified for membership and, moreover, refuse to accept into the Party ranks many middle-aged workers who exhibit patriotic devotion in the struggle for increased wartime production, under the pretext that they are old and ignorant.

If steadfast persons who are fit for membership are admitted to the Party and given good political education and organizational training, their political level can be speedily raised. Some Party organizations, however, have the tendency to reject candidates for membership on account of trifling matters or vote down their admission simply because they lack education and have answered political questions somewhat unsatisfactorily at Party meetings to discuss their admission.

The Hyesan County Party Committee in South Hamgyong Province rejected 212 applications in the first half of 1951, 77.4 per cent of which were turned down on the ground of insufficient education.

Some Party organizations in the People's Army have not accepted servicemen of worker and peasant origin who displayed patriotic devotion and distinguished themselves in battle, simply because they could not recite the Programme and Rules of the Party or because their political and theoretical levels were low.

There are over 100 working people, including working women, under the Haesin-ri primary Party organization, but the Nampho city Party organization in South Phyongan Province pays no attention to them from the Party point of view, branding them as untrustworthy because they had to stand sentry for two or three days under the threat of the enemy during his temporary occupation. Although workers

who have been officially transferred from other production enterprises work with zeal and apply for Party membership, the leading officials of the primary Party organizations do not accept their applications on the ground that that length of service at the present factory is too short, without taking into account their length of service at their previous place of work. There was even a case in the field of civil engineering and construction where the decision of a Party sub-cell on the admission of a model worker was turned down because his period of service was 15 days short of the required number of days.

Persons who were once in other parties and whose social backgrounds fit the basic composition of our Party can join our Party if they faithfully perform their duties, enthusiastically implement the policies of the Party and the Government and also are active in the working people's organizations. But many Party organizations mechanically refuse to accept into the Party anyone who once joined other parties.

(2) DEFECTS IN THE QUESTION OF PENALTIES

Through re-registering the Party membership and consolidating its ranks, the Party has been cleared of the hostile and subversive elements who had sneaked in, and it has grown stronger.

But in dealing with organizational matters, some Party organizations have committed the grave error of trying to settle everything by meting out Party penalties indiscriminately, instead of waging an ideological struggle and doing educational work better in order to strengthen the organizational discipline of the Party members. This erroneous method cannot strengthen the discipline of the Party but, on the contrary, ends by weakening it.

Quite a few Party members were expelled from the Party or given penalties because they buried their Party membership cards or left them with someone during the retreat in order to prevent the enemy

from seizing their cards. Of course, a membership card is very precious to a Party member, since it certifies him as an honourable member of the Workers' Party, and each member should keep it properly. It is also true that if a Party card falls into the hands of the enemy, he may utilize it to harm our Party. But it is very wrong to expel a member from the Party or impose a penalty on him arbitrarily merely because he parted with his Party card, without taking into account his level and the very critical situation he found himself in under wartime circumstances. The fact that of all members punished, 80-85 per cent are on account of their membership cards, clearly shows how mechanically Party penalties have been applied.

Some Party organizations even ignore the principles and procedures concerning Party penalties provided for in the Rules. The Party organization at the Pongung Factory in Hamhung reduced the Party members who had committed errors to probational members and, not content with this, imposed on them additional penalties such as a reprimand or serious warning.

The Unsan county Party organization in North Phyongan Province did not give any education to those members who were not conscientious in Party life or who used to be quite inactive and then, when re-registration work began, expelled all of them. As a result, 80 per cent of all the expulsions were unwarranted. This the provincial Party committee found out and rectified. There was a similar tendency in the Ryongchon county Party organization, too.

The Party members under punishment were fighting devotedly for the Party and the country at the front and in the rear. Nevertheless, Party organizations at various levels did not remit the penalties imposed on them. So, on September 1 this year, the Organizational Committee of the Party Central Committee adopted a decision on quickly remitting the penalties and issued strict instructions to this effect to all Party organizations. But some Party organizations remain inactive as ever in this work. Some provincial Party organizations not only fail to give correct guidance on this to the lower Party organizations, but also do not promptly solve the questions raised and

are not inclined to boldly correct re-registration work that has been done wrong. By September 15 the Hwanghae provincial Party organization had only approved 16.2 per cent of the decisions of city and county Party organizations on expelling members or demoting them to probational membership.

(3) SHORTCOMINGS IN FOSTERING THE CORE OF THE PARTY CELL

The Party must strengthen its ties with the masses in order to bring the great Fatherland Liberation War to victory. We must energetically carry out all work among the masses and properly organize the entire Party membership and the broad masses and mobilize their enthusiasm and initiative.

It is the leading officials of the primary Party organizations and the chairmen and core Party members of the cells who play the leading role in bringing our Party's policies home to the masses and rousing them to action.

Yet because many core members of our Party are fighting at the front and some of the active Party members were killed by the enemy during the temporary retreat, comrades who have not had enough Party training and have little experience in Party work are now working as cadres in the primary Party organizations. These comrades have not done well in Party organizational work and in educating and mobilizing the masses. One of the most important tasks in rehabilitating and consolidating our Party organization is, therefore, to train the chairmen and members of the primary Party committees and the chairmen and core members of the cells.

This spring, the Political Committee of the Party Central Committee stressed time and again the need to improve the professional ability of the core members of the cells and cadres of the primary Party organizations, help them in their work and give them political education and training. But Party organizations at all levels

only mobilize the cell cadres and core Party members for shock campaigns and scold them daily for their unsatisfactory work, while they do practically nothing to help and train them. Some officials think that core Party members are those who shout at the masses and run about here and there coercing them into doing things. This is quite wrong. Today, there are many instances where the masses are not well informed on Party policy, Party work is done in a mechanical and formalistic way and the masses are mobilized not through explanation and persuasion but through orders and coercion. The chief reason for this is that we have not brought up core Party members competent to work with the masses.

(4) DEFECTS IN THE ALLOCATION OF CADRES

Proper promotion and allocation of cadres is the most important problem in the organizational work of our Party. Many Party organizations still do not pay due attention to the systematic training and proper appointment of cadres. The bringing up of reserve cadres is not up to the mark and urgent gaps are stopped by picking up cadres from this or that place at random, instead of studying and knowing the cadres in different branches and selecting and allocating them in a planned way.

Because cadres are not selected and allocated in a planned way according to their qualifications and retained for a considerable period but are transferred frequently, they cannot bring their abilities into play in their work. The instructors of the Manpho County Party Committee in Jagang Province are not allowed to stay at their posts longer than four months on an average, and the Koksang County Party Committee in Hwanghae Province replaced the vice-chairman of the Koksang Mine's primary Party committee four times in six months. Cadres, therefore, cannot settle down to their work and have no time to study and delve deep into it and, accordingly, their professional level remains very low.

2. ON THE WORK OF OUR PARTY ORGANIZATIONS IN RELATION TO THE DEMOCRATIC FRONT FOR THE REUNIFICATION OF KOREA

We are now fighting the US imperialists and their stooges, the traitorous Syngman Rhee clique. These are the sworn enemies of all the Korean people. We must unite all forces to crush the heinous enemy.

In the present situation, it is more imperative than ever to rally all the patriotic forces who long for the freedom and independence of the country. That is why our Party should expand and strengthen the Democratic Front for the Reunification of Korea which embraces the patriotic forces of all social strata. Strengthening the DFRK is one of the fundamental questions in the struggle for the country's reunification, independence and democratic advance and is a basic line of our Party.

To strengthen the DFRK it is essential to improve our relations with all the political parties and social organizations affiliated with it and educate all their members in loyalty to the country and the people. If our Party organizations do not have a deep understanding of the significance of the DFRK and fail to give it correct guidance, we cannot strengthen it nor win victory in the struggle for the reunification of the country.

However, some Party officials developed wrong views on the DFRK after the start of the Fatherland Liberation War, especially after the temporary retreat.

1. They think the DFRK unnecessary. They say that events during the temporary retreat of the People's Army have already clearly shown who is our enemy and who is our friend, and they reject all those who committed this or that error, and want to label them as our

enemies. This is a grave mistake.

We cannot regard all those who joined reactionary organizations or committed this or that crime during the retreat as our enemies. Of those involved in the reactionary organizations, the handful of evil prime movers were reactionary elements, but the vast majority were people who obeyed the enemy under compulsion. It is a big mistake to regard them as our enemies, branding them, all alike, as reactionary elements.

As for those who joined reactionary organizations, we should concretely analyse why they joined them and at the same time take their ideological level into account. The Korean people had no opportunity of acquiring advanced ideas during the long rule of Japanese imperialism and began to be educated in democratic ideas only after liberation. All the people could not acquire progressive ideas in so short a period as 5 to 6 years following liberation. Therefore, we should not reject those who were compelled by the enemy to join reactionary organizations or to commit minor errors, but educate them patiently and win them over completely to our side.

Of course, our Party accepts only the most advanced elements from among the masses into its ranks. Even though it is a mass-based political party, it cannot admit all who, at best, hope for or sympathize with the democratic reunification and independence of the country.

But, instead of leaving non-Party progressive individuals and the broad masses to themselves, we should embrace them in some organization, give them political and ideological education and mobilize them in the struggle against the aggressors.

The DFRK comprises people in all walks of life who desire the freedom and independence of the motherland, irrespective of their profession, sex, religious beliefs and party affiliations. The DFRK is an important organization, indispensable for making our Party's policies known to broader sections of the masses and for mobilizing all patriotic forces in the struggle against the aggressors. We should continue to strive to expand and strengthen the DFRK.

2. Some comrades think that friendly parties such as the Chongu Party and the Democratic Party are reactionary and that it is

unnecessary for us to join hands with them. This is a wrong view. To wage the anti-imperialist struggle successfully, we should firmly join hands and cooperate with the democratic political parties and perseveringly help them to follow the right course.

We should learn to work with the friendly parties, while adhering steadfastly to the principles of Marxism-Leninism. It will not do to stigmatize all friendly parties as reactionary on the ground that some of their members are reactionaries. During the enemy's temporary occupation, quite a number of reactionary elements appeared in the friendly parties. But this was not because of the policies of the friendly parties.

We should not consider the friendly parties on the same political level as our Party. Our Party is guided by Marxism-Leninism, has brilliant revolutionary traditions carried down from the struggle for the freedom and independence of the country. It is composed of the most progressive elements of the Korean working people and plays the leading role in building the state. It will not do to label the friendly parties as reactionary or unnecessary because they fail to play the same role on the same political level as our Party.

The friendly parties are democratic in their aims and policies and are thus fully qualified to join a united front with our Party in the struggle against foreign aggressors for the reunification and independence of our country. We should not judge the friendly parties by the actions of the reactionaries within their ranks, but rather look at their basic line and policies.

3. Some of our officials have a tendency to meddle in the internal affairs of the friendly parties, allegedly for strengthening work with them. The Yonghung and Tanchon county Party organizations interfere in the friendly parties' arrangements for meetings and go so far as to instruct their own subordinate Party organizations to ensure that these meetings are attended by large numbers of members of these parties. Our Party organizations' aim in giving assistance to the friendly parties is to get their members to take an active part in all state affairs, help in their political education in every way and aid them in

clearing out the hidden reactionary elements by themselves. We should in this way see to it that the friendly parties maintain their identity and become active in the great task of wiping out our enemy.

3. THE CAUSES OF SHORTCOMINGS IN PARTY WORK

It is necessary to make a correct analysis of the causes of the defects revealed in all work in order to understand them thoroughly and rectify them. What are the causes of the shortcomings manifested in handling the Party's organizational matters and in the work of the Party organizations in relation to the DFRK?

1. Some Party organizations and cadres are oblivious of the fact that close ties with the masses are the wellspring of the great strength of our Party. This is the most dangerous phenomenon sapping the strength of our Party.

Our Party represents, and fights for, the interests of the labouring masses of Korea. To defend the interests of the masses, it is essential to strengthen our bonds with them at all times and listen to their opinions.

We can learn from the living experience of the masses, educate them and mobilize them to struggle only if we strengthen our bonds with them. Without close ties with the masses our Party cannot become a mass-based party guiding the millions headed by the working class.

We should discover what is new among the masses, make a deep study of all phenomena and take prompt measures. The primary cause of the drawbacks in our Party work today lies in the fact that some of our Party organizations are divorced from the masses.

2. Some Party organizations and cadres do not play a vanguard role in carrying out their assigned tasks.

If we are to develop from a lower stage to a higher, we must boldly rectify all the shortcomings revealed in our work and advance

uninterruptedly towards a new, higher goal. Some Party officials, however, are very lukewarm about correcting their defects, and tail behind the masses. If our Party merely recorded the masses' experience and thinking, followed behind their spontaneous movements and, swayed only by the momentary and partial interests of the masses, failed to guard their more vital interests firmly, it could not lead mass struggle purposefully or become a party truly defending the interests of the masses.

We should always look farther ahead than the masses, set them an example and lead them forward.

If one is to become a model for the masses, one should on no account conceal but boldly expose one's shortcomings. One should analyse in detail their causes and the conditions and circumstances giving rise to them and take measures to correct them. Only a party of such members can unite with the masses and lead them.

Some of our officials, however, do not understand this truth well. This is one of the causes of the shortcomings in our work today.

3. Criticism and self-criticism is inadequately practised by some of our Party organizations and cadres and, in many cases, is done in the wrong way.

Criticism should be conducted not for criticism's sake, but should be constructive and help the work forward. Criticism for eliminating faults and educating cadres is constructive criticism. Sharp criticism should be made against bureaucracy, flattery, liberalistic acts based on arbitrariness, senseless obstinacy, petty bourgeois conceit and tendencies towards localism and family favouritism marked by mutual connivance. All these should be eliminated through timely criticism, for they impede our advance. Each Party member should be modest and always uncompromising in matters of principle. Vigorous struggle should be waged against those who suppress criticism or dislike constructive criticism. Resolute struggle should also be put up against the tendency to make no effort to correct one's errors while admitting them when criticized.

Criticism and self-criticism of our errors and shortcomings is a

great driving force that advances our work. Those who fear criticism and obstruct it are cowards and not entitled to the respect of the masses. Because criticism and self-criticism is at a low ebb at present, many shortcomings and mistakes which can be fully rectified are being aggravated until, in the end, they grow into grave political errors.

4. Some Party organizations and cadres become so engrossed in the shock campaigns of the moment that they pay little attention to inner-Party work. If we are to fulfil all the tasks facing the Party organizations successfully, it is first necessary to improve and strengthen the Party's organizational and political education work.

As Stalin has pointed out, if we underestimate or forget political matters, stress only economic shock campaigns and are tempted only by economic results, all work will be driven into a blind alley. We must never fail to combine political work with economic work and constantly direct deep attention to inner-Party work.

Of course, we cannot lay emphasis on only one aspect of our work. Our Party organizations and officials must not stop guiding economic work. However, they should not take upon themselves the work of economic and administrative bodies but guide and help the officials of these bodies so that they can do their work well, and should continue to strengthen these bodies. In order to raise the level of Party leadership of economic and administrative work, it is essential to strengthen inner-Party work. If the Party itself is not consolidated, it cannot do active political work among the masses and give guidance in economic and administrative work.

Strengthening inner-Party work means raising the level of the Party's organizational and ideological work.

In Party organizational work it is very important to strengthen Party leadership. Some Party organizations and cadres have not yet done away with the armchair method of giving guidance. We have pressing need of living guidance which enables us to maintain regular contacts with the lower Party organs, get to know cadres and listen to the voice of the masses, learn from their experience, give them prompt and correct guidance and assistance and rectify their errors and faults.

Today the overwhelming majority of the chairmen of primary Party organizations are newly-selected people with no experience in Party work, and so the provincial, city (district) and county Party committees and political bodies should endeavour to give them warm and concrete guidance in a living way.

Some Party organizations and cadres think that everything will go all right if only a good resolution is adopted. This is wrong. A resolution records no more than what we have resolved to do. There is a considerable distance between resolve and practice. Concrete and planned organizational work is needed to carry our resolve into effect. Without such organizational work and systematic checking up on how it is carried out, no matter how good a resolution is, it will remain only words on paper.

Whether our Party work can be pushed ahead briskly or not depends also on the political and ideological level of the Party members. Political education, therefore, is a most important work for each Party organization and cadre. But many Party organizations do this work in a perfunctory manner.

In addition, there are a number of shortcomings in inner-Party work. Every Party organization and official should direct greater attention to inner-Party work so as to strengthen the Party.

5. Some Party organizations and cadres do not know how to thoroughly analyse all negative and positive factors revealed in Party work and to draw appropriate political conclusions.

Records and statistics of Party work are not compiled accurately and no analysis is made of them. Party statistics prepared by organizations at various levels serve only as data to be submitted to the upper organizations, and very few organizations and cadres analyse the statistics carefully and draw political conclusions from them in order to improve their work.

In Party work, accurate statistics serve as a true mirror of inner-Party life. But statistics themselves cannot point out the direction for improving our work. The thing to do is to analyse statistics carefully, draw a definite political conclusion from them and take

relevant measures to improve the work.

Take the case of analysing statistics on the growth of Party membership for instance. We have to pay attention to the numerical aspect, of course. But we also have to take into account the qualitative aspect what degree of knowledge and political level the recruits have and to do organizational and educational work with the goal of consolidating the Party qualitatively in mind.

The Party cadres' theoretical level with regard to Party work can be raised only through practice, namely, through actual Party work. We can make theory live by systematizing and generalizing the experience gained in our work. If Party cadres really want to raise their theoretical level as regards Party work, they should analyse a great deal of data on Party work, synthesize and systematize the experience and lessons drawn from it, and apply these in their future work. They should thus endeavour to raise their theoretical level steadily in the course of work.

4. OUR TASKS

In order to eliminate the shortcomings in Party work quickly and strengthen and develop the work of Party organizations, we are confronted with the following tasks:

1. Under the present conditions in our country, the most important task for us is to expand and strengthen our Party so that it becomes a mass-based party. Leading official of Party organizations at all levels and all Party members should be given a clear understanding of our Party's organizational line—expanding and strengthening the Party in keeping with its mass character and the specific features in its development.

We must develop our Party into one representing broader sections of the people by thoroughly repudiating the closed-door tendency of paying attention only to the proportion of workers in it and refusing to

admit advanced peasants for fear of a drop in that proportion, or rejecting those people in the factories and People's Army who are qualified for membership for the unwarranted reasons that their training is insufficient, their level is low, or that their length of service is short.

This, however, in no way means that it is permissible to haphazardly accept candidates into the Party without screening and checking up on them. We must strictly follow the procedure whereby those who join the Party are dealt with individually. We must prevent spies and subverters of the US imperialists and the traitorous Syngman Rhee clique and other bad elements from worming their way into the ranks of our Party. The door of the Party should always be kept firmly shut to those scoundrels.

We should accept into the Party advanced elements who support its policy in the struggle for freedom and independence and display enthusiasm for implementing it.

2. A thoroughgoing struggle should be waged in all Party organizations, from the centre down to the cells, against the tendency towards the "penalty-first" policy which has been manifested in the work of reorganizing the Party ranks.

According to the decision of the Organizational Committee of the Party Central Committee dated September 1, 1951, unwarranted penalties applied to Party members must be cancelled, penalties which were too severe must be corrected and those members who have been working enthusiastically after being penalized quickly relieved of their penalties. At the same time the Party members' political level should be raised, so that they voluntarily observe Party discipline.

3. The Party Central Committee and the Party organizations at all levels should pay great attention to fostering the core of the Party cells and see to it that the chairmen and members of the primary Party committees and chairmen and core members of the cells have a good understanding of all Party decisions and instructions, become models for the Party members and the masses and lead them in the struggle to carry out these decisions and instructions.

Fostering the cell core is the most important measure for reinforcing our Party ranks and strengthening the bonds between the Party and the masses. Only through this can our Party overcome all difficulties and win a brilliant victory in the Fatherland Liberation War.

In order to train the cell core, cadres from the Party Central Committee and provincial Party organizations should go down to the primary Party organizations and help the primary Party and cell committee members and Party activists in their practical work, guide them in raising their political and theoretical standards and their working ability.

4. All Party organizations should pay deep attention to educating and training the cadres in practical work. The chairmen of all Party committees should personally assume responsibility for training two or more cadres of vice-chairman level. Cadres should not be transferred frequently, instead they should be kept in one place for a long period and promoted in due course after ascertaining their progress in practical work.

5. All Party organizations should raise the ideological level of the entire Party membership. Special attention should be devoted to teaching the Party members Marxist-Leninist theory and, in particular, the education of new members should be intensified and they should undergo ideological tempering. The education of new members should not be done through the Party education network alone, but through mass cultural activities and through discussing problems of theoretical and educational significance at Party meetings. In addition, qualified comrades can also be given this task. The entire Party membership should thus become firmly armed with the advanced theory of Marxism-Leninism and our Party strengthened organizationally and ideologically.

6. We should strengthen the work of the Democratic Front for the Reunification of Korea. As our Party plays the leading role in the DFRK, it should be more active in strengthening this work.

To improve and strengthen the work of the DFRK, the tendency to

stress only formalistic shock campaigns should be eliminated, and democratic personalities from all strata should be educated in a planned way to promote their ideological progress, and they should be constantly encouraged to take an active part in state affairs.

Our Party should give day-to-day assistance to the various organs of the DFRK in matters ranging from the drafting of work plans to the concrete organization of ways to carry them out.

To strengthen the work of the DFRK, attention should be paid especially to the following points:

a) All the forces of the political parties and social organizations should be enlisted in the struggle against the US imperialist aggressors and their stooges, the Syngman Rhee clique. The counter-revolutionary elements lurking within the political parties and social organizations and in all social strata should be ferreted out and liquidated, and people of all walks of life roused to greater hatred of the enemy.

b) The present situation in our country should be publicized and explained correctly, so that all the people give fuller play to their patriotism and strengthen their confidence in victory, and so that all patriotic forces are mobilized to fulfil the political and economic tasks set out by the state.

c) Great efforts should be exerted to strengthen the unity of all political parties and social organizations under the DFRK and to expand the united front.

d) In order to push forward the work of the DFRK properly, Party members should be taught how to work with the friendly parties, and much effort should be made to strengthen unity, not only at the upper but the lower levels, between the members of our Party and of the friendly parties. The vast majority of the rank and file of all political parties and social organizations now forming the united front are labouring masses, therefore they are our allies who can go all the way with us. We should always get close to them and educate them in democratic ideas, so that, joining hands with us, they become champion fighters for the reunification and independence of the

country and the freedom and happiness of the people.

The united front at the lower level should be strengthened so that the progressive rank and file can bring pressure to bear upon some waverers at the upper level, check their vacillation and isolate the undesirable elements at the upper level from the masses.

To strengthen unity at the lower level it is necessary to exert our Party's influence on the members of the friendly parties through frequent mutual contacts. The tendency to operate separately, detached from each other, should be eliminated. Activities in the clubhouses and democratic publicity halls, round-table talks, reading sessions, etc., should be conducted jointly, and all political, economic and cultural shock campaigns should also be carried on in common, so that we exert ideological influence upon the members of the friendly parties.

7. An unremitting struggle should be waged against the bureaucratic style of work still found in our Party. The entire Party should struggle against all bureaucratic, formalistic styles of work which consist of unreasonably berating comrades whose political level and professional ability are low, instead of educating and assisting them; of making compromises, swayed by flattery and personal considerations, instead of criticizing comrades and rectifying their errors; of stifling creative proposals made by subordinates, instead of heeding them; of sticking jealously to one's own subjective views and so making a mess of things; of trying to mobilize the masses through orders and coercion, instead of through explanation and persuasion; of mechanically introducing foreign things without regard for our national peculiarities and forcing people at the lower level to accept them when these things are totally out of place.

At this plenary meeting we must discuss all these problems sincerely, boldly reveal the shortcomings in our work, take measures to correct them and rouse the whole Party to action so as to bring about marked progress in Party work in the future.

ON IMPROVING THE PARTY'S ORGANIZATIONAL WORK

**Concluding Speech at the Fourth Plenary Meeting
of the Central Committee of the Workers' Party of Korea**

November 2, 1951

Comrades,

This meeting has been a great success. If we do not rectify our shortcomings in time, they will prove a great hindrance to the development of our Party. Many good suggestions on how to eliminate them have been advanced at this meeting and these will greatly help push our work forward in the future.

Although measures for improving our work were set out in detail in She report, I would like to say something more on several questions.

1. ON RECRUITING WORK

First, in recruiting new members some of our Party organizations committed the error of closed-doorism. This has already been pointed out clearly in the report.

However, many comrades still do not understand this and express doubt and concern, asking: "If a great number of toiling peasants are admitted into the Party, what will become of its composition? Won't

our Party become a peasant party?" This is a needless worry.

Our Party is a party which has the working class as its core, a party guided by the ideology of the working class. Therefore, petty-bourgeois ideology cannot become the ideological foundation of our Party, and our Party cannot become a peasant party simply because peasants make up a large part of its membership.

Our Party can never be anything but a Marxist-Leninist party. Even if it absorbs large numbers of toiling peasants into its ranks, it will invariably be guided by the ideology of the working class. Therefore, it can never become a party of the peasants or a party of the small-propertied class.

Even if the proportion of worker members falls to some extent at the present stage, the nature of our Party will not alter in the least, nor is there anything for us to worry about as long as Marxism-Leninism, the ideology of the working class, remains its guiding ideology and Party building is strictly based on the organizational principle of a Marxist-Leninist party.

We will recruit into the Party the best elements from among the toiling peasants, arm them with the ideology of the working class and continue to strengthen and develop our Party to make it a mass-based political party with the working class as its core.

Second, an analysis of the Korean working class reveals a complex composition which is due to the peculiar conditions of our country's development. The overwhelming majority of our workers are yesterday's peasants.

Immediately after the August 15 liberation, the northern half of the country had no more than 300,000 workers. With the development of the national economy after liberation, the number grew to nearly 600,000. This means that in the five years after liberation the number of workers doubled. All of these people had been farming in the countryside before they became workers. So our working class is young.

Workers, of course, belong to the working class. But not all of them have working-class consciousness. Much less can we say that the peasants of yesterday, who have recently left the countryside and

started working in industry, all possess working-class consciousness, even though they are workers today. Therefore, as regards admission into the Party and education in Marxism-Leninism, there is little difference between those workers who were peasants until yesterday and are now working in factories and today's peasants who may become workers in the future.

Our peasants are not the peasants of the past. They are heading for socialism, not taking the path of capitalism, for people's power has been set up and democratic reforms, such as the agrarian reform and the nationalization of industries, have been carried out since the August 15 liberation. This makes it possible for us to take large numbers of toiling peasants into the Party ranks and educate them in Marxism-Leninism.

Third, at the time of the merger of the two parties, we made the mass character of our Party clear by defining it as the vanguard of the working masses, representing the interests of the working class and the broad sections of other working people. Even at that time, we clearly analysed the reasons why our Party should be a Workers' Party.

Why have we made our Party a Workers' Party instead of letting it continue as a Communist Party? Because, owing to the peculiarities of the development of our country at the present stage, it is necessary to rally the broad masses closely around our Party in the struggle for national reunification and independence.

The composition of our population shows that nearly 80 per cent are peasants. Such being the socio-economic structure of our country, what would become of our Party if labouring peasants were not admitted for fear of a drop in the proportion of workers? If we accept only workers and the small number of communists, how can our Party become a mass party and fulfil its leading role among the masses satisfactorily?

Since the socio-economic structure does not change overnight, the proportion of peasants in our Party will increase for many years to come. This is nothing to worry about.

The peculiarity of our country's socio-economic structure and the present situation created by the predatory colonial policy of US imperialism raise the tasks of rallying the broad masses around our

Party, of expanding and reinforcing its ranks and of building it into a mass political party. It is therefore correct at the present stage not to go by the proportion of workers alone but to absorb large numbers of advanced elements from among the working people into our Party.

It runs counter to the line of our Party to put forth various unjustifiable reasons and actually keep the Party's door closed. While admitting workers, we should not hesitate to admit advanced elements from among the peasants and working intellectuals into our Party, and thus constantly build it into a mass-based political party.

As pointed out in the report, however, opening the door of the Party does not mean admitting everyone who comes along into the Party. As a comrade said yesterday, landlords, preachers, profiteers, or urban loafers should not be admitted. We must strictly guard against reactionary-minded, impure elements and spies sneaking into our Party ranks.

2. ON THE QUESTION OF PENALTIES

It was clearly pointed out in the report and in the speeches of many comrades that, owing to a "penalty-first" tendency, many Party members were wrongly punished in what was like a shock campaign. This is a serious defect and error in our Party work.

I consider that the errors over penalties committed recently must be rectified according to the following principles:

Unwarranted penalties must be cancelled and unfair penalties, i.e., those which were too severe, must be corrected. Those comrades who have been working enthusiastically since they were punished must have their penalties remitted.

Many of our Party workers do not understand the significance of penalties. The aim of Party penalties is to educate Party members and prevent them from repeating errors. Therefore, their imposition must

not be considered in the same light as sentencing criminals in a court. The penalties stipulated in the Party Rules are educational in their purpose. It is quite unnecessary to impose penalties on those who have realized their mistakes without being punished.

However, it has now become the fashion among some of our officials to mete out penalties. They apply penalties because others do so, like the old saying: “People cry because others are crying.” Some comrades boast of the many penalties they have meted out, saying, “Well, you say you have meted out so many penalties, but I have imposed more than you.” These comrades have punished people indiscriminately for having buried, defaced or burned Party membership cards during the enemy occupation, without taking account of the circumstances at the time and without considering the pain and anguish of those punished. This is wrong.

We must make it clearly known to Party members that the sole aim of penalties lies in education.

Some county Party committee chairmen said in their speeches that they did not want to apply penalties, but did so for fear of the higher organs. This shows that the provincial Party committees suffer from bureaucracy. Party organizations impose penalties without knowing why, merely out of fear of the higher organs. This is a very dangerous practice. No question can be solved by coercion. It is necessary to get our members to observe Party discipline consciously. When penalties are applied, it must be with the aim of educating members to observe Party discipline voluntarily.

3. FOR CONSOLIDATING THE DEMOCRATIC FRONT FOR THE REUNIFICATION OF KOREA

The need to strengthen the Democratic Front for the Reunification

of Korea was dealt with in detail in the report and has been explained at length in many documents of the Party Central Committee. So, I think it unnecessary to speak about it again. What is required is more profound study of the previous documents and reports on this subject.

The aim of our struggle at the present stage is to accomplish the entire nation's task of opposing the invaders from 16 countries, headed by the US imperialist marauders, and their lackeys, the traitorous Syngman Rhee clique, and of achieving the reunification and independence of the country. If we are to carry out this national task, we must join hands and unite with whoever opposes the US imperialist plunderers and their stooges and desires reunification and independence, no matter what party or group he may belong to. We must mobilize all forces, big and small, irrespective of political views, religious beliefs or property status, in the struggle against the US imperialists and their running dogs.

Since we are fighting a life-and-death battle against the US imperialist aggressors and their lackeys, it is most harmful to disperse our forces. We must join hands with and give leadership to all political parties, social organizations and individuals who oppose the US imperialists and their henchmen, no matter whether they are the Chongu Party, the Democratic Party, the Toiling People's Party, the People's Republican Party, people of the propertied classes or religious believers.

Our Party members must not interfere in the internal affairs of friendly parties or hamper their development. They must conduct themselves modestly with members of these parties. We must encourage the friendly parties to take an active part in state affairs together with us and influence them with progressive ideas and our advanced experience. In cases where bad elements who have sneaked into the friendly parties seek to alienate these parties from ours, we must help their members eliminate these undesirable elements through their own inner-party struggles. There is no secret about our Party's policies. We must at all times explain the policies of our Party and the state to the members of the friendly parties, inspire them with

confidence in victory and see to it that they stand with us in the struggle to realize the great cause of national reunification.

Some of our comrades are arrogant and not modest towards the members of the friendly parties. It is wrong to make our friends discontented without reason.

Of course, this does not mean that unprincipled compromise is permissible. We must always strictly adhere to our principled stand, exert a positive influence on members of the friendly parties and unite with them. When some of them do not understand our policies clearly, we must earnestly explain them. When they do not do their work well, we must help and encourage them to do it properly. We must educate them patiently so that they will understand us well and cooperate with us.

The united front is aimed solely at ensuring the success of the revolutionary tasks that confront us. Therefore, we must not meddle in the work of the friendly parties but, for the sake of better work, we should give each other mutual advice. It is not principled to leave them to follow a wrong path. When members of the friendly parties carry out Government policies incorrectly while working with us in government or economic bodies, we must help them to execute them correctly. We should encourage and guide the members of the friendly parties to implement Government policies in all fields together with us, no matter whether the scope of the work involved is wide or limited.

In our relations with the friendly parties, we must always be active. We should not wait for them to follow us, but take them by the hand and give them friendly advice and constant explanation to get them to follow the right path. Our work in this respect is not up to the mark, and our officials are not skilled at it. The Party Central Committee has emphasized this more than once, but many of our Party bodies and organizations still fail to improve.

The important thing in united front work is to strengthen unity not only with the upper circles of the friendly parties but with their rank and file. By making closer contact with the upper circles of those parties, we will create favourable conditions for strengthening the

united front with their rank and file. At the same time, by strengthening the united front with their rank and file we can consolidate the united front with their upper circles, and exert our Party's influence upon those working people who make up the overwhelming majority of the masses under the influence of these parties.

To strengthen the united front with the rank and file of the friendly parties, we should develop widespread contact with their members, inspire them with patriotism and firm confidence in victory and get them to understand the justice of our struggle. We must get them to understand clearly that their class position is the same as ours. We must influence them so that they will always follow our Party hand in hand with our Party members even if the upper circles waver. We must get them to isolate the reactionary elements in their parties.

It was because unity with the rank and file was not strong enough that some vicious elements inside the friendly parties killed people during the temporary retreat of the People's Army. If the united front with the rank and file of the friendly parties had been strong, their members, who had shared in the distribution of land and had the same class position as ours, would not have perpetrated criminal acts against the people at the instigation of the reactionary elements.

If we attempt to take vengeance on certain members of the friendly parties because they were with reactionary organizations for a time and killed our Party members or their families, this will only gladden the US imperialists. By breeding discord among our people and causing them to kill each other, the US imperialists are trying to sap our strength and attain their sinister aggressive ends without shedding their own blood.

Many of our Party members still do not have a correct understanding of the importance of the united front, nor do they understand fully that strengthening the united front is the basic line of the Party.

Many comrades think that things will go well if only they shout the slogan: "Let us strengthen the united front!" The united front can be maintained only by working closely with the friendly parties and

establishing close ties with their members.

Some comrades think that the united front at the lower level is something that concerns only the Party rank and file. This is wrong. There are no superior or inferior members in our Party. Though their assignments are different, all are equal as Party members. In accordance with the united front policy, every Party member, regardless of his position, must establish close ties with the rank and file of the friendly parties, have talks with them and exert the influence of our Party on them, thus getting them to follow us. If our Party members strengthen their work with members of the Chongu Party, maintain intimate relations with them and imbue them with progressive ideas, the question of rank and file unity in the countryside will be solved.

The united front can never be formed through coercive measures. Coercion will only provoke antipathy. We must influence the members of the friendly parties through education and persuasion and get them to support us wholeheartedly and be determined to stand by us to the last.

In the future, the Central Committee and all the provincial committees of the Party should strengthen the work of helping all Party members understand our united front policy correctly.

4. ON THE QUESTION OF CADRES

I think that what many comrades have said on this question is correct. The Party Central Committee, too, has many shortcomings in cadre work. The education and training of cadres has been conducted without a plan. Despite the general shortage, cadres are largely concentrated in certain branches, while other branches are very short. And when we want to select new people for cadre posts, we find that no reserves have been trained.

The Personnel Department is busy filling vacancies. But it does not satisfactorily train cadres according to plan and allocate the right cadre to the right post with due consideration for the opinions of people down below.

Personnel management is dealt with almost exclusively by the Personnel Department of the Party Central Committee. There is no need for this. Such work as drawing up general plans for the training of cadres, supervising their allocation and promotion and selecting new cadres of those categories that are subject to approval by the Political Committee or Organizational Committee must be undertaken directly by the Personnel Department. However, it is advisable that cadres of other categories be dealt with by each branch concerned. This will not only shorten the time needed to endorse cadres, but also enable all departments to study their own work more profoundly and give constant attention to cadre training. The regulations governing personnel management must be reexamined and appropriately modified.

5. ON CADRES FROM THE INTELLIGENTSIA

It was revealed in the speeches that some comrades do not yet have a correct understanding of the cadres from the intelligentsia. This is very regrettable. This question was clarified long ago. However, since even some provincial leading officials do not yet have a correct understanding of the question, I should like to emphasize the point once again.

More wrong views are held about the intellectuals who studied under Japanese imperialist rule, than about the new intellectuals who have been brought up in the six years since liberation. I explained this problem clearly at the time of the merger of the two parties.

Our intellectuals served in the economic and cultural institutions of

Japanese imperialism in the past. But since liberation, they have been serving the country and the people. By keeping contact with the workers and peasants and learning from their thinking, fortitude and staunchness, they are gradually transforming themselves into intellectuals of a new type.

They have been noticeably remoulded in these six years, and have displayed devotion and initiative in building democracy. The overwhelming majority of them have fought courageously for the country in the war. Many of them went down as far as the Raktong River area to fight the enemy and, during the temporary retreat, in spite of all difficulties they followed our Party. What more do we demand of these intellectuals, and what ground is there for not trusting them? We should promote them boldly, without distrusting them, inspire them to serve the country and the people actively, and remould them thoroughly so that they become the people's intellectuals.

There is nothing wrong in intellectuals having acquired technique and knowledge in the past. They are now passing on their knowledge to our workers and peasants. They have played a big role in rehabilitating and building factories and enterprises since liberation.

The intellectuals have rendered great service. They are not to blame for their parents having been landlords or capitalists. If they stand by their parents and set themselves against our social system, that is another question. But what is wrong with them when they struggle against their parents' stand and faithfully serve the Party and the people? We should not reject their patriotic zeal but inspire them to greater activity.

Some intellectuals think, "We are people of the transition period and will be replaced by new intellectuals some day." They are wrong. Whoever does not make progress will be replaced. Whatever is old and stagnant is sure to be replaced by the new. This is the law of the development of things. But if the intellectuals constantly advance in the direction that conforms to the requirements of the new society, who will reject and replace them? We expect the old intellectuals to make steady progress, and we will continue to help them go forward.

We should explain to them our Party's line in regard to them, prevent them from wavering ideologically or feeling uneasy, promote them boldly and inspire them to take pride in serving the country and the people actively. We should strive to provide them with conditions for continuous progress and for using their abilities to the full.

6. ON STYLE OF WORK

There are serious shortcomings in our officials' style of work. These are more in evidence in government bodies at higher levels.

There is a tendency to be indifferent to subordinates and think everything is settled once papers have been sent down to the lower organs. There are also such things as demanding that chairmen of ri people's committees or Party cells submit many superfluous documents and statistics, the preparation of which prevents them from attending to their duties. When reports and statistics, worked out at great pains by the officials at the ri level, are submitted to the higher organs, the ministers or bureau chiefs do not even look through them well but tuck them away in drawers. I think decisive measures must be taken to reduce the amount of complex statistics and reports.

The struggle to eliminate the bureaucratic style of work must be unceasing. We must get rid of unjust practices such as mobilizing only the people for voluntary labour service, while cadres hold themselves aloof from it. Cadres should work among the people and educate them during work breaks, explaining and propagandizing the Party's policies to them.

It is only by sharing the sweet and the bitter with the people that cadres will be able to hear their opinions and take timely measures to meet their demands. We should not command the masses, but explain things to them, persuade and educate them.

After this meeting all provincial Party committees must convene meetings of Party activists to discuss the shortcomings in our work and rectify them at once.

All provincial Party committee chairmen should personally go down to the cells, have talks with Party members, listen to their opinions, and then carefully study their own work and make sincere efforts to bring a decisive improvement to the work of our Party, which carries the destiny of the country on its shoulders.

ON ORGANIZING TEAMS OF SNIPERS

**Order No. 085 of the Supreme Commander
of the Korean People's Army**

November 2, 1951

In order to further boost the morale of the men of the People's Army units, encourage their activity in battles and at the same time destroy more enemy soldiers, I issue the following order:

1. A team of snipers (crackshots) of six to eight men or more shall be organized at each company on the firing line, from the frontline units.

2. The snipers shall be equipped with different types of small arms with sighting telescopes and highly accurate ordinary rifles.

3. Each division shall call a five-day meeting of snipers by November 15 this year. They shall have to take a short course on the deployment of snipers, arrangement of their firing positions, method of camouflage, the snipers' manual and precautions. The state and use of snipers' small arms shall be inspected and long-range shooting practice be given.

4. The Chief of the Combat Training Bureau shall draft the precautions, a form of registration, a directive on the organization of the snipers' team and its activity. These must be issued by November 10.

5. Each regimental commander shall give a sniper a register in which the number of the officers and soldiers of the enemy killed will be recorded, and the entries shall be made by the company

commander concerned.

6. In order to raise the morale and the fighting efficiency of the snipers, state commendations shall be awarded as follows:

The Distinguished Service Medal for 10 enemy killed,

The Order of Soldier's Honour Second Class for 15 enemy killed,

The Order of Soldier's Honour First Class for 20 enemy killed,

The National Flag Order Second Class for 25 enemy killed,

The National Flag Order First Class and a fortnight's holiday for visiting home, for 30 enemy killed,

The title of Hero of the Democratic People's Republic of Korea for 50 and more enemy killed,

7. This order shall be conveyed to all servicemen of the Korean People's Army.

ON ORGANIZING AND GIVING MILITARY TRAINING TO WORKERS OF MILLS, FACTORIES AND OTHER ENTERPRISES

**Order No. 00606 of the Supreme Commander
of the Korean People's Army**

November 17, 1951

In order to put into effect Order No. 194 of the Military Commission I instruct that military training shall be organized and conducted for workers of every mill, factory and enterprise as follows:

1. From among the workers in every mill, factory and enterprise, all male citizens between the ages of 17 and 30 who are eligible for military service shall be given military training.

2. The trainees shall be formed into regiments, battalions and companies based on the number of those on the list of mills, factories and enterprises. Those trainees who are well qualified politically and militarily shall be selected and assigned to commanders.

In order to ensure military training the following departments shall be set up:

a) A civilian military training department shall be set up in the Combat Training Bureau and a civilian military training section in each provincial military mobilization department.

b) Instructors shall be assigned to regiments and battalions to be organized, and they shall be attached to the civilian military training section of the relevant provincial military mobilization department.

3. The Chief of the Combat Training Bureau shall work out a

programme for 300 hours of civilian military training and send it down to every provincial military mobilization department by November 20, 1951.

4. The Chief of the Personnel Bureau shall assign cadres to the civilian military training department of the Combat Training Bureau and the civilian military training section of each provincial military mobilization department by November 25, 1951 and instructors of regiments and battalions be assigned according to the number of the regiments and battalions to be organized.

5. The Chief of the General Political Bureau shall appoint relevant political workers to the regiments, and battalions to be formed.

6. The Chief of the General Ordnance Bureau shall supply training weapons for civilian military trainees by December 10, 1951 as required by the Chief of the Combat Training Bureau.

7. Each provincial military mobilization department shall direct and supervise civilian military training in the countryside which is undertaken by the national defence support committee.

8. The chief of each provincial military mobilization department shall complete the formation of regiments and battalions by November 30, 1951 and report it to me by December 5, 1951 through the Chief of the Organization and Mobilization Bureau.

THE IMMEDIATE TASKS BEFORE HEALTH WORKERS

Talk to Health Workers

November 30, 1951

You health workers have contributed a lot to the development of the public health of the country in the changed circumstances after liberation. In the days of peaceful construction you distinguished yourselves in rehabilitating and reequipping medical facilities and training health workers. In the Fatherland Liberation War you have worked devotedly towards the medical treatment of the wounded at the front and in the rear as well as for the health of the fighting people, surmounting all difficulties and obstacles.

In this struggle for the country and the people, you have set yourselves up as doctors of the people, technicians of the people and true intellectuals of the people. This shows that you are no longer the same old health workers or intellectuals under Japanese imperialist rule but honourable health workers devoted to the good of the people under the people's democratic system.

However, we never hide our shortcomings. As was revealed in the war, the skill of our health workers is not at a high level; we have been unable to train the required number of doctors, pharmacists and nurses in time; hospital facilities are inadequate; and there are no means to produce and supply necessary medicines adequately on time. That is why we have failed to treat as many people as we could have, otherwise. We must remove these defects.

It is important for our future progress to generalize the valuable experience gained in the Fatherland Liberation War and quickly eliminate the defects.

Health workers are confronted with more difficult and important tasks than before.

The basic task before you is to save the lives of the valiant officers and men of our People's Army and working people in the rear and take meticulous care of their health, thereby dependably protecting the manpower reserve that determines everything, so as to guarantee our final victory in the war along with the happiness and prosperity of generations to come. From this I feel that the following points are to be considered most important in the public health service.

It is of paramount importance to disseminate the knowledge of public health widely among the masses of people, take preventing measures against all diseases and conduct a nationwide drive for wartime hygienic and anti-epidemic work. This is a work which should always be given priority in wartime as well as during peace.

As you all know, under the past colonial rule of Japanese imperialism we Koreans led a miserable life as slaves ill-clad and under-fed. The Japanese imperialist rulers adopted no public health policy for Koreans, particularly for the working masses who constituted an overwhelming majority of the population.

Japanese imperialists made every vicious attempt to keep Koreans politically ignorant and economically destitute and stamp out the heritages of our national culture, so as to put them under the yoke of colonial slavery for ever.

At that time there was no such expression as popular health service; Koreans had taken it for granted that they were destined to suffer from maltreatment and drudgery and doomed to die of diseases.

But the situation is entirely different now. Our people hold power in their hands and are making a new life for themselves along the lines indicated by the Workers' Party of Korea. They have their own armed forces, with which they are heroically repelling the US imperialist armed forces of aggression which style themselves as the "strongest"

in the world, for the freedom and independence of the country. Our people are aware of how they should live and what they should do as masters of a new era and a new Korea.

Our hospitals and clinics are centres that work for the masses of people who are creating a new life, not for the rich and privileged few as in capitalist countries. They provide the people with medical care free or virtually free of charge. It is not just a matter of chance that our medical institutions and health workers enjoy love and respect of the people.

So there is no doubt that if health workers strive with greater devotion to the advancement of public health in the spirit of serving the people and rouse their voluntary enthusiasm by imparting them the knowledge of health properly, it would be possible to develop the hygienic and anti-epidemic work widely.

Prevention of infectious diseases through a thoroughgoing anti-epidemic work is a matter of particular importance in the circumstances of the war. If this work is not carried out properly, the consequences on the lives of the people in the rear and the combat efficiency of the People's Army will be great. Together with all the people, health workers must succeed in the struggle to prevent epidemics.

Health workers, whoever they are, should be guides in imparting a knowledge of hygiene. All the therapeutic and disease-prevention organizations should serve as schools of public health and hygiene and centres of mass hygienic and anti-epidemic drive. Only then can great successes be achieved in the field of public health service.

Next, the surroundings of towns, villages, all workplaces and schools should be kept clean. Hospitals, clinics and all other therapeutic and disease-prevention facilities which were destroyed or burnt down by the barbarous enemy should be quickly rebuilt or reequipped. The struggle to maintain cleanliness of the surroundings and restore health facilities is precisely the struggle to win the war. The faster and more thoroughly this work is carried out, the more our front and rear will be consolidated.

In addition, we should take measures to manufacture necessary

medical equipment and material for ourselves and meet the domestic requirements.

Next, the health of children and mothers should be taken thorough care of. It is important to rear babies healthily, reduce the rate of infant mortality, take particularly good care of pregnant women and those who have just had babies and publicly respect and care for mothers with many children. Here, too, the deciding factor is the genuine resolve and lofty moral qualities of health workers to serve self-sacrificingly for the health of children and mothers.

If we are to conduct health service to our satisfaction, we should train more health workers and improve their qualifications. We should develop a large number of health and medical workers such as doctors, pharmacists and nurses. It is particularly advisable to train many women doctors and pharmacists.

We should not just try to fill up the shortage in the number of medical workers but strive to raise their calibre as well. Acquiring the latest medical skills is a main link to improve not only the quality of our health workers but also that of our public health service in general. All health workers should regard the task of attending the war wounded and patients as being of equal importance as combat duty. They should make greater efforts to acquire advanced new medical skills just as our valiant officers and men of the People's Army strive to improve their combat skills.

Our doctors and pharmacists should study hard the progress made in medical science in foreign countries, theoretically generalize the priceless experience gained in the war, and spread them widely.

Our medical scientists and health workers have been very poor at research work and they have written very few books. You should learn something good from others and, at the same time, boldly sum up and make public the results of your actual research work and fine experience. It is necessary to theorize and spread widely the excellent, new experience gained in the war, for instance, in specific matters like methods of disease prevention, therapy, transport of patients and first aid.

Another important thing is that health workers should raise the level of their political and ideological consciousness and equip themselves with lofty patriotic ideas.

When we conducted guerrilla warfare before, we had no doctor who had completed a college course of medicine, but we studied medicine indigenously through books and were thus able to provide simple treatments even under difficulties. You are really fortunate to work now in a situation which is more favourable than in those days. I think if only you make up your minds, you can do anything. All depends on your determination, enthusiasm and patriotic devotion.

While endeavouring to increase their professional skills, health workers, through tireless ideological education, should emerge as genuine public health workers who regard the health and lives of the people as their own. Only then is it possible to develop our public health service as required by the country and people in the coming few years.

Last, I would like to talk about the necessity of correctly estimating the health workers who work well.

The People's Army fighters wounded at the front say, "The exploits of the doctors and nurses who treat the wounded with such strenuous efforts are not talked about in the papers." We should promptly commend and talk at length about the brilliant feats of the excellent health workers who are respected and loved by our army and people for their devotion and creativity in their medical care for war wounded and their service in the rear.

I firmly believe that, overcoming all wartime difficulties, every health worker, loyal to the country and the people, will carry out admirably the lofty tasks assigned to the public health front for our victory in the Fatherland Liberation War.

TO RAISE OUR ART TO A HIGHER LEVEL

**Speech Delivered to the Artists Who Participated
in the World Art Festival of Youth and Students**

December 12, 1951

Dear comrades,

I would like to extend a warm welcome to you members of our national art troupe back home after a successful performance at the World Art Festival of Youth and Students in Berlin as well as in the Soviet Union and the People's Democracies.

The performance of our actors and actresses is highly significant. It has contributed greatly to strengthening the ties of friendship between the people of Korea and those of many other countries.

For the first time an extensive public in Berlin and in the People's Democracies were able to see the art of our new Korea. They heard for themselves the vibrant voice of Korean people, heroically defending the freedom and independence of their country against US imperialist invasion.

In countries far away from home, our troupe of artists was enthusiastically welcomed by the people. This demonstrates their sympathy for the fighting people of Korea and shows the increasing international prestige of the Democratic People's Republic of Korea.

The Korean people are not only industrious and brave in the face of the enemy; they are also highly endowed with artistic talents. We have achieved brilliant successes in the sphere of art.

You had the honour of presenting to the entire world the artistic

achievements of our young Republic.

With attention from the Party and the Government, music, dance, drama and other areas of our art have developed rapidly since liberation and have been popularized widely among broad sections of the people.

During their recent tour abroad, our artists presented an excellent and varied programme including songs that won for Korean art recognition and acclaim. This is indeed gratifying.

But we must not be content with such success. We must try harder to raise the art of our country to a higher plane. Workers in the field of art should strive to make our art an art of the people, national in form and democratic in content. They should make it an art which fully meets international standards, recognized for its ardent internationalist spirit, profound ideological content and high artistic quality.

Art must strike deep roots in the masses. Composers, playwrights, musicians, dancers and actors have to study the lives of the people with care. They should use the national classics and popular songs created by the people as much as possible in their creative activity, since these represent the true sentiments and aspirations of the people.

In all their performances, actors should portray the people's emotions, reflect the popular spirit and vividly express popular melodies. We should also actively develop our classical music and continue to improve our traditional musical instruments. This is the only way our art will reflect the national characteristics of the Korean people.

We cannot, however, let ourselves revert to restorationism, that is, glorify everything from the past and idealize obsolete artistic forms on the grounds that we should resurrect and develop national classics and national art. Our critical use of old art forms should be commensurate with contemporary standards.

Times have changed. The conditions of our people, their manners, customs and moral characteristics have also changed.

Art must always truthfully reflect the people's real life and struggle. It cannot ask the people to move backward; it must impel them forward

towards a happier future. Only art of this kind is really people's art.

True, our art must give full expression to national characteristics; but that does not mean that it should remain within narrow national limits. Our art workers have to bear this in mind.

Our struggle is supported by the friendly peoples of the democratic camp, and we are marching along in solidarity with lovers of peace the world over. So our art should sing the song of friendship among nations; it should educate our people in the spirit of internationalism. In order to develop national art, it is important to draw on our legacy from the past. But we should also study the art of the peoples of the Soviet Union and other fraternal countries in order to learn about their excellent achievements. This will both enrich our art and strengthen friendly ties among nations.

Formalism is a serious obstacle to the development of our art. Some of our composers, men of fine arts, playwrights and actors are not yet completely free from this evil. There are actors and actresses, for example, who emphasize form in their performance to such an extent that they fail to express profoundly the essential content of a play and misrepresent the ideas and feelings of the heroes.

This formalism must be eliminated once and for all. It separates form from content, subordinating the latter to the former. Thus, formalism not only debases the ideological content of art but also damages its artistic value.

We have competent, veteran artists as well as many new talented ones. These young artists are the promising shoots we must tenderly care for and nurture. The future belongs to the youth. We should devote time and effort to fostering our new artists; we should promote them boldly.

The great Lenin said: "We must carefully study the feeble new shoots, we must devote the greatest attention to them, do everything to promote their growth and 'nurse' them." Artists especially should remember Lenin's words.

In order to raise our art to a higher level, it is paramount that art workers raise their own political and ideological level.

Anyone who fails to appreciate our actual situation and who does not clearly understand our people's activities or goals cannot faithfully depict their lives. Neither can they create works of art with ennobling ideological content.

Our new democratic art must have profound ideological content and must serve the people as a weapon of struggle. High ideological quality combined with great artistic value is the only valid standard for judging a work of art. Consequently artists, like workers in all other spheres, must tirelessly study to raise their ideological and political level.

Dear comrades,

Undoubtedly you learned a great deal and acquired valuable experience during your recent foreign tour. You have seen the advanced art of many countries. I imagine that your ideas about the perspectives for our national artistic development are, therefore, much clearer.

You now have the honourable task of raising our art to a new, higher plane.

I am confident that you will bring joy to our people and satisfy their demands with fresh achievements. I wish you greater success in your work.

ON ORGANIZING MOBILE BATTERIES (MORTAR PLATOONS), SEPARATE HEAVY MACHINE GUN TEAMS, AND DEMOLITION TEAMS BEHIND ENEMY LINES AND ON INTENSIFYING SNIPERS' ACTIVITY

**Instruction No. 00651 of the Supreme Commander
of the Korean People's Army**

December 20, 1951

Every single shell and bullet fired by the frontline units must destroy more US-British invaders and the puppet Syngman Rhee army troops, and the embattled units should intensify their activities to demoralize the enemy, keep them terror- and panic-stricken at all times and deliver heavy blows at them by surprise. For this purpose I issue the following instruction:

1. Mobile batteries (mortar platoons) shall be organized in the frontline units and combined units, and they shall fire at enemy battle formations day and night.

Each regiment shall form a group of three 82mm mortars and two organic 76mm guns, and each division a group of one 76mm mountain artillery battery and one 120mm mortar battery.

2. Snipers shall be widely organized to act close at the forward edge of the enemy area and destroy small groups of enemy soldiers, their snipers, commanders and observers who are active there.

A separate heavy machine gun team shall be formed in every forward infantry company in defence, and posted close at the forward edge of the

enemy area to prevent the activities of their reconnaissance parties and individual soldiers and kill the enemy when they come in sight.

3. The firing positions of mobile batteries (mortar platoons) and the heavy machine gun emplacements and snipers' individual dugouts shall be thoroughly camouflaged and moved from time to time so as to be hidden from enemy observation.

4. The snipers, separate heavy machine gun teams and mobile batteries (mortar platoons) shall keep accurate records of the number of enemy troops, weapons and equipment they destroy, and the soldiers who distinguish themselves in destroying them shall be recommended for state commendation.

5. Demolition teams (engineers equipped with land mines and other explosives included) shall be formed and sent widely behind enemy lines with concrete plans to destroy enemy manpower, weapons and equipment.

The demolition team's mission includes the massive destruction of the enemy's gun positions, bunkers, depots, signal exchanges, headquarters, commanding officers, roads and bridges, etc.

6. Our reconnaissance parties' activities shall be intensified.

7. In order to prevent blind fire and give heavier blows to the enemy with less expense of ammunition, the mobile batteries (mortar platoons), separate heavy machine gun teams and snipers shall keep a close watch on the enemy round the clock, meticulously study his movement, find out his observation posts, gun positions, bunkers and other parts of the forward area where enemy action is most frequent, and hit them squarely.

In strict accordance with my Order No. 00420, ammunition shall be used economically, and the use of 122mm gun shells shall never exceed the prescribed amount.

8. Unit and combined unit commanders at different echelons shall organize the aforesaid groups and teams properly, share the valuable experience gained by them with all units and include the result of the aforesaid measures in the daily operation report.

This instruction shall be relayed to battalion commanders.

